



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 13

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1201: Distributing Monster Cores

Jian Chen was extremely satisfied. He said, “I guarantee that you will definitely not halt at the level of a Heaven Saint Master but at the level of a Saint Ruler, or even the godlike cultivation level in your eyes, Saint King. However, remember that you are not only loyal to me, you are also loyal to the Flame Mercenaries at the same time. You are a member of the Flame Mercenaries, and you will become their protector gods in the future.”

“Captain, we can forget our names but we will never forget your orders,” a person with a large mustache exclaimed from the group. He was in high spirits and his eyes were brimming with a confident belief.

Jian Chen revealed a smile. He also felt extremely proud when he saw the lively group since he had personally nurtured all of them. He had groomed them from low-level mercenaries who struggled to make a living daily on the Tian Yuan Continent to the experts before him now.

However, Jian Chen had also paid a great price in order to create a group like this. Whether it was heavenly resources, monster cores, cultivation methods, or battle skills, he had used everything he could without holding back. Even organizations as powerful as ancient clans would not have been able to make such an investment. At the same, he had even went to the divine realm of the sea realm to collect divine water of the world specifically for them, just to make up for their innate deficiencies that prevented them from reaching Saint Ruler.

At this moment, Jian Chen pulled out another Space Ring and passed it to Kai Er. He said, “There are two hundred Class 6 Monster Cores, thirty Class 7 Monster Cores, a Saint Tier cultivation method, and Heaven Tier Battle Skills in there. Split it with those who are in need.”

Jian Chen was willing to pay whatever price to get the group to reach his anticipated target of strength as soon as possible. The Flame Mercenaries were in too great of a need for their own powerful force.

“Yes, captain!” Kai Er excitedly accepted the Space Ring. Even his hand that held the ring trembled. His heart surged inside when he thought about all the monster cores inside the ring.

“Cultivate well. Once you become Saint Rulers, you can leave here and go to the outside world.” Jian Chen did not stick around for long. He left the artifact space after adding that.

At the Changyang clan, it had been less than half a day since he had returned from the Heaven’s Incense School. Almost all the high class monster cores had been split up other than the Class 8 and 9 Monster Cores. Only twenty of the sixty Class 7 Monster Cores remained, two hundred of the six hundred Class 6 remained, and relatively more Class 5 Monster Cores remained, sitting at two thousand five hundred.

Afterward, Jian Chen requested Changyang Zu Yunxiao to create a Space Gate, proceeding to Flame City with You Yue.

Jian Chen and You Yue quietly passed through the palace-like city lord’s estate in the center of the city, heading toward a heavily-guarded study room.

Jian Chen used his powerful abilities as a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler to ensure that none of the many experts hidden in the surroundings discovered him, allowing him to enter the study silently.

It was a very large and extravagant study, covering a surface area of several hundred square meters. The faint, unique smell of books lingered in the air. Right in the center of the room sat a woman in white robes, whose attention was completely focused on the book in her hands. She only seemed to be twenty years of age and possessed a lovely appearance. Her glossy, black hair was kept in a

coil with an exquisite pin. The hairpin shone with faint purple light. It had been crafted from invaluable purple gold. She possessed a ruler's presence that could only appear after maintaining a position of authority for many years.

On the two sides of the desk stood a man and a woman. They were both Heaven Saint Masters, silently protecting the woman who read there.

At this moment, the door to the room opened silently. Jian Chen and You Yue walked in side by side. Without any additional movements, the door closed automatically, but there was no sound during the entire process.

The two Heaven Saint Masters kept an eye in the direction of the entrance, so they discovered Jian Chen and You Yue as soon as they walked through the door. Their gazes immediately sharpened, and just when they wanted to call out, they discovered that the space surrounding them had instantly frozen, and they were completely immobilized. They could not even speak.

The lady at the desk sensed nothing. She was completely drawn in by the book, and only when You Yue arrived before the desk and knocked on it did the lady suddenly realize they were guests. However, she became stunned when she saw Jian Chen and You Yue who had suddenly appeared and then rejoiced. She immediately put down her book and arrived before You Yue, grabbing her hands in a close manner. She excitedly said, "Brother, sister Yue'er, you've come! Why didn't you send someone to inform me first?"

You Yue smiled, "Sister Lian'er, we wanted to give you a surprise, so we came to visit you without notifying you. I hope you haven't become unhappy because of this."

Bi Lian pouted and said in some displeasure, "Brother, sister, there's not enough time for me to be happy with your arrival, so how can I be unhappy?" Bi Lian arrived by Jian Chen's side and

grabbed his other arm. She looked at him hopefully and said, “Brother, you’re the captain of the Flame Mercenaries. Shouldn’t you stay for a little longer now that you’ve come to your own territory?”

“I might have to disappoint you then. I’ve come for a certain matter this time, so I’ll have to leave very soon,” Jian Chen smiled.

Bi Lian immediately became dejected, but she knew that her brother had been running all over the place over the last few days. He indeed had a lot of matters to deal with, so she did not insist on him staying.

“Hmph, aren’t you having it too easy as the captain? You throw such a big burden onto your sister, yet you don’t bother with it at all yourself. All you do everyday is travel and play.” At this moment, an old voice rang out from outside. The door then opened and Bi Hai walked in with his arms behind his back.

Bi Hai had originally stayed at the bottom of Mercenary City with Huang Tianba, but he worried about Bi Lian’s safety, so he had returned to Mercenary City.

Jian Chen and You Yue greeted Bi Hai as juniors, and Jian Chen then rebuked, “Great-grandfather, I must disagree with what you said toward the end. I haven’t been traveling and playing. I have been dealing with important matters instead.”

“I don’t care if you have important matters to attend to or if you’re running around playing. You better free up your sister soon, so she can break free from this mess and focus on cultivation. Otherwise, it’ll interfere with her future.” In Bi Hai’s eyes, the Flame Mercenaries were nothing. He cared more about Bi Lian’s personal strength. Even if someone managed to unite the entire continent one day, they would pass away without long if they did not possess absolute strength. Personal strength was far more important than anything else.

Chapter 1202: A Path of Severance

“God, great-grandfather, stop. I don’t want to be like you, locking myself up in a room all day and staying there several months or even years on end. It’s so boring. I like to manage the Flame Mercenaries. Look, the Flame Mercenaries have become so prosperous under my management. This is much more interesting than locking yourself up everyday,” Bi Lian replied in satisfaction. She felt that she had accomplished much.

Bi Hai angrily glared at her. He seemed very stern, but there was unconcealable affection in his eyes. He angrily said, “You’re far too disobedient. What accomplishments can you achieve by spending all your time on this mess? If you don’t cultivate properly, you will be wasting all the valuable heavenly resources your brother has spent on you. If you really want to help your brother, then cultivate properly. This is much more useful than managing this mess. No matter how well you manage this, you will not be as useful as a Saint King. They can turn everything you’ve built into nothing with just a wave of their hand.”

Bi Lian found what Bi Hai said to be reasonable, so she did not rebuke him. She stuck out her tongue mischievously and grabbed one of Bi Hai’s hands, shaking it gently. She sweetly said, “Great-grandfather, of course I understand that. Actually, you don’t know how much harder I’ve been working on my cultivation lately.”

“How much harder? Hmph, do you really think that I don’t know what you’re doing just because I’m not by your side all the time? There’s twenty four hours in a day and you only spend four or five hours cultivating. Is that called working hard?” Bi Hai had nowhere to vent his anger. He really could do nothing to his clever great-granddaughter right in front of her, and he would often become exhausted by what she did.

As the most authoritative member of the Flame Mercenaries, Bi Lian actually avoided the furious Bi Hai. She arrived beside Jian

Chen and looked at him pleadingly, “Brother, look how severe great-grandpa is. I’m the only girl in the family, and he always wants to lock me up in a dark, scary basement. I know you care for me the most, right? Please persuade him for me. I know your words are like an imperial edict. It’s more useful than anything, and even grandpa Bi Hai won’t ignore them.”

“You brat...” Bi Hai was utterly furious. He pointed at Bi Lian but could say nothing for quite some time.

Jian Chen looked at Bi Lian’s pitiful appearance in affection and smiled, “Lian’er, grandpa’s right. Becoming powerful yourself is much more important than anything else. You should leave the many matters of the mercenaries to others when you need to.”

“Okay brother, I understand.” Clearly, Bi Lian listened to Jian Chen more. As soon as he said something, she became docile, but a mischievous light appeared in her eyes. She said, “Brother, if you stay and guard the city, a lot of the matters that I worry over will be gone. That way, I can spend more time on cultivation.”

Jian Chen stared at his sister, unsure of how to react. He said, “Lian’er, I really don’t have much time. How about this: I’ll stay in the city for the next two days, and I’ll work with grandpa to guide you in your cultivation.”

Afterward, Jian Chen passed a Space Ring to Bi Lian before temporarily settling down in the city. The Space Ring contained all the remaining Class 5, 6, and 7 Monster Cores from the Heaven’s Incense School, but all the Class 7 Monster Cores went to Bi Hai to hold. He only gave the other monster cores to Bi Lian to distribute.

At the same time, in the desolate wilderness, a burly man in horrible condition walked with difficulty. He was disheveled and his clothes were torn in many places. He was bare-footed as well, so he seemed just like a beggar. A few vicious gashes were present on his body, all signs of being bitten by magical beasts or being cut by weapons.

Even though the man was very heavily injured, his steps were still filled with vigor. He traveled like the wind, as if he was completely fine.

The man stopped and pulled out a map to check. Afterward, he swept away his messy hair, revealing two eyes that were as profound as the starry sky.

“With this speed, I’ll be able to get to him in another month,” mumbled the man before putting the map away and continuing on his way.

At this moment, a figure flew over from afar. He landed and walked beside the disheveled man. He was a young person in blue robes, and only seemed to be around thirty years of age. His appearance was rather striking.

“Kid, I just went to a city a hundred kilometers away and bought some roast chicken and some good liquor. Let’s sit down and have a good meal,” the young man pulled out two roasted chickens from his Space Ring as he spoke to the disheveled man. He threw one over casually.

The two of them clearly knew each other extremely well since they did not greet each other at all. Holding the roast chicken in one hand and a flask of liquor in the other, they sat down and began wolfing down the food.

“Kid, I gotta give it to you for your determination and resolution. There’s so many magical beasts you can ride, but you just have to insist on walking with your legs. The Tian Yuan Continent is so big. If you just use your legs, you’ll never be able to walk from the east to the west even in your entire lifetime. Your home is so far away as well. Why don’t I take you along with me as I travel? You probably need another year or two before you can walk back.” The young man said with his mouth full.

The disheveled man swallowed his mouthful of food and stared at the young man with his deep eyes. He seriously replied, “Senior,

all life is wise, and all of it is nurtured by the world. We humans are only the few among them. As soon as the opportunity arises, we can comprehend the true essence of the world.

“The world is wondrous, and the earth that forms this world is filled with a vast and unbelievably wondrous power. When you walk on the ground with your two feet, you can sense this power. You can sense the veins of the world and then comprehend the true essence of the world through the wondrous power and the veins.”

“What’re you saying? The earth has a vast and unbelievably wondrous power? Really? Why don’t I feel it?” The young man stood on the ground and walked around to confirm what he had just said.

“Senior, you can’t sense it because your opportunity still has not arisen, or you lack something,” the disheveled man replied in serious voice. He did not seem like he was joking at all.

The young man broke into laughter. He sat back down next to the disheveled man and laughed, “To think that I, Greed King Wang Yixiao, a great Saint Ruler who’s only a step away from Saint King, would be described so horribly by a mere Earth Saint Master in such a place. This really is funny. Kid, what do I lack? What is that thing you say that I lack?”

“You lack...” The disheveled man sank into his thoughts. After pondering seriously for a while, he shook his head in confusion in the end. He said, “I don’t know what senior lacks either.”

“You really are one interesting kid. If it weren’t for the fact that the cultivation method I practice is special and I can feel whether someone is telling a lie or not, I would definitely think that you’re tricking me. Kid, do you know what the outcome for those who trick me are?” Feng Yixiao said.

“I can also feel that senior is someone who kills without second thought and that your hands are covered by the blood of countless

people. All those who offend senior end up dead without exception,” the disheveled man responded at ease.

“You’re not afraid?” Feng Yixiao looked at the disheveled man.

The man shook his head, “The world has no attachments. When all sentient creatures are born, they also hold no attachments. The so-called seven desires and six emotions only came into existence after birth. I walk a path of the world, a path of severance, a path of liberation, so I obviously need to sever my seven emotions and six desires. I obviously do not fear death. I have already severed that fear.”

“You sure are weird kid. I’ve wandered the continent for over a thousand years, and I’ve seen countless other people of all shapes and sizes, but you really are the first. You just said that you walk a path of severance and that you will sever the seven emotions and six desires. If that’s the case, why do you still want to go home? If it’s been severed already, is there still any point in returning?” Feng Yixiao asked out of curiosity.

“I’ve already severed most of the emotions and desires that came into existence after birth, but I can’t sever the last portion.” The man suddenly became sorrowful. Tears rolled from his eyes and he painfully said, “I can’t forget my dad, much less my mum. My mum only has me as her only son, so if she loses me, she will be in so much pain that she would wish she was dead. And my sister and two brothers, I can’t forget them, nor do I dare to forget them. I don’t want to become a person who is heartless. I can’t sever this last part, I can’t. I can’t...” The disheveled old man had basically yelled out the last parts. He was filled with sorrow.

Feng Yixiao stopped eating and stared at the man. Only after a long while later did he sigh gently, “You walk a different path of cultivation. Although I am unable to understand just what it is, I know that the path is extremely brutal. It is not suitable for the current you, so if it doesn’t work, just choose another.”

The disheveled man shook his head and said, “I have a feeling that I have no other path I can continue down aside from this one.”

Chapter 1203: Wolf King of Greed, Feng Yixiao

“Are your feelings reliable? Are you just going to believe in your feelings like this?” Feng Yixiao weirdly looked at the disheveled man. This was the first time he had ever come across such an interesting Earth Saint Master in his long history of being alive.

However, Feng Yixiao understood that the disheveled man before him was not particularly impressive in terms of strength, but he did possess a truly unique aspect, or Feng Yixiao would not bother with a mere Earth Saint Master with his current strength and prideful personality.

The disheveled man nodded firmly. He said without any room for disagreement, “I believe in my feelings very much. Ever since I began my journey on this path, I felt that they have not been wrong. Everything that I feel will happen.”

“Oh, since your senses are so sharp, then can I ask if you will forget people you don’t want to forget?” Feng Yixiao asked in much interest as he bit into his roast chicken.

The disheveled man became very dejected and lost all appetite. He lowered his head and said with a heavy voice, “I am afraid of thinking about that, and I am also afraid of sensing the future of that. I’m afraid that some sorrowful things will happen to me.”

The disheveled man fell silent for a little longer. He seemed to understand something. He deeply sighed and said, “Severing the emotions and desires is not forcing yourself to forget but to break free from them. There should not be any pain in the entire process, only indifference. I have still yet to sever my emotions for my family, which is why I am in pain, but in the future, if I sever this unknowingly, I will never feel like this again. At that time, my family in my eyes will be nothing. I will forget everyone at that moment, including my mother.” The disheveled man’s voice was

filled with deep sorrow. He knew extremely well that if he overcame this last obstacle, he probably would be able to reach an unmatched level of cultivation. His strength would drastically increase, but he would abandon all his emotions at the same time.

He did not want to do this. He would rather be an ordinary person than abandon his connection with his parents, except he had no other choice.

Right now, his fate seemed to have been predetermined. He could not stop if he wished. All he could do was proceed along the path.

Feng Yixiao threw the last chicken bone far away before downing the entire flask of liquor. Afterward, he stood up and said, “Kid, since you’re so sorrowful, let’s not talk about this. Look at you. You’re a man, yet you’re about to cry just like a girl. I just happen to have matters I need to attend to. I’ve already spent quite a lot of time with you, so I can’t waste anymore time. I gotta go immediately.”

The disheveled man calmed down very quickly. He stood up and said, “Senior, thank you for helping me in the past few days. If there is a chance, I will definitely return the favor.”

Feng Yixiao chuckled aloud. He said, “Return the favor? Hahaha, you probably won’t even remember who I am the next time we meet. Would there still be any favors to return?”

“Senior, I definitely won’t forget you,” the disheveled man replied rather awkwardly.

“Alright, alright. Enough of this. Kid, aren’t you going to the Gesun Kingdom? There’s still over a hundred thousand kilometers, so you probably have to walk for a few years with just your legs. That just happens to be in the direction I’m traveling, so I’ll just carry you with me. I can’t take you all the way to Gesun Kingdom, but at least it’ll cut down the distance you have to walk,” Feng Yixiao said in an extremely straightforward manner. For a mere Earth Saint Master to receive the help of a Ninth Heavenly Layer

Saint Ruler would be a great honor.

However, the disheveled man behaved as usual. All he did was smile gratefully before calming down. He was not excited in any way.

Feng Yixiao had grown accustomed to his calm demeanor long ago. Without saying anything more, he grabbed the man's shoulder and left extremely hastily.

A white-robed, middle-aged man with an extremely ordinary appearance silently appeared where they had been after Feng Yixiao had left. He looked in the direction the two of them had traveled off to in a trance and mumbled, "Changyang Hu's at the last, crucial stage of breaking through to Worldly Transcendence. All he needs is one final step to overcome it.

"Changyang Hu has experienced a lot during his journey after he left the Pure Heart Pavilion. He has experienced tests of life and death and understood the various aspects of life, allowing him to take a solid step in Worldly Transcendence. It's just a pity that Feng Yixiao suddenly appeared half way through. Not only did he fail to help Changyang Hu, he even ruined it all, or Changyang Hu probably would have been able to severe the last part before the journey ended. Feng Yixiao is letting Changyang Hu arrive home sooner. I wonder if it'll affect anything.

"A Saint Ruler would actually become interested in a mere Earth Saint Master. Sigh, is this really the will of the heavens? Even the heavens have organized Changyang Hu to meet with his family in this last stage."

Feng Yixiao hurried along using Spatial Force. He fused with the surrounding space and completely disappeared. Although he moved extremely quick, he was unaffected by the drag of air, so he moved in complete silence. The disheveled man being carried along with him could only look at the blurry landscape that shot past beneath him. When they flew over a city, he could not even

see what the city looked like.

In less than half a day, Feng Yixiao traversed several tens of thousand kilometers with his strength as a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer. In the end, he stopped ten kilometers away from a small town.

“Kid, I can only take you here. You need to rely on yourself for the future journey. Take these purple coins and buy some things you need when you travel.” Feng Yixiao was straightforward and extravagant, throwing his space ring to the disheveled man.

“Senior, I don’t need it...”

“Kid, there’s never been the case where I take back things I give out. Are you looking down on my giving you things?” Feng Yixiao narrowed his eyes and unhappily asked.

The disheveled man had no other choice. All he could do was accept the Space Ring obediently.

Feng Yixiao patted his shoulder, “Kid, look after yourself in the future. I hope you can still remember who I am when we meet again next time.” With that, he flew away before the disheveled man could reply.

“Senior, I will definitely still remember you when we meet next time,” the disheveled man yelled in the direction Feng Yixiao had disappeared.

The disheveled man did not leave and instead stood where he was, silently gazing in the direction had left Feng Yixiao. The two of them were strangers to one another, yet Feng Yixiao had actually helped him so much in such a selfless manner despite being a Saint Ruler. This touched him deeply.

He could clearly feel Feng Yixiao’s sincerity toward him during the days they had spent together. Feng Yixiao did not have any other intentions.

Suddenly, the disheveled man’s eyes darkened. There was no

light at all in the darkness. It was like that had become a vast, infinite, and boundless space of darkness. If someone else looked him in the eyes, they would feel that their souls would be sucked in.

But the next moment, faint glimmers of light suddenly began to flicker in his dark eyes. They were like the stars of the night sky. His eyes seemed to contain some other space, some other universe.

Suddenly, the man violently jerked. He returned his senses at that moment and his eyes immediately returned to normal. He cried out, "Oh no, senior's going to die for sure. There's no chance of him surviving." With that, the disheveled man began to sprint in Feng Yixiao's direction. A mysterious force seemed to surge out of the ground with every step, pushing him forward. Although he was only an Earth Saint Master, his current speed was even greater than Heaven Saint Masters flying. Even wind-attributed Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters would not be as fast as him.

Jian Chen, You Yue, Bi Lian, Bi Hai, and the others currently sat around a table as they ate in the Flame Mercenaries den. Even Dugu Feng was present.

Although Jian Chen had basically subdued Dugu Feng as a servant back in Mercenary City, he had always treated him like a brother and never as an outsider. In reality, Dugu Feng lived up to Jian Chen's hopes as well. He forsook his own time to cultivate and took up the position of a disciplinary elder, pouring his heart into the development of the mercenaries.

Dugu Feng had always been a quiet person, so he did not say much at all at the table. He seemed rather cold.

"Dugu Feng, it really has been busy for you during these past years. For the development of the mercenaries, you've even given up your own cultivation time. If you want to let go of everything you're doing right now, you can come find Bi Lian at any time. After all, your personal cultivation is more important. Possessing

great strength is far more useful than possessing great authority,” Jian Chen sincerely said. In his eyes, authority was not important at all. Even kings would need to lower themselves in front of Saint Rulers.

Even one of the eight great kingdoms like the Qinhuang Kingdom would be nothing in front of Saint Kings. A wave of the hand would be all that was needed to reduce so many years of work into nothing.

“Now that the foundation of the Flame Mercenaries is stable, I need to spend another two years consolidating it, and then I can let go of everything I’m doing. I’ll focus on cultivating after that,” Dugu Feng expressionlessly replied. His voice was rather cold.

Jian Chen laughed, “At that time, I will make you into a Saint Ruler as soon as possible and give you the chance to become a Saint King.”

Chapter 1204: Feng Yixiao's Enemy

A sliver of burning desire finally appeared in Dugu Feng's eyes. This was a desire to become a Saint King. Jian Chen's words had influenced him very much.

"It's just a pity that Sans is out on a mission and not here. Otherwise, there would be one more person at the table with us. Speaking of which, Sans should take up the position as captain," Jian Chen rather regretfully lamented.

"The Flame Mercenaries may have been founded by Sans' father, but his strength is still low. If he becomes captain, it'll become difficult for everyone to follow his orders. It might result in fractures within the mercenaries as well," Dugu Feng fearlessly replied.

Jian Chen did not get mad, "Right now, we need Sans to grow up properly. Once he has enough strength, I'll pass on the position to him so he can take over his father's organization. I'll be able to hand it over for his father."

With that, Jian Chen's eyes froze. He looked toward the east. He seemed to be able to see through many obstructions and everything that happened outside could not escape his eyes even though he was inside.

"There's someone who has come with ill intentions. Looks like I've come at the perfect time," Jian Chen mentioned in a heavy voice as he slowly lowered his cup.

"What! Someone's come looking for trouble?" Bi Lian obviously heard Jian Chen's mutterings. She became shocked. There was no one on the continent who did not know the name of the Flame Mercenaries. Ever since they had taken the city back from the Extinguishing Alliance, they had established their strength, such that all the major organizations on the continent would fear them. There was no one who dared to cause trouble for the Flame

Mercenaries now, so Bi Lian had even begun to doubt if she had heard what Jian Chen had said correctly.

Surprise appeared in Bi Hai's eyes as well. Other than the ten protector clans of the continent, there was no one who would dare to provoke them with Jian Chen's infamy as the captain. Even the ten protector clans were extremely fearful of Jian Chen.

"Perhaps it's a group even more tremendous than the protector clans?" At this moment, an odd thought actually crossed Bi Hai's head, but he soon made a self-deprecating smile.

Suddenly, a vast presence appeared in the sky, almost enveloping the entire city. The presence possessed the violence and boldness of a vicious beast. The howls of wolves seemed to ring out when the presence appeared.

This was the powerful presence of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. It immediately pressed down upon countless mercenaries in the city to the point where they could not breathe. Many people became pale-white as they felt like a mountain was squashing their chest, suffocating them.

The mercenaries were not powerful. There were only a few Heaven Saint Masters and most of them were not even Earth Saint Masters, so they were unable to endure the presence of a Saint Ruler.

A young man who seemed to be around thirty years of age hovered in the air above the city with his arms crossed. His eyes were slightly closed, and he was emotionless, staring fixedly at the city lord's estate below.

"Who dares to cause trouble in Flame City!? Name yourself!" Someone yelled out from the estate, and with that voice, five old men shot into the sky from various parts of the estate. They were lightning fast and were out of the building in a flash before disappearing from where they were. They reappeared in the sky, facing the young man.

The five Saint Rulers were all people who had joined the Flame Mercenaries. Aside from Bi Hai, they were the only other Saint Rulers in the entire city.

The black-robed man on one side clearly recognized the young man among the five of them. His eyes narrowed and his complexion became rather unnatural. He exclaimed, "It's actually you, the wolf king of greed, Feng Yixiao."

The young man glared at the old man and coldly smiled, "Gu Tu, I've searched you for five whole decades. I never thought that you'd actually be hiding in the Flame Mercenaries, which sure was unexpected. I let you escape last time, but I'd like to see where you run this time." With that, Feng Yixiao's presence skyrocketed. The powerful energy of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler leaked from his body, which vaguely condensed into a howling wolf. Immediately, the wind began to blow wildly as energy of the world surged messily through the air.

The five Saint Ruler all became extremely stern as fear filled the depths of their eyes. Their senses were exceptional, and they could tell that Feng Yixiao was at the peak of the Ninth Heavenly Layer. He was a terrifying existence with half a foot planted across the threshold of Saint King, so he was even more terrifying than most Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. On the other hand, the strongest of the five of them had only reached the Fifth Heavenly Layer recently while the weakest was only at the Second Heavenly Layer. They were nowhere near Feng Yixiao's level, so even if they worked together, they would not be able to defeat Feng Yixiao if they really began to fight.

"Feng Yixiao, this is the base of the Flame Mercenaries. I am a great protector of the mercenaries, so I cannot allow you to act so brazenly here. Are you not afraid of offending the Flame Mercenaries and declaring war against us?" Gu Tu asked His enmity with Feng Yixiao was irreconcilable, and he had almost died to Feng Yixiao's hands fifty years ago, but he managed to flee

in the end out of luck. Now that Feng Yixiao had come knocking on the door again, he was even more powerful than fifty years ago. Gu Tu could not flee even if he wanted to, so all he could do was rely on the Flame Mercenaries to scare him away.

Feng Yixiao's killing intent in his eyes became denser. He coldly said, "Gu Tu, this is the enmity between the two of us. It has nothing to do with the Flame Mercenaries, so quit trying to scare me off by bringing them up."

Gu Tu laughed aloud. He looked at Feng Yixiao like he was looking at a joke, "Legend has it that the wolf king of greed is afraid of nothing and always does as he wishes. No one can stop him, much less change his mind. Looks like that is untrue today, being scared like this by the Flame Mercenaries."

Feng Yixiao's eyes grew colder as fury filled his face. Powerful killing intent began to radiate out uncontrollably. What Gu Tu had said had completely agitated him.

"Feng Yixiao, you will never have the chance to kill me. Of course, unless you don't want to live since you are taking on the risk of becoming a public enemy of the Flame Mercenaries by attempting to kill a great protector of the Flame Mercenaries." Gu Tu became even more fearless when he saw how Feng Yixiao was fearful of the Flame Mercenaries. He began laughing aloud. Back then, he had almost passed away after being hunted down by Feng Yixiao, so he hated him very much. He could finally vent all of his anger now.

Chapter 1205: Changyang Hu's Arrival

(One)

Feng Yixiao was an obstinate, unruly, and prideful person. Coupled with his dignity as a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, how could he hold himself back against the provocation of an ant-like existences in his eyes? Even though he was very fearful of the Flame Mercenaries, he could not bear with being laughed at by an ant.

“Gu Tu, do you really think that I will let you go just because you’ve joined the Flame Mercenaries? You’ve underestimated me far too much. If I want to kill someone, that person is dead for sure,” Feng Yixiao icily said. With that, all that was left was an afterimage. He charged toward Gu Tu at an extremely great speed, arriving by his side instantly. He used his right hand to reach for Gu Tu’s neck. Saint Force surged in that hand, so it seemed to have become an extremely sharp wolf’s claw.

Gu Tu had never expected Feng Yixiao to actually attempt to touch him. He paled in fright and retreated as quickly as possible, using all he had to avoid Feng Yixiao’s lightning-fast attack.

The disparity between their strength was just far too great. It could be described as a chasm, so Gu Tu could only dodge when faced with Feng Yixiao’s attacks. He did not even have the ability to fight back.

Blood scattered through the air. Even though Gu Tu had used everything he had, he was still unable to dodge the attack. His neck had been reduced to a bloody mess while a large chunk of flesh had been clawed away. It was a vicious wound.

Warm blood spurted from Gu Tu’s neck like a fountain. It shot into the air like the blooming of a beautiful flower. Gu Tu clenched his wound tightly as he shot back. Fear filled his eyes. The wound on his neck would have already been fatal to a Heaven Saint

Master, but as a Saint Ruler, he would be fine even if he lost his body since his soul would be fine.

“Wolf king... y-you are declaring war on the Flame Mercenaries. Our great captain will never let you go,” Gu Tu cried out desperately as he flew back in a panic. His voice had become extremely hoarse due to the injury of his neck.

Feng Yixiao said nothing. His face was sunken and filled with icy-cold killing intent. He shot past the four other Saint Rulers with a slight motion and pursued Gu Tu.

“Wolf king, you are acting far too brazenly to declare war against the Flame Mercenaries. Great protectors, please immediately punish him to protect the power of the mercenaries. Our dignity and honor cannot be sullied like this by the wolf king, or none of us will be let off easily when captain gets around to punishing us,” Gu Tu cried out urgently in attempt to persuade the four other Saint Rulers to keep Feng Yixiao busy.

The four Saint Rulers immediately shivered inside when they heard the captain mentioned. The light in their eyes began to flicker, and they became hesitant. They possessed both fear and respect for their Saint King captain. They really could not afford to be punished by the captain.

Feng Yixiao suddenly sent an icy-cold gaze toward the four of them, perhaps due to the fact that he had sensed that they had changed their minds. The four Saint Rulers leapt in fright inside from the glance. At that moment, all four of them seemed to feel like they were suffocating, greatly shocking them.

This was not the first time the four of them had experienced something like this, but this was a feeling that could only be caused by Saint Kings, yet they had actually sensed it from Feng Yixiao right now, which they found to be quite unbelievable.

“Looks like Feng Yixiao will be able to break through to Saint King very soon.” At that moment, similar thoughts crossed all of

their heads with some envy.

“Protectors, listen to me. This is the enmity between Gu Tu and me. It has nothing to do with you. However, if you interfere, you cannot blame me for not showing some respect to your captain,” Feng Yixiao coldly said before continuing to pursue Gu Tu.

The four Saint Rulers remained exactly where they were. They did not move no matter what Gu Tu said. Feng Yixiao’s strength filled them with fear, and he had even said what he would do if they did interfere. They were not stupid enough to seek their own deaths.

Gu Tu could not fight Feng Yixiao at all. He was littered with wounds now. Other than the injury on his neck, Feng Yixiao had caused a fist-sized hole to his chest where his heart was. Thus, his heart had been reduced to mush in Feng Yixiao’s hand while one of his arms was severed as well. He was in a miserable state.

“Gu Tu, I’d like to see how you flee this time. But don’t worry, I won’t kill you immediately. I’ll torture you viciously first and then let you die in excruciating pain.” Feng Yixiao sneered. His right hand seemed to have transformed into a sharp wolf’s claw, constantly raking Gu Tu’s body and clawing away blood and flesh.

Heavily injured, Gu Tu was like a lamb waiting to be butchered. He could not help but cry out in a chilling fashion from the pain. He roared, “Wolf king, the captain will not let you go! You kill me today, and you’ll end up the same as me not much later! I’ll be waiting for you in hell!”

With that, Gu Tu grunted again. A piece of flesh near his waist had been carved away by Feng Yixiao.

“Stop! A great protector of the Flame Mercenaries is not someone you can humiliate like this.” An old but clear voice suddenly rang out from the city lord’s estate. Afterward, an old man furiously shot into the sky as a heavy and powerful presence wrapped around him.

Feng Yixiao glanced at Bi Hai who flew over from below. He said, "Another Saint Ruler at the Seventh Heavenly Layer, but that's still not enough to stop me. Gu Tu, I originally planned to let you live a little longer, but looks like I need to finish you off immediately to prevent any unnecessary problems." Feng Yixiao no longer tortured Gu Tu. With a thought, the space around Gu Tu froze, completely immobilizing him.

Even in his peak condition, Gu Tu would have to use several attacks at full strength to break through the frozen space of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Now that he was heavily injured, he could not even use thirty percent of his full strength. He was completely helpless against the frozen space. He was only left helplessly watching as Feng Yixiao approached him in an aggressive manner.

"Save me, Bi Hai!" Gu Tu called for help in panic. Faced with the threat of death, he was filled with fear. Unfortunately, Feng Yixiao's right fingers had already stabbed deep into his head right after what he had said.

Gu Tu's body suddenly froze before becoming limp, as if he had lost all power over his body. His wide open eyes quickly lost their light as well. His soul was unable to escape in time, being dissipated by Feng Yixiao.

"How dare you! Sir, you are the first person who has ever killed a great protector of the Flame Mercenaries out in the open," Bi Hai roared out. He was utterly furious, and at the same time, a huge sword that was the width of a palm appeared in his hand. Pure and powerful water-attributed Saint Force wrapped around the sword as the surrounding space shook slightly from the terrifying energy. It began to twist."

"Fourth Miracle Water of Bi, Soul Chaser!"

Bi Hai knew that Feng Yixiao was very powerful. Yelling out, he used a Saint Tier Battle Skill to deal with him. Immediately, a vast

pressure descended from the sky, squashing him like an invisible mountain. The pressure was so great that Feng Yixiao sank slightly in the air.

There were four forms to the battle skill of the Bi family. Each form belonged to a specific level: the Human Tier, Earth Tier, Heaven Tier, and Saint Tier. There were two techniques for the Saint Tier Battle Skill. One was an attack, Soul Chaser, while the second was a fleeing technique, Absolute Rebirth.

Bi Hai was bathed in a dense water-blue light. He raised his sword high up into the air before swinging it with lightning-like speed. The sword easily cut through space, which was ripped apart like a piece of paper, extending toward Feng Yixiao at an unbelievable speed.

Looking closer, it would not have been difficult to sense the pulse of a sword, invisible to the naked eye, hidden within the rapidly-expanding crack. It was the movement of the pulse that cracked the space. Although there was no earth-shaking commotion, its power was evident.

Feng Yixiao drew his right hand from Gu Tu's head. Without even glancing at the corpse, he allowed it to fall to the ground. He said, "I never thought that you would know a Saint Tier Battle Skill. It is indeed powerful. With your strength at the Seventh Heavenly Layer, it is more than enough to deal with a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer, but it's a pity that your opponent is me, the wolf king of greed, Feng Yixiao."

Feng Yixiao remained composed in front of Bi Hai's Saint Tier Battle Skill. He hurled a fist and surging energy poured from it. It instantly turned into a wolf, colliding with Bi Hai's Saint Tier Battle Skill.

The wolf collided with the sword pulse and the two of them silently disappeared. There was no shockwave at all. Both were reduced to the energy of the world.

Bi Hai's eyes widened as disbelief plastered across his face. His Saint Tier Battle Skill had actually been nullified by such a casual counterattack. He found it rather difficult to accept.

Chapter 1206: Changyang Hu's Arrival

(Two)

Bi Hai's Saint Tier Battle Skill was easily nullified by Feng Yixiao, which completely stunned Bi Hai. Even the four Saint Rulers in the distance were filled with disbelief as well.

They knew that Feng Yixiao was extremely powerful and that they would not be his opponent even if they worked together. However, Bi Hai was still a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. He still may not have been Feng Yixiao's opponent, but he was much closer at the very least. Coupled with the fact that he had used a Saint Tier Battle Skill, it was enough to pose a threat to some Saint Kings.

However, Feng Yixiao had actually completely nullified it with a simple strike. His strength was so terrifying that it shocked everyone present.

This was because in their eyes, only a Saint King could easily nullify a Saint Tier Battle Skill from a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

Feng Yixiao did not do anything else. He glanced at Bi Hai indifferently and said, "Since my enemy's dead, I should leave as well." With that, he turned around and flew off into the distance. He had heard about the Flame Mercenaries and did not wish to completely offend this powerful organization.

However, Feng Yixiao suddenly froze at this very moment. He came to a halt as his composed expression became extremely stern. He suddenly turned around and glance in the direction of the city lord's estate with shining eyes.

A meter-wide sword Qi appeared out of nowhere and shot toward him with lightning-like speed.

Like a streak of light, the sword Qi possessed a shocking, violent,

and destructive presence. It ripped through the space and caused the surrounding energy of the world to tremble like it was quaking in fear. Even the Saint Rulers and Feng Yixiao shivered inside.

Feng Yixiao became extremely stern. Due to his special cultivation method, he possessed senses and instincts far sharper than an ordinary person. He could feel the threat of death on the black sword Qi. The pressing presence and icy-cold killing intent made him feel like he was suffocating.

The sword Qi moved extremely quick, so fast that Feng Yixiao could not even dodge it. It passed through his chest like a hot knife through butter, carving out a fist-sized hole.

Feng Yixiao grunted as a mouthful of blood spurted out. It turned into a bloody mist as it rained down. He became extremely pale at that moment and lost his ability to levitate, falling out of the sky and toward the ground.

Bang!

Feng Yixiao struck the ground and a huge crater formed in the soft soil. Dust was kicked into the air.

The Saint Rulers all became stunned by the sudden occurrence. None of them had thought that the imposing Feng Yixiao would be so weak before the sword Qi.

“Captain, it’s captain. Captain’s returned.” Very soon, a Saint Ruler thought through everything and cried out in joy.

“The dark energy with its terrifying presence filled with violence and destruction is something that only captain Jian Chen can control. Fantastic, I never thought that captain Jian Chen had returned at this crucial moment.”

“With captain Jian Chen, the wolf king’s dead for sure. Our Flame Mercenaries are not one to be stepped over like that...”

The four other Saint Rulers were filled with excitement just like Bi Hai. Although they had never seen Jian Chen before, they were

extremely familiar with Jian Chen's Chaotic Force since this never-before-seen energy had become a representation of Jian Chen.

Although no one recognized the Chaotic Force, the unique presence of the energy had become known to many experts of the continent.

Outside the city, Feng Yixiao climbed out of the crater with difficulty. He knelt on one knee with a pale face as his body gently trembled in an uncontrollable manner. His face was filled with pain and blood spurted from his chest wound like a fountain, dying all the soil red.

Feng Yixiao was in excruciating pain. When the sword Qi had passed through his chest before, a small amount of residual Chaotic Force was left behind, which was now rampaging violently through his body. His organs and blood vessels had all been reduced to a mess by the Chaotic Force. Even when he used all his power to suppress and resist the rampaging Chaotic Force, it was not enough to stop the Chaotic Force, let alone wipe it out.

"J-Jian Chen. I never thought that the captain would actually be in the city today," Feng Yixiao growled. He had heard many rumors regarding Jian Chen, so he immediately guessed the identity of the person who had shot out the sword Qi.

A white-robed figure quickly flew toward Feng Yixiao before stopping three steps in front of him.

He was a young man who seemed to be in his twenties. He was handsome and possessed defined facial features that radiated a heroic spirit. His eyes were cold, and he did not give off any presence at all. He seemed just like an ordinary person.

The young man stood with his arms crossed as he stared emotionlessly at Feng Yixiao. He said, "You sure are courageous to come kill a person of my Flame Mercenaries as just a mere Saint Ruler."

Feng Yixiao raised his head to look at the young man. His eyes narrowed slightly when he caught sight of the young man's face. Although this was the first time he had personally seen him, he had seen many images of the young man in the past.

“It really is you, Jian Chen.” Feng Yixiao growled as he sighed inside about his luck.

Feng Yixiao was bold enough to come to the Flame Mercenaries all by himself to kill Gu Tu because he was certain that the captain was not in the city. Coupled with that fact that he hated a wandering lifestyle and that he was at the edge of breaking through, he planned on killing off his enemy before settling down in some desolate region to cultivate. At that time, Jian Chen would not be able to find him no matter how great his abilities were.

But he had never thought that Jian Chen would happen to be in the city. His original plan was sound, but fate had other ideas.

Chapter 1207: Changyang Hu's Arrival (Three)

“Jian Chen, my enmity with Gu Tu is personal. It has nothing to do with your Flame Mercenaries, so are you trying to interfere with our personal matters?” Feng Yixiao growled. Even though he knew that the person before him was undefeatable, he felt no fear at all.

“Your enmity with Gu Tu has nothing to do with me, but Gu Tu is still a member of my Flame Mercenaries. Am I really supposed to let people kill off members of the Flame Mercenaries as they wish? Not to mention, you killed him right in the open, right in front of countless other members of the mercenaries,” Jian Chen replied in an extremely indifferent voice.

Feng Yixiao knew that he was done for today after listening to Jian Chen's reply. He clenched his teeth and was still rather unwilling to give in. He said, “Jian Chen, you probably had already discovered me when I had arrived with your abilities. Why do you have to deal with me right after I killed Gu Tu and not before?”

At this moment, Bi Hai and the four other Saint Rulers arrived beside Jian Chen as well. The four of them looked at Jian Chen with unhideable admiration as well as some fear.

Jian Chen looked at Feng Yixiao again. He turned around and flew back toward the city. He indifferently commanded, “Finish him off on the spot!”

“Yes, captain!” The four Saint Rulers responded at the same time. Excitement filled all their eyes. Killing a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler was extremely stimulating to them as well as a great honor.

Bi Hai looked at Feng Yixiao with some regret. He gently shook his head before turning and returning to the city as well. Bi Hai felt

extremely regretful because someone who was just about to reach Saint King would die just like this. The level of a Saint King was a realm of cultivation that Bi Hai had longed for himself.

The four Saint Rulers all smiled viciously. They had been deterred by Feng Yixiao to the point where they had not dared to do anything. They only helplessly watched as their companion was killed off. They felt extremely oppressed inside, and now they could finally vent their feelings.

“Looks like today is my death day. To think that I’ve wandered for all these years killing so many people. Even experts more powerful than me would fail to take my life, but in the end, I will die in the hands of a few ants instead. What a pity, what a pity.” Feng Yixiao sighed at the sky as he was filled with regret. Although he was only struck by a single attack from Jian Chen, his wounds were extraordinarily severe. The destructive Chaotic Force rampaged within his body, and he could not suppress it at all. Every moment his wounds rapidly became worse. He had completely lost the ability to fight now.

Although he could flee in the form of a soul, Feng Yixiao did not believe he had that ability in front of Jian Chen. The outcome in the end would still be the same.

The four Saint Rulers all smiled viciously as they lifted their Saint Weapons. Killing a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler was something they felt they could take pride in, which was why they planned to finish off Feng Yixiao together.

“Stop!”

At this moment, a loud shout echoed over from the distance. As it came from just too far away, it had become extremely faint when it arrived where Feng Yixiao was. However, they all heard it clearly.

Jian Chen jerked slightly and suddenly looking in the direction of the voice. On the horizon, a black speck had suddenly appeared. It was approaching the area with lightning-like speed.

Although it was very far away, Jian Chen could see the person clearly with his eyes. Immediately, his indifferent eyes began to shine brighter as he stared fixedly at the black speck. Disbelief filled his face.

The four Saint Rulers did not care who the person was. They swung their Saint Weapons at the same time, chopping at his heart, throat, head, and forehead.

Feng Yixiao could only watched helplessly as the four Saint Weapons rapidly drew near. He did not even have the power to dodge due to the injuries from the Chaotic Force.

“Stop, don’t harm senior Feng!” The person yelled again. The voice was filled with panic, but it was still not enough to stop the four Saint Rulers.

Jian Chen’s face changed slightly when he heard that. Without any hesitation, he flicked a finger and shot out four weak sword Qi toward the Saint Weapons of the Saint Rulers.

Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!

With four crisp sounds that sounded like metal colliding, the Saint Weapons were deflected by Jian Chen’s sword Qi. They swept past Feng Yixiao, and in the end, it struck the ground and produced a great hole with a loud boom.

The four Saint Rulers looked at Jian Chen in surprise and were all filled with confusion.

“You are dismissed,” said Jian Chen, but he remained focused on the figure that drew closer and closer.

“Yes, captain!” The four Saint Rulers respectfully replied and obediently stepped away after putting away their Saint Weapons. Jian Chen’s orders were like the edict of a ruler. Even though they were all confused by his actions, none of them questioned him.

The figure drew closer and closer and his appearance could gradually be made out. He was a disheveled but extremely burly

man in tattered clothing. His messy hair covered most of his face and the only portion that could be seen was dirty. It was covered with dirt. He seemed like a beggar.

The four Saint Rulers could not help but shift their gaze toward the disheveled man who ran over. They were extremely curious. They wondered just who this person was. They wanted to know who was enough to change the captain's decision of killing Feng Yixiao and make him personally deflect their Saint Weapons to save him.

However, when they saw the man, gleams of light flickered through their eyes at the same time. As Saint Rulers, they could obviously tell that the man was only a Earth Saint Master, but he ran so quickly that even wind-attributed Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters were no match for him.

Even with Heaven Tier Battle Skills, it was impossible for an Earth Saint Master to run at such a speed.

The beggar-like man ran to the side of Feng Yixiao with lightning-like speed, as if he did not notice the other people standing around. He dropped down to lift up the heavily-injured Feng Yixiao and asked in worry, "Senior Feng, are you alright?"

Feng Yixiao obviously recognized the man that he had just separated with. A sliver of surprise flashed through his eyes as he weakly asked, "Kid, why'd you come here? And how'd you catch up?"

"Senior Feng, I felt that you were in danger when you left, so I immediately chased after you. It's fortunate I wasn't too late," the disheveled man seriously replied. He was secretly relieved inside, extremely glad that he had made it in time.

"You dumb brat. How can matters that even I can't change be changed by you? Leave here immediately, or I might end up dragging you in and causing trouble for you as well," Feng Yixiao powerlessly explained as he coughed blood. His injuries were still

worsening, and it had even become rather difficult for him to speak. He even suspected that if Jian Chen did not kill him, he would only be able to last for another quarter of an hour or so.

If he was a true Saint King, he might have been able to temporarily suppress the Chaotic Force if he used everything he had, but too bad he was not quite there yet.

Jian Chen stared blankly at the disheveled man. His eyes were wide-open with disbelief visible across his face.

“B-brother,” only a long while later did Jian Chen involuntarily mutter a word. His voice was filled with surprise. Didn’t his brother go to the Pure Heart Pavilion? Why would he have appeared here of all times, and why was he in such a horrible shape?

Chapter 1208: Jian Chen's Worry

Changyang Hu became stunned as well when he heard the extremely familiar voice. Instinctively, he looked toward Jian Chen and recognized the handsome young man at first glance. The young man was his youngest brother that he had not seen in quite a few years. His eyes immediately became filled with surprise, and he asked in astonishment, "Brother, how is it you?" However, he soon understood everything once he saw the huge city walls completely forged from tungsten alloy. He had never thought that he would arrive at the Flame Mercenaries den by chasing Feng Yixiao.

Jian Chen rushed over to Changyang Hu's side with a long step as he looked at him in excitement and doubt. He asked, "Brother, didn't you go to the Pure Heart Pavilion? Why have you suddenly appeared, and why are you in such a horrible shape? Did the Pure Heart Pavilion..." Jian Chen paused there, but the meaning was self-evident. Everyone present understood what he meant. Jian Chen suspected that Changyang Hu had been booted from the protector clan, or how could he have ended up in such a miserable state? Even his clothes were not in one piece.

Feng Yixiao immediately became shocked by what Jian Chen had said. Never did he think that the interesting kid that he had come across during his journey would be a disciple of a protector clan. Other than that, Changyang Hu's identity shocked him even more. He was actually the elder brother of the Flame Mercenaries' captain, Jian Chen, which filled him with disbelief.

Changyang Hu obviously guessed what Jian Chen meant as well. He shook his head gently and said, "Brother, it's not what you think. Let's talk about it later." Changyang Hu paused and glanced at the heavily-injured Feng Yixiao in excruciating pain. He said, "Brother, just why did you and senior Feng fall out? Why have you beaten to senior Feng to such a degree?"

Jian Chen glanced at Feng Yixiao with some mixed feelings. He asked, "Brother, do you know each other?"

Changyang Hu examined Feng Yixiao's wound as he said, "Brother, senior Feng has saved my life before, so can you let him go for your older brother?"

Jian Chen agreed without a second thought before striding over to Feng Yixiao's side. He gently pressed his hand on Feng Yixiao's shoulder, sucking away the residual strand of Chaotic Force.

Feng Yixiao's face loosened immediately once he was free from the torture of the Chaotic Force. However, he still felt shocked because of the energy used by Jian Chen. The energy was just too terrifying. If it remained within him, he probably would have passed away without anyone else taking part.

The four Saint Rulers looked at each other. They had never thought that they would witness something so dramatic. The wolf king of greed who had rushed over aggressively to kill a Saint Ruler of the Flame Mercenaries had actually known Jian Chen's elder brother, Changyang Hu. They were speechless.

On the other hand, Bi Hai was very calm as well. He did not seem to care that Feng Yixiao had slain a great protector of the Flame Mercenaries.

With a flip of his hand, Jian Chen drew three thumb-sized pills from his Space Ring and passed them to Feng Yixiao. He said, "Since you've saved my brother's life before, I will no longer pursue the death of the protector. Here are three Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills. They won't be enough to completely heal your wounds, but they can allow you to recover some strength for battle."

"I have my own medicine." Feng Yixiao did not accept Jian Chen's pills and instead pulled out a jade bottle from his own from his Space Ring. He poured all the pills in it into his mouth before immediately circulating his energy to heal.

He was extremely heavily injured. Although the Chaotic Force had been sucked back by Jian Chen, he needed to stabilize his condition as soon as possible, or it might even lead to future side-effects if it continued to worsen.

Jian Chen put his pills away awkwardly before turning to Changyang Hu, “Brother, I’ll take you back to Flame City. We haven’t seen each other in quite a few years, so let’s catch up properly.”

Changyang Hu wanted to catch up as well. It had indeed been quite a long time since he had last seen Jian Chen, so he had a lot he wanted to say. However, when he looked at Feng Yixiao, he became hesitant again. He said, “Brother, I’ll watch over senior Feng. Once he recovers, I’ll come to Flame City.”

Jian Chen nodded before telling the four Saint Rulers to return themselves. He stayed behind with Changyang Hu while Bi Hai had returned to the city after greeting Changyang Hu.

Four hours later, Feng Yixiao opened his eyes. He was still rather pale. Although he did not make a full recovery after four hours, he had regained some strength.

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu spoke during those four hours, so he finally understood Changyang Hu’s current circumstances. However, as soon as he thought about the fact that his brother might end up forgetting about their brotherhood in the future, Jian Chen felt pained.

In reality, Jian Chen had discovered what was happening with Changyang Hu several years ago. Back then, when Changyang Hu was limbless, he had already begun to display an abnormal mental state. He had never thought that after so many years, Changyang Hu would have traveled further and further down that path. He had already severed most of his seven emotions and six desires, and all that was left was his sentimental feelings.

“Senior Feng, you’ve woken up. How has the recovery gone?”

Changyang Hu stopped talking with Jian Chen when he saw Feng Yixiao open his eyes. He arrived by his side and asked in concern.

Feng Yixiao's opinion of Changyang Hu had undergone some minute changes now. He could not help but laugh aloud when he heard Changyang Hu ask about his well being in such a concerned manner. He stood up and said, "I've recovered thirty percent and can run now. Kid, I never thought that your identity would be something so impressive, truly catching me off-guard. A few days ago, I saved your life, and now you've saved mine, so we no longer owe each other anything. Alright, I won't say anything more. Farewell. I hope that you will still remember me the next time we meet," Feng Yixiao walked away as he spoke. By the time he finished talking, he had already left.

"Senior Feng, I will definitely still remember you the next time we meet," Changyang Hu cried out to Feng Yixiao.

Jian Chen frowned slightly when he heard that, and he became more and more worried. He had no idea how many years it would be when the two of them would meet again, nor did he know if Changyang Hu would still treat their brotherhood and his connection with his family with importance.

"Brother, why don't you stop going down that path and choose another cultivation method? I can help you find a suitable, pure cultivation method," Jian Chen suggested in some worry. He did not wish for his brother to change.

Changyang Hu sighed gently. He said, "Brother, I can't stop now. I feel like I have no other paths other than this one, and even if I don't want to proceed down this path, a mysterious force will push me along."

Jian Chen fell silent. He could already sense that his brother's fate seemed to have been determined by the heavens. It could no longer be changed.

The two of them became rather depressed because of fate. They

both subconsciously stopped talking and arrived at the city lord's estate at the same time.

“Brother, I heard that you let that troublemaker go. Is that true?” Bi Lian asked as she clung to Jian Chen's arm back at the estate.

Jian Chen nodded, “It's because Feng Yixiao is the savior of my brother, so I let him go.”

“Brother?” Bi Lian became doubtful, but when she saw Changyang Hu beside him, she became stunned. and her small mouth immediately fell wide open. She looked up and down to examine Changyang Hu as disbelief flooded her eyes.

“Brother A' Hu, how is it you? W-w- w-why are you like this...” Bi Lian asked in surprise as her mouth hung agape.

You Yue walked in from outside as well. When she recognized that the disheveled man was Changyang Hu, she too became surprised.

Changyang Hu glanced down at his tattered clothes and indifferently smiled. He said, “What's wrong with this? I feel this is rather nice.”

Bi Lian stumbled back with what Changyang Hu had said and almost fell down. Even You Yue became speechless.

Jian Chen could not help but laugh aloud as well. He dismissed all the worry inside him and said, “Lian'er, get some people to prepare some food and alcohol. I want to drink a few solid cups with my brother.”

“Alright, I'll go get that organized immediately. Oh right, why didn't you save great protector Gu Tu, brother? Why did you only move after he had died?” Bi Lian asked in curiosity.

“Lian'er, you need to understand that my Flame Mercenaries is not an asylum where people can seek refuge as soon as people encounter problems and thus break free from the problems. Gu Tu had no good intentions for joining our mercenaries. He wanted to

use the Flame Mercenaries to deal with his enemy, and after his enemy was dealt with, he would probably have left us as well. What I did today was give warning to people who think like that. Just be more careful when you accept people in the future,” said Jian Chen.

“Okay, brother...”

Jian Chen left Flame City earlier than planned because of Changyang Hu’s arrival. The Space Gate constructed in the city when it had been captured by the Extinguishing Alliance was completely fixed as well. At noon on the same day, Changyang Hu put on a set of new clothes and left through the Space Gate to return to the Changyang clan with Jian Chen and You Yue.

The return of the first young master made Changyang Ba and Ling Long extremely excited. Ling Long, who thought about her son all day and night, had even thrown herself at Changyang Hu’s chest uncontrollably and burst into tears. Ever since Changyang Hu had left the clan several years ago, Ling Long felt like she was living in pain everyday. The words of the pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion from that day rang through her head like a curse everyday. She really did fear that her precious son would forget her as a mother.

Chapter 1209: Exposed

After returning to the clan, Jian Chen learned that Changyang Zu Yunkong had already left. He went to Mercenary City all by himself and left behind a single sentence: he would not return unless he became a Saint King.

Jian Chen knew that what had happened in the protector clan must have affected Changyang Zu Yunkong dearly as well. He wanted to quickly increase his strength since only Saint Kings had the right to speak before the protector clans.

Jian Chen spent an entire day in the clan with his brother. Two days had already passed since he had made the agreement to go to the Bloodsword sect in three days, so only one day remained.

The morning of the next day, Jian Chen convinced You Yue to stay in the clan. After that, he asked Rui Jin to construct a Space Gate to the sea before leaving all by himself.

Jian Chen gained his bearings above the boundless ocean before flying toward Three Saint Island as quickly as possible. Shangguan Aojian's chubby, white face constantly flickered through his head.

Jian Chen still felt that it was unrealistic that he suddenly had a son. Never had he thought that the Heavenly Enchantress would actually give birth to a child of his and that the child would possess the Innate Chaotic Body.

At this moment, Shangguan Aojian currently sat on a white boulder on Three Saint Island. His eyes were closed and he seemed to be amidst cultivation.

Qin Qin, Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and the Heavenly Enchantress all stood right in front of him, keeping their eyes on him. Their gazes were filled with affection and unhideable concern.

At this moment, Shangguan Aojian slowly opened his eyes. He could not help but wonder when he saw his three nervous sisters

and his mother. He scratched his head and loudly asked, “Mum and sisters, why are you all staring at me?”

Qin Qin, Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and the Heavenly Enchantress all became surprised when Shangguan Aojian had opened his eyes. Xiao Qian asked in shock, “Xiao Bao, you just ingested a pill refined from a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource an hour ago. Has all its medicinal effects just leaked away?”

“Oh no. The effects of the pills on Xiao Bao have already begun to decline. Back then, Xiao Bao could last for half a day before all the medicinal effects leaked away completely when he ingested a thousand-year-old heavenly resource. Yet now, a pill crafted from a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource only takes an hour. This is a pill that can allow utter cripples to undergo a metamorphosis, but it’s actually completely useless to Xiao Bao. Is Xiao Bao fated to spend the rest of his life like an ordinary person?” Xiao Yue sighed.

Shangguan Aojian stood up on the rock defiantly when he heard what Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue had said. With his hands on his hips, he loudly said, “Sister Xiao Qian, sister Xiao Yue, I’m not a cripple of cultivation. I have the most, most, most strongest Innate Chaotic Body in the world, and the effects haven’t leaked away. I’ve absorbed them all.” With that, Xiao Bao seemed to think of something. He beamed with joy and announced, “And I have a name now. It’s Shangguan Aojian.”

Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and Qin Qin all became curious. Xiao Qian said, “The most, most, most strongest Innate Chaotic Body? Xiao Bao, what Innate Chaotic Body? Where did you hear that from? Why have I never heard you say that before? And master didn’t seem to give you the name Shangguan Aojian.”

Xiao Yue pinched Shangguan Aojian’s cheeks playfully. She stared at him with her bright eyes and said, “Yeah, Xiao Bao. Shangguan Aojian definitely wouldn’t be a name from master, or master would’ve told us for sure.”

“Xiao Bao’s so smart. I think you gave yourself the name, right?” Xiao Qian giggled.

“In that case, Xiao Bao also came up with that Innate Chaotic Body.”

The three women chatted around Xiao Bao. They all showed a great amount of affection toward Xiao Bao.

“No, it’s all from dad...” Shangguan Aojian’s cheeks swelled. He wanted to explain to them that the Innate Chaotic Body was something his father told him and that his name was from his father as well. He even wanted to tell his three sisters that he had a father.

“Enough Xiao Bao, eat this ten-thousand-year-old ginseng.” However, the Heavenly Enchantress covered up his mouth before he could finish what he was saying. She then pulled out an ancient ginseng from her Space Ring.

Xiao Bao’s eyes lit up when he saw the heavenly resource. He immediately forgot what he was saying and wolfed down the heavenly resource. He sat down on the rock again after consuming it and entered a state of cultivation.

Although Xiao Bao had never finished what he was saying, Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, and Qin Qin heard him mention the word ‘dad’ clearly. They all became suspicious.

“Xiao Bao’s actually just mentioned that he has a father. Have I heard wrong? Master, what is this about? Why do I feel that Xiao Bao’s changed so much after your trip out with Xiao Bao and that his name has changed for no reason.” Xiao Yue asked the Heavenly Enchantress. She was extremely curious.

The Heavenly Enchantress’ expression became rather unnatural as the light in her eyes flickered. She became a little fearful of making eye contact with Xiao Yue, so she just turned around and said in an indifferent manner, “I met a great master during the trip

and learned through luck that Xiao Bao's not a cripple, but in possession of the Innate Chaotic Body. At the same time, the master passed on a cultivation method to him. However, his special constitution requires large amounts of heavenly resources to be consumed to create an extremely tremendous amount of energy to cultivate."

"Oh! Really? Xiao Bao's really not a cripple? That's just fantastic." Xiao Yue and Xiao Qian both became delighted by the news. Only Qin Qin glanced past the Heavenly Enchantress' back and Xiao Bao's face from time to time as the light in her eyes flickered.

An hour passed very quickly and Xiao Bao opened his eyes again after refining the heavenly resource. He looked at the Heavenly Enchantress eagerly and said, "Mum, more."

"Be a good boy, Xiao Bao. You can't eat too many heavenly resources, so that's enough for today. You can eat more tomorrow." Xiao Qian could not help but worry seeing how Shangguan Aojian wanted to eat more. Eating too many heavenly resources would leave after-effects.

The Heavenly Enchantress smiled as she looked at Xiao Bao in love. Just as she was about to pull out some more heavenly resources, her expression suddenly changed and she vanished with a flash.

Ten kilometers away from the island, Jian Chen was stopped by the Heavenly Enchantress who had suddenly appeared. She stared at him cautiously, appearing right in front of his path to Three Saint Island.

"Why have you come?" The Heavenly Enchantress showed no good will, as if she did not welcome Jian Chen at all.

Mixed emotions flooded Jian Chen inside as he looked at the Heavenly Enchantress. After learning that she had given birth to his child before, Jian Chen actually felt like he had no idea how to

confront her.

“I’ve come to see my son!” A while later, Jian Chen still ended up declaring his intentions.

“Return. Three Saint Island no longer welcomes you,” the Heavenly Enchantress turned Jian Chen away without any second thought. She did not leave any room for discussion.

Xiao Bao seemed to sense something back on Three Saint Island. He suddenly stood up from the rock and turned to face Jian Chen’s direction. Although he was over twenty kilometers away, he could still clearly see Jian Chen. He immediately began to smile happily.

“Dad dad. I’m here, I’m here...” Although Xiao Bao had only seen Jian Chen once before, he behaved like they were extremely close. He jumped up and down on the rock and waved his hands at Jian Chen, afraid that Jian Chen would miss him.

“Dad, dad. I’m here...” Xiao Bao constantly called out. To everyone’s surprise, his gentle voice could travel extremely far away, actually making it to over twenty kilometers and continuing to spread even further.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue became stunned. They stared at Xiao Bao blankly as disbelief plastered across their faces. They had clearly heard Xiao Bao call for his dad. They doubted whether they had heard correctly or not.

The Heavenly Enchantress’ expression changed as well when she heard Xiao Bao’s calls. A sliver of worry flickered through her eyes. She had never thought that Xiao Bao would still be able to recognize Jian Chen from so far away.

Chapter 1210: Father and Son

Jian Chen's face immediately lit up in joy and excitement when he heard Xiao Bao. He immediately used the Illusory Flash. He took a step and hurried toward the mountain, leaving behind only an afterimage.

The Heavenly Enchantress realized what he was doing and watched him rapidly approach the island. A struggle appeared in her eyes. She was confident that she could stop Jian Chen from reaching the island, or even stop him from getting anywhere near the island. However, that would mean that she had to fight Jian Chen. At the same time, she was unable to bring herself to stop Jian Chen. In that moment, the Heavenly Enchantress felt rather conflicted.

Jian Chen moved very fast, traversing over twenty kilometers in an instant. While the Heavenly Enchantress hesitated, Jian Chen reached the island, so now it was impossible for her to stop him even if she wanted to.

“Dad, dad, you’ve finally come. I miss you so much,” Xiao Bao happily exclaimed. He jumped off the rock in a nimble fashion and ran over to Jian Chen with his arms open. He said, “Huggie!”

A sliver of never-before-seen tender affection appeared on Jian Chen's face as he stared at Xiao Bao's chubby and extremely cute face. He picked him up in one stroke and was so excited that he was left speechless.

Qin Qin stared at Jian Chen and Xiao Bao with mixed emotions. Although she had once guessed that Xiao Bao's identity would be like this, it was only a guess. She felt a dull ache at the bottom of her heart now that it had become a reality.

Jian Chen's arrival should have been something worth smiling for Qin Qin, but the outcome was the exact opposite. Qin Qin could not raise her spirits now matter how hard she tried, and she

became depressed instead.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue failed to notice Qin Qin's change. They had been stunned by what Xiao Bao had said as they stared who he was calling Jian Chen 'dad' so affectionately. All their thoughts had stopped.

Only a long while later did Xiao Qian finally return to her senses. She would never have believed that Jian Chen was Xiao Bao's father. She thought Xiao Bao had called him the wrong name, so she quickly corrected him, "Xiao Bao, you should call master Jian Chen brother or uncle and not dad. You can't use dad so casually."

Xiao Bao clung tightly onto Jian Chen's neck. He felt like his father's bosom was even more comfortable than his mother's, as if his father had something that his mother lacked.

"You're lying. He's clearly my dad, so I'm not going to call him big brother or uncle. I'm only going to call him dad. Only dad," Xiao Bao pouted and unhappily replied to Xiao Qian.

At this moment, Xiao Yue returned to her senses as well. She glanced past Jian Chen and Xiao Bao's faces and slowly became surprised. She said, "Xiao Qian, why do I feel like Xiao Bao and master Jian Chen's appearances are similar in some areas."

With that, Xiao Qian immediately looked closer. Now that the two of them were together, she had indeed found them to be rather similar after comparing their appearances.

Xiao Qian immediately became astounded, "Xiao Yue, now that you mention it, I feel like they just look far too similar as well. If it weren't for the fact that I know Xiao Bao's origins, I would suspect... suspect..." Reaching there, Xiao Qian suddenly felt that there was something wrong. The two of them had heard about Xiao Bao's origins from their master and had no idea that Xiao Bao's true identity was different from what the Heavenly Enchantress had told them. Now that Xiao Bao constantly called Jian Chen 'dad' after seeing him and the fact that the two of them

looked far too similar, just like father and son, she immediately sensed that something was wrong.

“Hmph, sister Xiao Qian, sister Xiao Yue, you’re actually working with mum to trick me, telling me that I have no dad. I actually do have a dad. I’ve already found my dad,” Xiao Bao said in irritation. Through his childish voice, his unhappiness for Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue was clearly disclosed. Even his arms around Jian Chen’s neck tightened.

“Xiao Bao, is it really true? Is master Jian Chen really...” Xiao Yue covered her mouth as she stared at Xiao Bao and Jian Chen with widening eyes. Disbelief was spelt across her face as her heart churned.

“Hmph, Xiao Bao’s not a liar, and dad has already given me a new name. It’s Shangguan Aojian,” Xiao Bao confidently replied.

“I-impossible. That can’t be true.” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue both became shocked. They refused to believe that Xiao Bao’s father was Jian Chen. Who was his mother then?

However, they already had an answer in their heads because of the way their master treated Xiao Bao as well as the fact that the Heavenly Enchantress’ gaze toward him would be filled with motherly love. They just refused to believe it.

The Heavenly Enchantress returned to the island. She glanced over Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue with her enchanting eyes and sighed inside. She could already tell that Xiao Bao’s true identity had been exposed from their expressions.

“Master, Xiao Bao’s origins...” Xiao Qian continued to look at the Heavenly Enchantress in disbelief in attempt to obtain an answer.

The Heavenly Enchantress’ gaze flickered and avoided them. At this moment, she was actually unwilling to meet her three disciples’ eyes. She seemed very calm on the surface, but she was a complete mess down below.

“Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, Qin Qin, you are dismissed,” the Heavenly Enchantress said coldly and emotionlessly.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue both became wide-eyed. Although they never finished asking, their meaning was obviously conveyed very clearly. However, what really surprised them was that not only did their master avoid the topic, she was avoiding them as well.

They had been with their master for many years, but this was the first time they had ever seen her like that.

“Senior Xiao Qian, Senior Xiao Yue, let’s go.” Qin Qin went up to grab Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue’s hands, pulling them away with her. Although the matter had never been confirmed, they already knew the answer inside. They just refused to believe it.

The three of them vanished very quickly. The Heavenly Enchantress then coldly looked at Jian Chen. With a slight bit of anger in her eyes, she said, “What’re you doing here?” At this moment, the Heavenly Enchantress was indeed extremely annoyed. Jian Chen’s arrival was without warning and had actually exposed Xiao Bao’s identity to her three disciples. She no longer knew how to face them in the future.

“I’ve obviously come to see my son. As a father, I have the responsibility to care for my child,” smiled Jian Chen. He did not mind the Heavenly Enchantress’ attitude at all.

“Dad, just stay here in the future. You can be with mum everyday, and I can see you everyday as well,” Xiao Bao said. His face was basically pressed against Jian Chen’s while his hot breath tickled Jian Chen’s cheek.

Jian Chen felt deeply moved by Xiao Bao’s eyes, which were brimming in hope. At that moment, he actually felt like he could not turn down Xiao Bao’s request, tempted to just agree to it. After all, he had only learned he had a son when Xiao Bao was already three years old. He had never shown any love to Xiao Bao in the past and did not even know he had a son at all. He felt sorry for not

knowing about Xiao Bao.

However, Jian Chen had his reasons. He knew he could not, well at the very least, not right now.

“Xiao Bao, I can’t spend everyday with you right now because I have a lot of important things to attend to. However, I can promise you that once I deal with everything, I’ll spend everyday with you. Alright?” Jian Chen gently replied with eyes filled with love.

“Alright, then I’ll wait for you with mum.”

Chapter 1211: Nubis Emerges

Jian Chen had come to Three Saint Island this time to visit Xiao Bao as well as deliver some cultivation resources to him. Xiao Bao was in possession of the Innate Chaotic Body, so the resources he required were just as extravagant as what Jian Chen needed.

When Jian Chen first began cultivating the Chaotic Body, he had the assistance of the sword spirits. They could refine Ruler Armaments into pure strands of Chaotic Force for him to absorb and pave the path of cultivation for him, allowing him to advance quickly.

However, Xiao Bao was just too young even though he had the Innate Chaotic Body. At the same time, he did not have sword spirits that could refine Ruler Armaments for him into Chaotic Force, so he could only use various resources like heavenly resources.

Jian Chen never considered cultivation through absorbing the energy of the world. Chaotic Force was different from ordinary energies. Refining a single strand would require tremendous amounts of energy. If he wanted to continue by absorbing energy of the world, he would advance extremely slowly even if it was a hundred times more abundant in this world.

Back then, Jian Chen had broken through to the first layer of the Chaotic Body by absorbing the energy that Xiao Ling had gathered after a hundred thousand years. Although all the energy was casually collected by Xiao Ling and not due to a certain method, it was still enough to give an idea of just how much energy Jian Chen had consumed to reach the first layer.

In order for Xiao Bao to properly begin cultivating, Jian Chen pulled out two Class 9 Monster Cores, ten Class 8 Monster Cores, and the other Class 7, 6, and 5 Monster Cores he had obtained from the Heaven's Incense School from his Space Ring. He also took out

all the heavenly resources in his Space Ring.

Jian Chen's Space Ring had suddenly become half-empty after removing all those items, but he did not feel pained at all.

"Class 9 Monster Cores! You actually have Class 9 Monster Cores!" Even the Heavenly Enchantress involuntarily made an outburst when she saw the monster cores. Class 9 Monster Cores could only appear within the bodies of Class 9 Magical Beasts that had reached the level of Saint Emperors. Even the remains of Saint Emperors could not match their value. They were basically items of legends on the Tian Yuan Continent. Even with the Heavenly Enchantress' mental fortitude, she could not help but have a different expression when he pulled out two Class 9 Monster Cores in one stroke.

What made the Heavenly Enchantress even more astounded was other than the two Class 9 Monster Cores, he had ten Class 8 Monster Cores as well. Class 8 Monster Cores were basically non-existent on the continent just like Class 9 Monster Cores where it was basically impossible to come across any.

The Heavenly Enchantress began to suspect whether Jian Chen had robbed a protector clan when he pulled out so many monster cores in one stroke. This was because no organization could pull out so many high class monster cores other than the ten protector clans and Mercenary City.

"Xiao Bao will consume extremely vast amounts of energy when he cultivates. These items should be enough to support him for a period of time. I'll pass them all to you, and I'll have to trouble you with looking after him." Jian Chen stored all the items into another Space Ring and passed it to the Heavenly Enchantress. He obviously would not give all these valuable items to Xiao Bao. He was still a child after all, and it would be a huge loss if he lost them.

The Heavenly Enchantress did not turn down the Space Ring. She accepted it without saying anything more. Ever since Xiao Bao

had obtained a cultivation method of the Chaotic Body from the sword spirits, she had witnessed the rate at which he consumed the heavenly resources. A ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource would only take him an hour to fully absorb. The speed was terrifyingly fast.

And after consuming so many ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources, Xiao Bao did not undergo any significant changes. His dantian was still devoid of energy, which was more than enough to demonstrate just how vast the energy needed for the Chaotic Body was.

“The toughness of the Chaotic Body is nowhere near ordinary. Xiao Bao is in possession of the Innate Chaotic Body, so he has some natural advantages. He will not suffer from any backlashes when consuming heavenly resources or refining monster cores, so you have no need to worry about Xiao Bao consuming heavenly resources and monster cores too quickly,” Jian Chen explained more about the Chaotic Body to the Heavenly Enchantress, allowing her to have a rough understanding of Xiao Bao’s constitution.

“Then when can Xiao Bao cultivate the Chaotic Force that you’ve mentioned?” The Heavenly Enchantress asked. Although she was extremely unwilling to talk to Jian Chen, she still cared very much for her child. She needed to understand the Chaotic Force for her son.

“You need to forge and refine the Chaotic Body before cultivating Chaotic Force. Xiao Bao is still at the stage of forging, so all the energy will be absorbed by his body. After he completes this process, he will finally be able to cultivate Chaotic Force. You don’t understand the Chaotic Body very much, so don’t interfere with Xiao Bao’s cultivation. He already has the cultivation method, so as long as he follows it, everything will obviously flow naturally,” said Jian Chen.

Jian Chen stayed on the island for most of the day before leaving.

During that time, he basically explained everything regarding the constitution to Xiao Bao and also told him about his experiences and all his knowledge regarding cultivation he had gained over the years.

Once Jian Chen left the island and stood above the sea did he realize that he did not bring a Saint King with him. Without a Saint King, there would be no Space Gate, and he was over ten million kilometers away from the Gesun Kingdom right now. If he flew, it would take him at least ten days or half a month to get back.

“Do I have to go back and ask the Heavenly Enchantress to construct a Space Gate for me?” Jian Chen frowned. He was troubled. There were some slight discrepancies in his relationship with the Heavenly Enchantress, so he really could not bring himself to return to ask her to send him back home.

Jian Chen helplessly sighed as he stared at the boundless ocean. Just when he had no idea what he should do, the artifact spirit’s voice rang through his head. His face immediately lit up in joy, and without any hesitation, he disappeared into the artifact space.

Boom!

Before Jian Chen could even make out his surroundings, he heard a deafening rumble. At the same time, a vast pressure that originated from the surroundings filled the space.

“A Saint Tier Battle Skill!” Jian Chen shivered inside. He immediately understood that someone was using a Saint Tier Battle Skill from the vast pressure and that the user was powerful as well, at least a Saint King.

“Master, your friend who has always been studying the Saint Tier Battle Skill has emerged from seclusion,” the artifact spirit appeared silently beside Jian Chen and politely informed him.

As expected, a person shining with a golden, blinding light could

be seen a thousand meters away in the air. Above him, a serpent-like dragon swam about. Although the dragon was condensed from energy, it too shone with golden light and possessed a vast pressure.

At this moment, the dragon roared at the sky before turning into a golden blur. It charged toward the ground at an unbelievable speed.

Boom! With another rumble, the ground shook violently. Huge cracks littered the surroundings in a hundred kilometers radius while a hundred-meter-wide, bottomless hole appeared there.

The golden dragon did not dissipate after producing such a shocking strike. It flew back as a golden streak of light, returning above the person's head.

“Hahahaha, I, the great Nubis, have finally succeeded!” A crazy laugh rang through the surroundings and spread out in all directions. Even from a thousand kilometers away, Jian Chen could clearly hear the arrogant and joyful voice.

Chapter 1212: Visiting the Bloodsword Sect

Jian Chen could not help but smile. He was filled with joy inside as well. He had never thought that Nubis, who had been locked up for several years and had been devoting all his time to studying a Saint Tier Battle Skill, would finally come out at this moment and that he would have modified the Saint Tier Battle Skill into one that he could use himself. Jian Chen was happy for Nubis' success.

The pressure that permeated the surroundings shocked him in particular. Although he had not personally experienced a strike from the modified Saint Tier Battle Skill, he could tell from the presence alone that the battle skill was not weaker than an attack from a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King.

The huge golden dragon above Nubis began to revolve quickly again. Pulses of energy rippled out as the pressure in the surroundings began to gradually increase.

Jian Chen knew that Nubis had not finished casting the skill when he felt this. Nubis was about to direct it toward the ground again. If Jian Chen was outside, he obviously would not do anything about it, but the artifact space was his territory. He did not wish for it to become a mess because of Nubis, so he hurriedly yelled, "Nubis, stop! If you want to try the Saint Tier Battle Skill, go outside. Don't do it here!"

"Hahahaha, Jian Chen. I, the great Nubis, have finally succeeded in modifying that Saint Tier Battle Skill for the sea race into one that's specific to me. This Saint Tier Battle Skill has been modified according to myself, so no other human or magical beast can use it other than Silver Striped Golden Snakes. Jian Chen, taste the power of the Saint Tier Battle Skill!" Nubis laughed aloud. He was extremely excited and proud. With that, the dragon above his head roared and shot toward Jian Chen like a golden streak of lightning.

Jian Chen became stern. Nubis was a Third Heavenly Layer Saint

King, so Jian Chen actually felt pressured facing a battle skill from him. Not only had the golden dragon locked onto Jian Chen's presence, preventing him from dodging, even the space around him became thick. Not only did he feel like he was standing in treacle, a heavy pressure was also pressing against him from all directions as if a huge mountain lay above him. His mobility was greatly limited.

Jian Chen's indifferent gaze became sharp in that moment. A great battle intent began to radiate from him. Although Jian Chen did not fear Nubis' Saint Tier Battle Skill, he was still cautious. Strands of Chaotic Force surged within him, quickly fusing into every inch of his flesh. Jian Chen used everything that his Chaotic Force could provide, forcefully pushing back the space around him by three inches.

The Emperor Armament had already appeared silently in his right hand. Violent and destructive Chaotic Force swirled around the sword. All that was left where Jian Chen had been standing was an afterimage now; he advanced instead of retreating, charging toward the golden dragon with an unstoppable force.

Bang! With a great sound, Jian Chen collided with the golden dragon. A terrifying ripple of energy erupted in the form of a golden storm into the surroundings, dying the entire place a golden, dazzling light.

The space at the center of the golden world violently trembled. It had turned into a blurry mess there. Even though the artifact space was much tougher than the outside world, it still ended up ripping open from their attacks.

The golden energy slowly receded after a long while. Jian Chen stood upright where the golden dragon was before. His clothes had become rather messy and even slightly tattered, but his complexion remained the same, just as composed as before. The soul beneath him had already disappeared, now replaced by a hundred-meter-wide ditch. He levitated in the air.

Meanwhile, Nubis' golden dragon had vanished.

A thousand meters away in the air, Nubis blinked a few times and looked at Jian Chen in disbelief. He cried out, "How could that happen! My Saint Tier Battle Skill was already at the level of Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, and even a Saint King at that level would need to exert quite the effort to defend against it. How did it break through it so easily? Jian Chen, what's your strength right now? Have you reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer already?"

Jian Chen put the Emperor Armament away. He did not care about his clothes at all. He took a step and arriving by Nubis' side instantly, He chuckled, "My strength is the same as yours, at the Third Heavenly Layer, but if I borrow the Emperor Armament and use all I have, I should be able to display strength at the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer."

"I understand the Saint Tier Battle Skill I've modified extremely well. It needs a sliver of my essence to cast it, so its strength is incomparable to ordinary Saint Tier Battle Skills. Even if your battle prowess is at the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer, it's impossible for you to block my Saint Tier Battle Skill so easily," Nubis pursued the matter. He still refused to believe that Jian Chen's strength was at what he had said.

Jian Chen thought about it and added, "Maybe it's because of my Chaotic Force."

Nubis gave a deep nod with that. He said, "The energy you use is weird. Looks like that's really the cause."

"Alright, let's not talk about this for now. Let's go out first. I just happen to have some problems I need your help with," said Jian Chen.

Nubis' eyes lit up with that, "I never thought that I'd have to fight right after I get out. Let's hurry. I just happen to be in need of someone to try my Saint Tier Battle Skill on."

Jian Chen shook his head speechlessly. Nubis sure was a battle freak to have thought that his problem was a powerful enemy. However, he did not give an explanation. He just left the artifact space with Nubis.

Nubis looked around after he got out. Other than a small island in the distance, there was just the boundless ocean.

“Jian Chen, didn’t you say you encountered some problems? Why don’t I see any enemies?” Nubis asked in confusion. He constantly looked around in search of something.

Jian Chen rolled his eyes at Nubis, “I think you’ve become confused after so many years of seclusion. My problem is something else, not a powerful enemy.”

“What’s your problem then?” Nubis asked reflexively. He then looked toward the island far away and immediately understood something, “I get it, Jian Chen. Let me guess. Does your problem have to do with the Heavenly Enchantress?”

Before Jian Chen could reply, Nubis continued as if that really was the case, “You don’t need to reply anymore. I already know that that’s the case. Hmph, to think that I was so afraid of that woman when I was still a Saint Ruler. That’s the greatest embarrassment in my entire life. But who made her specialize in soul attacks? And who made magical beasts have a weak soul? Too bad that my strength has skyrocketed, my soul had been refined as well when I modified the Saint Tier Battle Skill. Both my strength and the power of my soul are no longer comparable to before, so I have no need to fear even if I have to face up against the Heavenly Enchantress who’s skilled in soul attacks.”

Nubis could not help but feel bold when he reached he spoke to that point. He said, “Let’s go Jian Chen. Let’s go to Three Saint Island. Allow me, the great Nubis, to witness the soul attacks of the Heavenly Enchantress and regain the honor that I had lost back then.” Nubis was about to fly toward Three Saint Island when he

said that.

Jian Chen's heart jumped. He knew extremely well that it would be no different than seeking death if Nubis went to the island right now. He was not the Heavenly Enchantress' opponent back then and was even less of an opponent now.

Jian Chen grabbed Nubis' arm hurriedly and forcefully stopped him. He sternly said, "Nubis, don't blame me for not warning you. The Heavenly Enchantress' strength right now is incomparable to the past. I think she's already reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint King, and her zither attacks are even more terrifying." Jian Chen could not help but think back to when the Heavenly Enchantress had knocked out countless experts of the protector Changyang clan with a single note. He was also certain that the Heavenly Enchantress had only played the zither casually. If she had used all she had, even Saint Kings would not have been able to resist the terrifying charm hidden within the notes.

"What! She's already reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer!?" Nubis jumped in fright. He stared at Jian Chen in disbelief.

"A few days ago, she played a note casually and it lead to the collapse of a powerful protector clan. Are you still certain you want to do that?" Jian Chen said.

Nubis could not help but retract his head in fright as he looked at the island in fear. He was no longer bold enough to proceed with what he was going to do. Magical Beasts possessed an innate advantage of a powerful body, such that their battle prowess exceeded humans at the same level. However, they were not without weaknesses either, and one of these weaknesses was the soul. As a result, Nubis was more willing to fight against powerful humans than those who could use soul attacks.

"Nubis, I may have the battle prowess of a Saint King, but my comprehension of the mysteries of the world remains at the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler, so I can't rip open a Space Gate. I

want to return to the Gesun Kingdom immediately, so just make a Space Gate for me.”

Only now did Nubis understand. Jian Chen’s problem was not something he had thought of. Instead, it was the fact that he did not have the ability to construct a Space Gate to return home.

Nubis was no longer willing to stay a moment later after learning how terrifying the Heavenly Enchantress was. He immediately created a Space Gate as quickly as he could, leaving with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen and Nubis returned to the Gesun Kingdom together before summoning the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect. They directly proceeded to the Bloodsword sect under the lead of the four protectors.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian stayed in the clan. They did not go with him, but they had already left a method of communication with Jian Chen. As soon as Jian Chen encountered an opponent he could not defeat, the three of them would hurry over as soon as they could.

You Yue did not go along either. Instead, she stayed in the Bright Moon Divine Hall to cultivate, working hard on increasing her own strength. She knew that she could only help Jian Chen with even more things once she was strong.

Chapter 1213: Return of the Bloodsword Sect

Jian Chen was only accompanied by the Third Heavenly Layer Saint King Nubis on his journey to the Bloodsword sect this time. Originally, they could have opened a Space Gate and arrived at the Bloodsword sect through it, but unfortunately, neither Jian Chen nor Nubis knew the exact location of the sect, nor did they ever visit the place, so they did not know the exact location. As a result, they could only use the description from the four protectors to create a space gate several hundred thousand kilometers away and fly the rest of the journey.

Jian Chen and Nubis flew for an entire day and night under the lead of the four protectors before finally arriving where the Bloodsword sect was located. To their surprise, the Bloodsword sect was hidden in a small and extremely obscure valley within a huge, desolate mountain range.

From the looks of it, the valley seemed rather similar to Longevity Valley where uncle Xiao stayed. A village was present in the valley as well, except it was even more obscure than Longevity Valley. It was large as well, possessing over two thousand wooden huts in a neat fashion. All of the huts were ordered in a pattern, but they varied in sizes. The huts at the edge were the smallest, and the closer to the center, the larger they became. A hall constructed from ten-thousand-year-old ironwood stood at the center. It contained seven floors and took up several tens of thousand square meters.

A dead silence loomed over the entire village when Jian Chen and Nubis saw it. There was not a single person there, nor was there any farmland in the surroundings. It could have been easily misunderstood as a ghost town.

However, that was not what Jian Chen and Nubis believed. They had already sensed several powerful presences in the silent village, and the most powerful one had already reached Saint Emperor.

“Is this where the Bloodsword sect is located?” Jian Chen asked as he looked at the village.

“Sect master, this is indeed where we are located. The disciples of the sect basically all stay in the huts to cultivate, and they don’t usually come out unless there’s something happening. It’s very common for not a single person to emerge in half a month,” explained a protector.

“I, the great Nubis, can tell that there are only two thousand people in total with just a single glance. The Bloodsword sect is one of the three great assassination organisations on the continent after all. They may have declined, but isn’t there just too few people?” Nubis curled his lips scornfully. His impression of the Bloodsword sect immediately plummeted.

“Our sect has not declined. We’ve only gone into seclusion under the sect master’s orders and never appear on the Tian Yuan Continent. We may have suffered heavy casualties from the battle a thousand years ago, but we’ve recovered already after a thousand years of recuperation. All the people here are the core disciples of our sect. All of them are elites. We have several tens of thousand other disciples outside, scattered and hidden across the entire continent,” a protector explained emotionlessly.

At this moment, a few people in red clothes flew over from the village, arriving before Jian Chen in just a few seconds.

There were a total of six people. The leading person was an ordinary old man who seemed to be in his seventies. His vast presence allowed Jian Chen and Nubis to tell that he was a Saint King with a single glance and that he was the same as Nubis, at the Third Heavenly Layer. Two people behind him were middle-aged men, while the other three were all old people. They were all at the Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers at a minimum and two of them were at the Ninth Heavenly Layer.

“The vice sect master Jiang Wang and the five elders have come

to greet the sect master!” The old man at the very front gave a clear greeting and bowed toward Jian Chen. He had learned that Jian Chen had become the sect master long ago and was extremely familiar with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen could tell that the vice sect master and the five elders were completely content with him taking up the position as sect master from their expressions. Jian Chen stepped up to help Jiang Wang rise and said, “There’s no need to be so polite. I was fortunate enough to be favored by uncle Xiu, which was why he passed the position as sect master to me, allowing me to take up the important matter of developing the Bloodsword sect. If there’s anything that I do incorrectly in the future, please show me how it’s done, vice sect master.”

“The sect master is too modest. Within the sect, the sect master possesses supreme authority. How could I correct you?”

Jian Chen and Jiang Wang conversed politely out of courtesy before being invited into the village by Jiang Wang. The five elders and four protectors followed silently behind them.

“Sect master, all the people here are the core disciples of the sect. There are around two thousand three hundred total, and the weakest are Earth Saint Masters. There are around two hundred and twenty Heaven Saint Masters and nine Saint Rulers in total, which would be the four protectors and the five elders. As for the Saint Kings, there is only me.”

“Where we stay contains a powerful killing formation as well, formed from over two thousand wooden huts. The control center for the formation would be the Blood God Hall in the very center, which is also the residence of the sect master. Other than the vice sect master, everyone else can only enter the place after receiving the approval of the sect master.”

Along the way, Jiang Wang constantly explained the situation of the Bloodsword sect to Jian Chen. He began from where they

stayed before moving onto the outer disciples that were scattered outside, allowing Jian Chen to gain a clear understanding of the structure of the sect in the end.

The structure was not complicated at all. In fact, it was extremely simple. The entire organization was controlled by the five elders. They all managed their own squadron of people. The vice sect master on the other hand possessed complete authority over the five elders while the sect master was an absolute existence in the sect. They could decide everything and anything for the sect.

The next day, Jian Chen underwent the formal ceremony of taking up the position as sect master. The ceremony was very simple. It was hosted by the vice sect master, elders, and protectors, allowing all the core members to pay respects to the sect master.

The first thing that Jian Chen did was hold a meeting after the ceremony.

Currently, Jian Chen, Nubis, Jiang Wang, the five elders, and the four protectors gathered in a room enveloped by a barrier in the Blood God Hall. They all were stern.

Jian Chen had changed into the special attire of the sect master. He wore blood-red, luxurious robes, which added a sense of maliciousness to his appearance.

“Today, I have two important matters to announce in this meeting. The first thing is that the Bloodsword sect will return to the continent again,” Jian Chen sternly informed them. He rarely issued orders, but his words were filled with absolute authority.

Jiang Wang, the elders, and the protectors all lit up in joy, but no one said anything in response.

Jian Chen continued, “The next matter will be wiping out the Underworld sect!”

If the first matter had delighted the upper echelon of the

Bloodsword sect, the second made them all ecstatic. In all these years, the three great assassination organizations had always been in conflict with one another. Countless smaller clashes had occurred in the past and their enmity had already reached an irreconcilable stage, especially when the Bloodsword sect waged a war that was unheard of against the Underworld sect and the Yama Hall. Back then, Houston's strength was absolute, and neither one of the two organizations were the opponent of the Bloodsword sect. In the end, the two organizations worked together, allowing them to face the Bloodsword sect in a life-or-death battle.

The battle was extremely intense. Although the two organizations worked together, Houston's strength was still supreme and the Bloodsword sect was unstoppable. Under his lead, the Bloodsword sect still managed to suppress the two other organizations, pushing them toward the brink of destruction. In the end, the battle only stopped after Houston's wife was assassinated, and from then on, the Bloodsword sect vanished from the Tian Yuan Continent.

During the thousand years, the entire sect had wanted to take revenge against the two assassination organizations several times, but they could do nothing due to the sect master's orders, much less appear on the continent, which was why they withheld their enmity for a whole millenia. Now that the new sect master had finally released them from that order, they were all ravished with joy.

"Sect master, when will we be moving out?" An elder stood up and excitedly asked.

"Since the order has been issued, the sooner we move, the better. I hope we can finish off uncle Xiu's revenge as soon as possible. Do you know where the Underworld sect is located?" Jian Chen asked.

"Sect master, the Underworld sect is well-hidden, but it is not hidden well enough to hide from the Intelligence Hall of the

Bloodsword sect. We've looked into this before. All we need is an order from the sect master and then we can set off immediately," replied Jiang Wang. He had yearned for this day for a very long time already.

"If that's the case, let's set out tomorrow morning. Go make preparations today. We will be in an intense battle tomorrow," Jian Chen heavily informed them.

"Sect master, how many people will we be bringing?" An elder asked.

"Vice sect master, elders, and protectors, you will be coming with me. There is no need to bring the people below Saint Ruler."

"But sect master, the Underworld sect has a divine hall. They've always been hiding in it in the recent years, so we might not be able to break through the divine hall with our sect's strength," said an elder.

"You don't need to worry about this. Divine halls are tough, but they are not indestructible." Jian Chen's voice was filled with confidence, but he sighed inside. By the looks of things, he needed to trouble Rui Jin and the others when he moved against the Underworld sect.

Chapter 1214: The President Sighs

As one of the seven capital cities on the continent, the City of God was bustling. Most of the people who strolled through the streets were rich merchants and the descendants of exceptional clans. Only once in a while would a few rough-looking mercenaries appear in the crowd.

Not only was the City of God the territory of one of the three great clans that controlled the entire empire, the Zaar family, it was also the sanctuary of Radiant Saint Masters. Not only did most of the Radiant Saint Masters on the continent gather here, it was where all Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters lived. There were over twenty known Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters on the continent, and all of them had been bestowed a position as an elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union.

A majestic castle stood quietly in the center of the city like a sleeping beast. It possessed a feeling like it had stood through many changes. The castle was snow-white, but it was aged, so it was not particularly bright in color. Traces of time were present on it.

This castle was the headquarters of the Radiant Saint Master Union. On the seventh floor, the president, Adami, currently sat quietly on a throne in a beautifully-adorned hall. His face was no longer as bright as before, now possessing traces of haggardness. Even his wrinkles had deepened, making him seem even older.

“Esteemed president, Ye Lan wishes to see you.” At this moment, a polite voice came from outside.

“Sir, please come in,” Adami gently replied. With a gentle wave of his right hand, a ball of milky-white light flashed from it and the door opened silently.

A man in tight-fitting robes walked in from outside. He only seemed to be in his early thirties since his dark eyes shone with

vigor, like two pieces of obsidian. His handsome face possessed the weathering of wind and rain.

“Esteemed president, I’ve lead a group of people outside under your orders to find master Yun Tian, but there hasn’t been any news of him even now,” the young man clasped his hands at the president.

Adami frowned and thought, “Yun Tian’s already vanished for so many years. I really do wonder where he’s gone. I’ve used a secret technique many times, but I still haven’t been able to communicate with him. Has Yun Tian suffered an accident...” The president darkened when he thought of that possibility. Yun Tian was his senior disciple. He had basically watched him grow up, so although they were just master and disciple, Adami had treated him as his own son. As a result, Adami felt rather sorrowful when he thought about how Yun Tian may have suffered an accident.

“Ye Lan, it’s been tiring for you over the past few days. Go rest first. You don’t need to search for Yun Tian anymore.” Adami waved his hand gently. He was rather dispirited.

“President, you must look after yourself. I shall bid farewell,” Ye Lan said in concern before backing out quietly.

“Sigh.” With Ye Lan’s departure, Adami sat back and leaned against the wide and comfortable throne.

At this moment, Adami could not help but think about some matters of the past. In his life, he had taken on three disciples in total. The first one had departed long ago due to old age while the second one was Yun Tian, who he had watched grow up. As for his third disciple, it was something that he felt most prideful about.

Both his first and second disciples were exceptional. They possessed an extremely great talent among Radiant Saint Masters, but compared to his third disciple, the difference was just unsurmountable, because not only was his third disciple a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, he was also a supreme expert that could

shake up the continent. His achievements as a fighter had already surpassed his abilities as a Radiant Saint Master, already a famous Saint King who even the ten protector clans feared.

Unfortunately, accidents occurred. The third disciple that Adami felt most pride for ended up taking away the saint artifact of the union, almost causing the union to collapse. Not only did it result in an irreversible loss, it also cut Adami off from the possibility of becoming a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master.

Adami was nearing the end of his life. He originally had a total of three thousand years, and he gained another two hundred years through a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource, so he had three thousand two hundred years in total. Over three thousand one hundred years had already passed, so he only had a few decades left.

Adami had never married in his life, and he was without children. He only had a few wishes as he neared his death. One was to see the union become even more powerful and even more glorious if he could not become a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master while the other was being sent off by his closest disciples.

However, his final wishes had all become dreams now. Let alone becoming even more powerful and even more glorious, it was extremely fortunate that the union had not collapsed. Being sent off by his closest disciples was even more impossible. His second disciple had been missing for many years, and no one knew whether he was still alive or not right now while his third disciple's status was far from what it had been in the past. Even as the president of the union, he could not form proper ties with him let alone be sent off by him.

"I've worked hard my entire life for the glory of the union. I never thought that I would fail to see glory after over two thousand years of work and that the union would collapse in my hands. I am the offender of the union," the president sighed at the sky. His voice trembled slightly and was filled with dreariness.

Tears even pooled in his eyes.

A tiny wooden hut stood all by itself on the peak of a mountain ten thousand kilometers from the city. Zaar Caiyun remained on the bed, eyes closed within the hut. She had been unconscious for many years already and had still not woken up.

“Caiyun, do you still remember when we first met each other in the City of God? Back then, I was only an Earth Saint Master, and I had been chased into the city by a villain. I was very heavily injured and my Space Ring had been stolen as well. I had nothing. I was hungry and thirsty. With no other choice, I stole a set of clean clothes from a small household before dragging my exhausted body to an inn where I had a hearty meal. In the end, when I received the bill, I was completely ready to be beaten black and blue, but you suddenly appeared in that crucial moment. Back then, you were so pretty, as pretty as a fairy from heaven. I was deeply drawn in at first glance.

“Back then, I still didn’t know who you were. Not only did you help me pay off my bill, you even noticed that I was very heavily injured with a single glance. You gave me an invaluable Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pill and spoke with me for a long time. From that time on, I had become your friend.

“I still remember when you found out that I had been hunted down by a villain. You fell into an utter rage, which we then went together to find him. We killed him by working together...”

Hao Wu held Zaar Caiyun’s hand as he gently recalled their first meeting. Reminiscence filled his eyes. In all the years Zaar Caiyun had been unconscious, he had stayed there, having not left for even a single moment.

“Caiyun, do you still remember our promise back then? You said that once we’re strong enough, we’ll live a life as wanderers and travel across the continent. Caiyun, wake up. Let’s go fulfill that promise...”

On a lone island several million kilometers away from the Tian Yuan Continent in the vast sea, a disheveled man in tattered clothes currently crouched down as he wolfed down a fish in his hands.

“I’ll eat you. I’ll eat you. Yes, yes... I’ll eat you, Yang Yutian. I’ll be eating you, eating your flesh, and drinking your blood. Hahahaha, isn’t it very painful? Cry out, cry out! Keep crying out, keep struggling! No matter how you struggle before I, master Yun Tian, you will still become my prey in the end,” the beggar-like person mumbled mindlessly as he gnawed the fish in his hands, laughing idiotically from time to time.

With a plop, the water near the shore splashed and a 60 centimeter fish accidentally leaped ashore. It struggled furiously in an attempt to return to the water.

The man’s eyes immediately lit up. He tossed away the half-eaten fish and cried out at the same time, “Yang Yutian, don’t run away!” As he said that, he lunged forward, pressing the fish that was just about to return to the water into the ground. The lower half of his face smashed into the rock underneath, causing him to bleed from his nose and mouth.

However, he did not seem to be in pain. He spat out a mouthful of blood and two broken teeth as he laughed in a deranged fashion, “I caught you, I caught you, Yang Yutian. Let’s see how you run now. In front of me, you can’t escape no matter how great you are. I want to eat your flesh and drink your blood.”

He used his hands to grab the fish under him. The fish immediately began to struggle desperately, rapidly opening and closing its mouth.

Yun Tian became even more excited when he saw this. He laughed aloud, “Yang Yutian, never did you think that you would end up like this. Struggle, struggle desperately. Call out miserably! Go on, do it! Plead for your life. Plead me to spare your life. I might

just spare your life. Yang Yutian, why aren't you saying anything? Why aren't you pleading? Talk, go on, talk.

“Okay, Yang Yutian. You're not going to talk. Since you're not going to talk, don't blame me. I'll bite you to death.” As he said that, Yun Tian opened his bloodied mouth to viciously bite the fish. His two broken teeth could clearly be seen.

Chapter 1215: Wiping Out the Underworld Sect (One)

When the Beast God Continent had launched a large-scale invasion of the Tian Yuan Continent because of the Winged Tiger God, they were obstructed by the experts of the Tian Yuan Continent before an agreement was reached. Thus, the experts all temporarily settled down on an island. Afterward, Yun Tian left the union and the continent with news regarding the Winged Tiger God, wanting to find the experts to tell them that the Winged Tiger God was with Jian Chen and, hence, cause problems for him. However, Yun Tian fainted from exhaustion after flying for a few days. Just as he was about to drown, a magical beast happened to pass by. The magical beast scooped him from the water and brought him to the island.

After learning about the Winged Tiger God from Yun Tian, the experts of the Beast God Continent set off for the Tian Yuan Continent again while Yun Tian was left on the island. Yun Tian was unable to make the journey because the island was extremely far away from the continent, he had no idea in which direction to travel, and he was not strong enough for the journey, so he ended up trapped there.

At the very beginning, Yun Tian was still able to keep his sanity, but after quite some time, he could no longer bear it and was eventually reduced to his current shape.

...

Jian Chen lead the vice sect master, the five elders, and the four protectors the morning of the next day. They headed to where the Underworld sect was located. Nubis obviously followed along as well.

Jiang Wang had searched for the exact hiding location of the Underworld sect himself, so he had left down marks from back

then. They arrived where the Underworld sect was located through a Space Gate created by the vice sect master.

It was located in a yellow world, sand as far as the eye could see. The burning sun hung high in the air and radiated with an intense heat, baking the earth until it was scorching-hot.

Jian Chen, Nubis, Jiang Wang, the five elders, and the four protectors all levitated in the sky at ease. They gazed at the ground from above. The severe conditions of the desert did not affect them at all.

“Sect master, in order to prevent the experts of the Underworld sect from sensing us, I’ve chosen to construct the Space Gate a thousand kilometers away. There’s a region of loose sand up ahead. The divine hall of the Underworld sect is hidden beneath the loose sand,” Jiang Wang explained to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately looked ahead and nodded slightly. He said, “Let’s go!” With that, the group set off.

The weakest among them were the four protectors, who were Saint Rulers at the Fifth Heavenly Layer, so all of them possessed a rather deep comprehension of space. As a result, they moved extremely quickly, crossing a thousand kilometers in less than five minutes.

Jian Chen immediately extended his presence into the ground when he arrived above the region of loose sand. Indeed, he discovered a huge divine hall standing silently underneath the sand.

Jian Chen’s eyes grew cold. Of the two organizations that had murdered uncle Xiu’s wife all those years ago, the Yama Hall had already been devastated by him. All that was left was the Underworld sect.

Jian Chen did not hesitate. A powerful killing intent surged out of him into the surroundings while the Emperor Armament

silently appeared in his hand. A dark mist coiled around the weapon, giving off the violent presence of destruction.

Jiang Wang and the five elders shivered inside. Jian Chen's killing intent was enough to make them tremble in fear, allowing them to finally witness Jian Chen's strength. All of them sighed, the rumors were true. Although they had heard about Jian Chen's strength, they learned about it from the rumors of the Tian Yuan Continent. None of them had any idea just how many of the rumors were fake.

Jian Chen swung his sword and a black sword Qi an arm thick shot through the air like a bolt of lightning. It disappeared into the loose sand below in a single instant.

The sword Qi possessed the might of a Seven Heavenly Layer Saint King, so it shot toward the divine hall a hundred meters below. Although it was nowhere near enough to break through the divine hall, it was enough to shake it.

The divine hall shook violently, alarming all the people within it. The next moment, a black figure shot out of it with lightning-like speed, emerging with a powerful presence. It faced against Jian Chen's group.

It was a person completely shrouded by black robes. The figure's appearance was completely obscured, making it impossible to distinguish whether the figure was a man or a woman. The figure bore the presence of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King.

"Who're you? Why are you provoking my Underworld sect!" The shrouded person questioned in a heavy, hoarse voice, again, making it impossible to distinguish their gender.

"Hahaha, Luo Qi, isn't your memory a little too horrible? It's only been a thousand years, yet you've forgotten your old friends," sneered Jiang Wang.

"It's you, Jiang Wang. You're all people from the Bloodsword

sect!” The shrouded person’s voice was filled with shock. It continued, “Hasn’t the Bloodsword sect stepped back from the continent and no longer bothers with any matters that have to do with the continent? I wonder why you’ve come with such a great party then?”

“Luo Qi, this is the new sect master of our Bloodsword sect. By the orders of the sect master, we have returned, and you, the Underworld sect, will be an offering for our return,” laughed Jiang Wang.

“Hmph, you still don’t have the right to wipe out my Underworld sect,” sneered the shrouded figure. Its voice was filled with disdain.

“It’s still not up to you to decide whether we have the right or not,” Jian Chen coldly replied. He took a step and arrived by the side of the shrouded figure, stabbing his Emperor Armament at the person’s head.

The shrouded figure was secretly shocked when it sensed the strength of Jian Chen’s attack. However, it did not move slowly at all. Vast amounts of darkness-attributed Saint Force surged from a palm, immediately condensing into a small, black dagger. Without retreating at all, they dodged Jian Chen’s sword while the dagger lashed out like a calm viper, soundlessly stabbing toward the center of Jian Chen’s forehead as a black streak of light.

The corner of Jian Chen’s lips curled up in disdain. Rotating his wrist, he redirected the sword toward the figure’s head. If Jian Chen’s first strike possessed speed that was nothing spectacular, the second attack was unbelievably fast. A pitch-black crack formed wherever the sword swept past.

The shrouded figure was surprised inside. Jian Chen’s attack was just too fast, so fast that as a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, the figure had almost failed to react. It was already too late to dodge, so without any other choices, the figure could only redirect the

dagger to parry the Emperor Armament.

A boom immediately erupted when the two weapons clashed. A powerful ripple of energy spread out with the two of them as the epicenter, wreaking havoc in all directions as a wave. Jian Chen's strike possessed the strength of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, so how could the shrouded figure block it? The figure was immediately sent into a rapid retreat.

"The strength of the new sect master is so powerful, actually at the Seventh Heavenly Layer. There's no one in the sect that his opponent other than the former sect master, who's in seclusion," the shrouded person was secretly astounded. It immediately abandoned the battle, quickly charging underground. As long as the figure made it back to the divine hall, it would be invincible.

However, a bone-chilling event hit the person just as they moved. Jian Chen arrived by their side like a ghost while the black light on the Emperor Armament surged, stabbing out again with lightning-like speed. The tip of the sword was less than three inches away from the person's forehead. They could even feel a stabbing pain from the figure's soul at such a close range, as if his or her soul was about to be ripped into pieces.

The shrouded figure paled in fright. Other than Houston a thousand years ago, this was the first time it had ever felt so close to death.

At this crucial moment, the person spat out a mouthful of thick, black mist and yelled, "Darkness Art, Afterimage Clone!"

Jian Chen's Emperor Armament stabbed into the person's head as soon as the figure yelled. However, Jian Chen did not rejoice and instead frowned. His sword failed to land.

Bang!

As soon as that thought crossed Jian Chen's mind, the black figure exploded loudly. It turned into dense black mist, quickly

expanding and engulfing Jian Chen.

The mist was no ordinary mist, but formed from darkness-attributed Saint Force. Even Jian Chen's visibility was severely limited within the mist.

Suddenly, a small, black dagger appeared silently behind him. The dagger had completely fused with the mist, so it was extremely difficult to sense no matter how sharp Jian Chen's senses were.

However, Jian Chen suddenly turned around just as the dagger was about to stab him. He swung his Emperor Armament without any hesitation and the Chaotic Force on the weapon cleaved through the space. The stroke was extremely powerful, enough to affect the space in the region of a hundred meters, causing it to violently pulse.

“Argh!”

With a painful cry, a bloodied hand fell out of the sky with the dagger before it could deal a fatal strike to Jian Chen. Not only did the shrouded person fail to assassinate Jian Chen in the mist, that figure even lost an arm.

The mist slowly dispersed and Jian Chen gradually appeared before everyone. However, the shrouded figure had already disappeared.

The vice sect master and the five elders could not help but feel relieved when they saw Jian Chen perfectly fine. Although they knew that he was very powerful, the opponent this time was an expert of the Underworld sect who was skilled in assassination techniques. There was the threat of dying with the slightest carelessness.

“Sect master, are you alright? Where's Luo Qi?” Jiang Wang arrived beside Jian Chen and asked about his well being.

Jian Chen was calm and composed. He gently shook his head, “He's still not enough to pose a threat to me, but he sure ran pretty

quickly. After severing his arm, he immediately fled into the sand and into the divine hall.”

Jian Chen put it lightly, but Jiang Wang and the five elders were all secretly stunned. A Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King of the Underworld sect, skilled in assassination, was actually not enough to pose a threat to him, which convinced them of his strength again.

At this moment, Jiang Wang and the five elders all agreed inside that Jian Chen was even more powerful than the rumors.

Chapter 1216: Wiping Out the Underworld Sect (Two)

Suddenly, the sand underneath began to violently churn. A divine hall shot out, slowly emerging with a vast presence.

“That’s the Darkness Divine Hall of the Underworld Sect,” Jiang Wang immediately cried as he watched the giant divine hall slowly emerge from the sand. He became stern. Although he knew that Jian Chen had a method to break through it, its tough defenses still pressured him on a psychological level. This was because if they could not smash through it, they would not be able to touch the assassins hiding inside, and a Saint Emperor’s power was required to smash through it.

Every single divine hall on the Tian Yuan Continent was created by Saint Emperors, so they possessed the power of Saint Emperors. Although this power could not be used to harm those outside the divine hall, it was the structure’s strongest defense. It was not something that Saint Kings could break through even if they were at Great Perfection.

“My Underworld Sect has existed for over a hundred thousand years on the Tian Yuan Continent, so how can we be wiped out by you, the mere Bloodsword sect? Even with Houston’s supreme strength a thousand years ago, you still didn’t have the power to wipe us out, so I’d like to see just how you will finish us off today,” Luo Qi’s furious voice rang from the divine hall. Under Luo Qi’s control, the divine hall rapidly expanded before arriving above Jian Chen and the others. It shot down with its great presence.

Jian Chen coldly smiled. A piece of jade had silently appeared in his hand, and by tightening his grip slightly, the jade piece was crushed into pieces.

“Sect master, let’s retreat,” Jiang Wang suggested from beside Jian Chen before quickly retreating with the five elders and four

protectors in attempt to escape the area covered by the divine hall. Although the structure did not possess any offensive capabilities, none of them wanted to be pressed into the sand.

However, just when they had retreated by a few dozen meters and had yet to make it out, Spatial Force suddenly appeared near Jian Chen. Ten meters away from him, the space violently rippled and it ripped open, forming a multi-colored Space Gate.

A vast pressure flooded out of the Space Gate the moment it formed, filling up the surroundings. The air around seemed to have stopped moving because of the vast pressure and became thick. The group of experts from the Bloodsword sect all froze as well. Other than Jiang Wang, who was at the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King, the elders and protectors felt like they were suffocating before the pressure. They felt like they had lost the ability to breath.

Jiang Wang and the elders were shocked while the four protectors maintained their composure. The pressure had greatly exceeded their former sect master's aura, making them believe that they were facing a Saint Emperor.

The structure continued to rapidly descend as it grew closer from above, blotting out the sun like a dark cloud.

As that happened, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu emerged side-by-side from the Space Gate. They noticed the divine hall in the sky as soon as they arrived, and a sliver of scorn immediately appeared in their eyes.

Rui Jin slowly raised his hand and held up the divine hall with his right hand. With a creak, Rui Jin's hand actually forced the divine hall to suddenly halt from its descent, as if the huge divine hall was being held up by Rui Jin with a single hand.

The eyes of Jiang Wang, the elders, and the protectors all narrowed at this sight. Stopping a divine hall with a single hand was not something a Saint King at Great Perfection could

accomplish. The six of them had all become stunned by the supreme strength Rui Jin had displayed. Although they had heard rumors that Jian Chen possessed three experts who were no weaker than Saint Emperors by his side, they were still rumors after all. They thought the rumors had all been exaggerated, but what they were witnessing today validated the rumors. One of them could stop the descent of a divine hall with a single hand and appear as though they were at ease. With their understanding, only Saint Emperors could do something like that.

Other than the four protectors who had already seen the trio's strength, all the other people's opinions of Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu underwent a drastic change. They all looked at them with unhideable respect.

At this moment, Rui Jin's hand suddenly jerked and a thunderous creak immediately appeared. The divine hall was actually thrown high up into the air with just a jerk of his hand.

"Saint Emperors? You're Saint Emperors? Impossible, this is impossible. Other than the path lord of the carnal desires, there is no second Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent," Luo Qi's terrifying voice rang out of the divine hall, but something seemed to cross his mind very soon. Luo Qi cried out uncontrollably, "I know. You're the three magical beast experts that follow the captain of the Flame Mercenaries..."

No one paid any attention to Luo Qi even though he was a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King. At the same time, a dazzling streak of golden light suddenly appeared. Rui Jin had already drawn the Sacred Dragon's Sword. Holding it above his head, his presence rapidly skyrocketed. He then chopped at the structure.

With that attack, a hundred-meter golden sword Qi directly appeared. It possessed origin energy, an energy that could only be controlled by sovereign-like existences that had surpassed Saint Emperor and stepped into the Origin realm. Even Saint Emperors needed to avoid it.

The huge sword Qi landed on the divine hall, and it immediately rumbled loudly. The entire structure violently shook before splitting in half while Jian Chen and the others were filled with disbelief.

The divine hall had actually been chopped in half with a single stroke from Rui Jin!

“I-impossible. This is impossible...” Luo Qi cried out in disbelief. The divine hall had been what the Underworld sect relied on the most. It was also their greatest trump card in regards to protecting themselves, but someone had actually split the structure in half, such that their terrifying might utterly frightened Luo Qi.

Hong Lian and Hei Yu stared at the falling ruined divine hall in secret shock. Although the two of them could smash through the divine hall with their origin energy weapons, they could not have done it as easily as Rui Jin, who had split the whole thing in half with a single attack.

“Rui Jin, you must be close to breaking through.” Hong Lian suddenly turned her head to Rui Jin. A red light danced in her eyes like flames.

Rui Jin put away the weapon and indifferently replied, “I’ve already touch that barrier. I believe I can become a Saint Emperor within fifty years.”

Jian Chen was surprised by that. His face immediately became filled with joy. He emotionally asked, “Senior Rui Jin, you’re about to become a Saint Emperor?”

Rui Jin smiled at how excited Jian Chen had become. He said, “The reason why the current world lacks Saint Emperors is all because of the lack of origin energy. My Sacred Dragon’s Sword and Sacred Dragon’s Armor possess it, so breaking through obviously won’t be a problem. It’s the same for Hong Lian and Hei Yu. It’s just a matter of time.”

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down, but he found it difficult to suppress the joy inside. It was as if he had already witnessed the moment when all three of them became Saint Emperors, a moment that would happen in a few decades.

Boom! Boom!

At this moment, two rumbles rang out nearby. The divine hall no longer possessed the power to remain levitating after being split in half by Rui Jin, so it landed in the sand. Countless black-robed assassins quickly charged out from the ruined divine hall, fleeing into the distance as quickly as they could.

“None of them are allowed to escape. Kill!” Jian Chen’s eyes grew cold, and he immediately ordered the experts of the Bloodsword sect to attack before using the Illusory Flash to arrive atop the ruined structure. His Emperor Armament turned into a cascade of afterimages as he stabbed at the assassins that slipped out of the structure, killing over ten people in the blink of an eye.

Jiang Wang, the elders, and the protectors hunted down the assassins that fled in all directions. Although they were Saint Rulers or even Saint Kings who could not commit enormous massacres, they still hunted down the assassins in order to wipe out the Underworld sect.

And even if Celestial Decay would occur after killing far too many people, that would only happen if hundreds of thousands or even more people were slaughtered. The Underworld sect was only a few thousand people and every single one of them had hands dyed with blood. They had even less need to worry about Celestial Decay with that.

Now that the item that the Underworld sect relied on the most was gone, all the assassins were greatly affected at a psychological level. Every single one of them became dejected and lost the courage to battle. As soon as they made it out of the divine hall,

they would immediately charge off into the distance.

Jiang Wang, the elders, and the protectors used everything they had to kill the fleeing assassins. Since all those below Saint Ruler were ants, even the Heaven Saint Masters had no power to fight back against Saint Ruler abilities. With a single thought, a Saint Ruler could freeze a region of space and trap several assassins of the Underworld sect there before easily killing them off.

At this moment, over ten assassins from the Underworld sect, dressed in the same attire, charged out of the divine hall by concealing themselves in groups of people. As soon as they made it outside, they fused with the surrounding space, fleeing at an unbelievable space as a blur.

“It’s the Saint Rulers of the Underworld sect. Don’t let any of them escape!” Jiang Wang exclaimed. He gave up on the Heaven Saint Masters he had immobilized with his frozen space and chased after a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

The elders and protectors gave up on their small fry as well, all chasing after the fleeing Saint Rulers.

Rui Jin suddenly formed a seal with his hands and called out, “Secret technique of the Dragon clan, Dragon’s Domain!” With that, a halo of golden light rapidly expanded from Rui Jin, covering the surroundings with unbelievable speed. It covered over a thousand kilometers in the blink of an eye.

The region within a radius of over a thousand kilometers became slightly golden. This was Rui Jin’s Dragon’s Domain, which turned a certain region of the surrounding space into his own domain. Other than Hong Lian, Rui Jin, Jian Chen, Nubis, and the people of the Bloodsword sect, all the people in the space felt like they had suddenly been trapped by an invisible force, making them move much slower. They felt like they were in treacle. Only the Saint Rulers could resist this slowing effect with their full strength. All those below Saint Ruler were completely immobilized.

Chapter 1217: Ancient Teleportation Formation

Rui Jin's Dragon's Domain had already engulfed a radius of a thousand kilometers, but it had only been a few seconds since the divine hall of the Underworld sect had been destroyed. In such a short amount of time, even Saint Rulers could not traverse a thousand kilometers, so all the assassins were trapped in the domain as soon as it formed. No one managed to flee successfully.

Jiang Wang and the five protectors had all caught up with the Saint Rulers now and began a great fight with everything they had. All the Saint Rulers of the Underworld sect used darkness-attributed Saint Force, so they all used secret techniques to morph into dense, black mist as soon as the battle began. They engulfed a certain range, silently moving through the mist in search of an opportunity to deal a sneak attack on their enemies.

The Saint Rulers of the Underworld sect mainly used their darkness-attributed Saint Force to assassinate their targets while the Bloodsword sect used Baleful Yin Force as their trump card. All the assassination organizations used unique techniques. However, none of them used Baleful Yin Force in their fight against the Saint Rulers of the Underworld sect. Baleful Yin Force was refined through slaughter, so it was just too valuable to Saint Rulers.

Even though that was the case, the experts of the Bloodsword sect gained the upper hand since they were unaffected by the Dragon's Domain and, hence, at a complete advantage. On the other hand, the Saint Rulers of the Underworld sect struggled to use seventy to eighty percent of their power under the restraint of the Dragon's Domain.

Bang! Jiang Wang casually struck the head of a Saint Ruler with his hand, blowing the head up on the spot and wiping out the soul.

At the same time, a Ninth Heavenly Layer elder killed his

opponent as well. A blood-red spike passed through the forehead of his enemy before emerging from the other side. It completely passed through the person's head and dissipated his opponent's soul before he could flee.

Jian Chen did not take part in the battle and instead stood with Nubis. He constantly looked around with sharp eyes. He planned on leaving all the Saint Rulers to Jiang Wang and the elders. He would not bother with personally dealing with those who were weaker.

“Odd, Jian Chen. Why don't I see that dude with the arm you took?” Nubis stood beside Jian Chen with his arms crossed as he constantly looked around, searching.

Jian Chen frowned slightly. He too had been waiting for Luo Qi this entire time, but he still had not seen Luo Qi flee from the divine hall. Although the divine hall was now ruined, the power inside had yet to dissipate completely, so his presence could not enter the structure.

“Perhaps Luo Qi is still hiding within the divine hall?” Jian Chen mumbled to himself. Although all the assassins that fled from the divine hall wore the exact same thing, none of them could escape his presence. He did not find Luo Qi at all.

“I'll enter the divine hall and have a look,” said Jian Chen before entering the ruins. Nubis followed him in as well.

The divine hall was pitch-black inside. The darkness-attributed Saint Force was extremely dense. For those who used darkness-attributed Saint Force, cultivating inside would have been extremely effective, but the structure was now destroyed, so the Saint Force was slowly dissipating. The power of the divine hall dispersed rapidly as well.

Jian Chen stood with Nubis in the dark structure. He frowned slightly because their visibility was limited to five meters due to the darkness.

“Hmph, do you think darkness-attributed Saint Force is enough to stop me, the great Nubis?” Nubis sneered. He then immediately began to shine with a dazzling, golden glow. He was like a miniature sun in the divine hall where the Saint Force dispersed as soon as it came in contact with the light. In the blink of an eye, the divine hall cleared up.

They were inside a well-adorned hall. It was empty, only possessing a few valuable decorations. Jian Chen ignored the decor and looked around. He said, “Luo Qi must be hiding in this divine hall. Let’s look around first. We can’t let him escape, or it’ll cause endless future problems. We have the three seniors watching guard outside, so we don’t need to worry about Luo Qi fleeing from another exit while we’re in here.”

Jian Chen and Nubis began to look through the divine hall. There was still some residual power of the divine hall in the surrounding walls, obstructing Jian Chen’s presence. As a result, they could only search slowly.

Along the way, Jian Chen came across quite a few tunnels that had been hidden by walls as well as formations that were concealed everywhere. However, they were all smashed through by the two of them. The toughness of the divine hall and the formations inside were supported by the divine hall’s power, so as it slowly dissipated, both the walls and formations weakened greatly.

At this moment, in an extremely well-hidden room within the divine hall, a shrouded person, who was missing an arm, stood with a short old man. The old man was rather pale, but his eyes shone with vigor.

“Luo Qi, there’s already been two people who’ve entered the divine hall. It probably won’t take them long to arrive here. We need to leave as soon as possible,” the old man said softly and indifferently.

“Former sect master, we’re not going to bother with the other

people of the sect?” Luo Qi asked hoarsely.

“They can destroy the Darkness Divine Hall with a single strike, so they must be at the level of Saint Emperors. Against such opponents, I wouldn’t even have the power to fight back even if I was at my peak. Hmph, this Baleful Yin Force sure is powerful. I was injured by Houston’s Baleful Yin Force a thousand years ago. My soul still hasn’t recovered after a thousand years of resting,” the old man coldly stated. He was still filled with much hatred.

“All the people of the Bloodsword sect are outside right now as well as the three terrifyingly-powerful magical beasts. We’ll definitely be discovered if we go out, so how should we leave?” Luo Qi asked.

“I already understand the situation outside. An expert has already cast an absolute secret technique to engulf the surrounding radius of a thousand kilometers. We definitely can’t go outside, but we still have one thing we’ve been holding back, or we’ll probably end up dead today,” the short old man spoke in a heavy voice. Darkness-attributed Saint Force surged from his feet into the ground. Gradually, an extremely complicated formation appeared beneath them.

“This is a Space Gate. Can we leave through a Space Gate in the divine hall? Isn’t it impossible to rip open space in the divine hall?” Luo Qi asked doubtfully.

The short old man coldly smiled with that, “This is no Space Gate, but an ancient teleportation formation. It was accidentally obtained by the sect several tens of thousand years ago, and it was cast here to prepare for the day when we suffer devastating attacks from enemies. It can allow us to avoid this disaster, and once it’s used, the formation will shatter by itself. There’s no need to worry about people following our tracks.”

Luo Qi rejoiced inside. He said, “Let me go get the Saint Tier Battle Skill first and then we can leave.”

“There’s not enough time. The two of them are already close, so we need to leave immediately. Otherwise, we won’t be able to leave if they destroy the formation,” replied the old man.

The teleportation formation was activated very quickly. With a violent rippling of space, the two of them disappeared.

Several hundred meters away, Jian Chen and Nubis continued to search, headed in the direction of the room. The divine hall’s power was much thinner than before, so Jian Chen’s presence could pass through a few obstructions with some difficulty.

When Luo Qi and the old man left through the teleportation formation, Jian Chen’s expression changed. He could suddenly feel an extremely minute rippling of space, so he quickly ran in the direction without a second thought.

Boom! Jian Chen cut down the entrance with a single stroke after arriving outside the room. The rippling of space that filled the room became even more intense now that the door was gone, but there was not a single person in it, only a destroyed formation on the ground.

Jian Chen sighed when he saw the formation, “We’ve come too late. They’ve already left. I never thought they could leave through a Space Gate in the divine hall.”

Nubis’ face became rather sunken. He knew exactly what it meant for a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King to flee. Their future problems would be unending once they decided to take revenge, and it would become an extremely annoying situation, let alone the fact that the person who escaped was a Saint King assassin.

“Jian Chen, what do we do?” Nubis’ complexion became rather ugly. He had already become great friends with Jian Chen since what had happened in the past, so he obviously treated Jian Chen’s business as his own.

Jian Chen furrowed his brows in thought before relaxing soon

after. His greatest worry was the Changyang clan and his friends in the Flame Mercenaries, but the Changyang clan was now protected by Changyang Zu Yunxiao, who was basically on par with a Saint King at Great Perfection, so the clan were basically impregnable. He planned on asking Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu to look over the Flame Mercenaries. You Yue could help as well, so he would no longer have to worry about Bi Lian and the others' safety once the Bright Moon Divine Hall was present.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Nubis began to search the divine hall. They found a huge stone tablet lodged into a stone wall in a neighboring room. What surprised Jian Chen was that it was actually a complete Saint Tier Battle Skill.

Jian Chen began to remove the stone tablet from the wall without any hesitation. Only after a tremendous amount of effort did he finally succeed in removing the tablet. It was only five meters long, but it was exceptionally heavy, countless times heavier than metal. Even with Jian Chen's current strength, he needed to use quite some power to lift it up.

The Saint Tier Battle Skill recorded in the stone tablet was a fist technique, which was unsuitable for Jian Chen. Jian Chen walked a different path of cultivation from the people of the Tian Yuan Continent, so he could not practice Saint Tier Battle Skills. He threw the tablet into the artifact space, planning to get the elites in there to comprehend the Saint Tier Battle Skill after they became Saint Rulers.

Chapter 1218: Proceeding to the Ice Goddess Hall (One)

Jian Chen and Nubis searched through the Darkness Divine Hall again after removing the Saint Tier Battle Skill, but it was a pity that they did not obtain anything else. Jian Chen was still very satisfied, however, since a complete Saint Tier Battle Skill was the greatest item he could have found.

Jian Chen and Nubis left the Darkness Divine Hall and returned to the other people's side. They saw that the experts of the Bloodsword sect had already been waiting for quite some time, as they had already killed off the several thousand assassins of the Underworld sect.

"Sect master, where's Luo Qi? And the sect master of the Underworld sect, Gu Zhen? I suspect that he's still alive and probably hiding somewhere in the divine hall," Jiang Wang asked courteously. He felt rather surprised when he did not see Luo Qi's corpse.

"They've fled. I never thought that they hid a Space Gate in the divine hall," Jian Chen said with some regret.

Rui Jin furrowed his brows slightly with that. He said, "In my Dragon's Domain, Space Gates can't form at all. How can they flee through a Space Gate? I'll go check out the place where they used the 'Space Gate.'" Rui Jin entered the ruined divine hall with that while Jian Chen and the others followed behind.

In the room Luo Qi and the old man had fled from, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, Hei Yu, Jian Chen, and the others stood around, examining the formation on the floor.

"This isn't a Space Gate." Hong Lian fixedly stared at the formation on the ground and realized that there was something wrong very quickly. Fixed Space Gates were similar to the

formation on the ground, but there was an extremely clear difference between the two.

“Correct. This isn’t a Space Gate, but an ancient teleportation formation. I never thought that something like this would be here. No wonder they managed to flee my Dragon’s Domain,” said Rui Jin.

“An ancient teleportation formation?” Jian Chen murmured. He was filled with curiosity, and even Jiang Wang and Nubis became doubtful.

Rui Jin explained, “I’ve only found information regarding the teleportation formation from my inherited memories. These formations only appeared in ancient times and were extremely valuable. Not only do they have similar uses as Space Gates, able to teleport a certain number of people or things, they’re completely unaffected by the surrounding space, so they can be used even in heavily distorted or even shattered space. The teleportation distance is extremely far away as well and can break through all limitations of space. They are far more powerful than Space Gates.

“But according to my inherited memories, even in ancient times, these formations were extremely rare. No one knows their origins, and there was no one who could make them because the requirements for creating one were just far too great. You would need to reach an utmost mastery with formations and then possess an extremely great comprehension of space. No one could fulfil these two requirements in ancient times, especially in regard to the comprehension of space. Even the level of Saint Emperors was nowhere near enough. The teleportation formations from ancient times seemed to have appeared out of nowhere and were slowly used up. I never thought I’d actually see one today.”

“I never thought that the Underworld sect would actually be in possession of such a valuable teleportation formation. Looks like they were not fated to die today.” Jian Chen thought. After learning about the teleportation formation, he knew that it was

impossible to stop them from getting away today.

“The former sect master of the Underworld sect, Gu Zhen, is still likely to be alive. Looks like he left with Luo Qi. I just wonder if Gu Zhen has fully healed from his wounds and whether he’s made any improvements in his cultivation. A thousand years ago, Gu Zhen was an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King, so if he did, that would be troublesome,” Jiang Wang worried.

“Vice sect master, don’t worry. Uncle Xiu has handed the Blood Divine Hall to me. I’ll give you control of the divine hall, so even if the sect master makes a full recovery, he won’t be able to do anything to you with the divine hall,” said Jian Chen.

They did not stick around for long, leaving the desert very quickly. All the Space Rings from the assassins were handed to Jian Chen as well, but Jian Chen only glanced through them. He passed them all to Jiang Wang after seeing that there was nothing that he needed in them. Although there were quite a decent amount of wealth in all the Space Rings, money no longer held any true value to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen did not return to the base of the Bloodsword sect. After handing over the divine hall he had obtained from uncle Xiu, he went to the Changyang clan with Rui Jin and the others.

Since they had already confirmed that at least two Saint Kings had managed to flee, the Bloodsword sect needed to make preparations to protect themselves. Currently, they only had Jiang Wang as their Saint King, and he was only of the Third Heavenly Layer. He was not an opponent of any of the Saint Kings that managed to flee, so handing the divine hall to Jiang Wang could protect them against Luo Qi and Gu Zhen’s revenge.

Pondering over the problem after returning to the Changyang clan, Jian Chen still ended up getting You Yue to watch over the Flame Mercenaries for a while. Although You Yue was still weak, he clearly felt much safer about it when he thought about You

Yue's powerful master.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu had already helped him enough in recent times, so Jian Chen could not shamelessly request them to watch over the Flame Mercenaries.

Jian Chen had sent out all the scouts of the Bloodsword sect as well, searching for the experts who had fled everywhere on the continent. Although Jian Chen knew that it would probably amount to nothing, he would not give up on the slightest hope. Every single day that the Saint Kings were still alive would be another day he was unable to be at peace.

In recent times, the most popular topic of discussions across the continent was the Bloodsword sect. The Bloodsword sect that had vanished for a thousand years had actually reappeared. Not only did it draw a great deal of attention from various organizations, the sect even did something that shocked countless people. All the hidden bases of the Underworld sect scattered across the continent were found by the Bloodsword sect and washed with blood.

An even more shocking piece of news swept through the continent closely after that. The Underworld sect that had existed for over a hundred thousand years on the continent had actually been wiped out by the Bloodsword sect, stunning countless people. The disturbance created by the news was so great that even Mercenary City and the three great empires were affected.

After all, the Bloodsword sect was an organization equivalent to an ancient clan. Coupled with Houston, who was at the Great Perfection of Saint King, they would be an absolute existence even among ancient clans. It was impossible for such a great organization to not cause a disturbance after it suddenly returned.

Jian Chen did not pay attention to the commotion on the continent while he stayed in the Changyang clan. He was currently with his second aunt, Yu Fengyan, in a pavilion within the garden. Yu Fengyan's eyes were red and swollen; streaks of tears covered

her face. She constantly used her silk handkerchief to wipe away more tears.

She had missed her daughter for many years now. Other than returning once when Jian Chen had been forced off the continent, she had not received any news of Changyang Mingyue since, which made Yu Fengyan worry since she only had one daughter. She basically spent all her time thinking about her daughter, and she had become much more haggard after all these years of longing.

Yu Fengyan's yearning for her daughter reached an unprecedented peak with Changyang Hu's return. She finally came and found Jian Chen after no longer able to hold it in.

"Xiangtian, I know you're a famed expert of the continent now, but I miss Mingyue far too much. Can you take me to see Mingyue? I'm begging you. I just want to catch a single glance of her and then I'll be happy," sobbed Yu Fengyan. She was extremely saf.

Chapter 1219: Proceeding to the Ice Goddess Hall (Two)

Jian Chen felt rather pained when he saw just how distressed Yu Fengyan was. His second aunt held an extremely important position in his heart, even greater than his own father.

This was because when he was young, Yu Fengyan cared for him the second most behind his own mother. Even his father's care was nowhere near how much Yu Fengyan cared for him, especially after he had undergone the Saint's Test. Once he had been tested to be unable to use Saint Force and was labeled as a cripple, Changyang Ba visited him even less. Back then, only Bi Yuntian, Yu Fengyan, and Changyang Mingyue out of the entire clan cared for him.

Jian Chen could feel exactly how Yu Fengyan felt when he watched her in so much heart-aching pain. He could also sense her feeling of helplessness.

Ignoring the fact that the arctic Ice Goddess Hall was not on the Tian Yuan Continent and was extremely far away, just the icy climate there was enough to prevent Heaven Saint Masters from getting anywhere close. Even fire-attributed Heaven Saint Masters could be frozen into an ice cube, so only Saint Rulers could survive there.

Although the clan now had around a dozen Saint Rulers and several Saint Kings, every single one of them possessed great statuses. Even the patriarch of the clan, Changyang Ba, needed to greet them politely when he saw them, let alone Yu Fengyan who was only one of Changyang Ba's many wives.

On the surface, Yu Fengyan was the second madam of the clan and possessed great status, but she was nothing in front of the people who had broken away from the protector clan. Without any doubt, requesting one of the Saint Rulers to take her to the arctic

was an absurd dream with her current status. She did not even have the right to meet them.

As a result, Yu Fengyan could only find Jian Chen. She had already begun to treat Jian Chen as her only hope to see her daughter again.

Jian Chen pondered the request. Although some people had managed to flee from the Underworld sect, including the former sect master who was even more powerful than Luo Qi, he was not exactly helpless against them. At the same time, it had been such a long time since he had last seen his sister that he missed her as well.

Jian Chen made up his mind with that. He said, "Aunty, don't be so sad. Let me organize some things and then I'll take you to the arctic to go look for sister."

"Really? Xiangtian, are you really going to take me to see Mingyue?" Yu Fengyang was overjoyed. She grabbed Jian Chen's hands excitedly. She knew that if Jian Chen turned her down, she would probably never see her daughter ever again unless Changyang Mingyue returned herself.

Jian Chen nodded, "Of course I'm going to. Aunty, go rest for a while. I'll go organize some things immediately, and then I'll take you with me to the arctic."

Jian Chen left the garden and made his way to the back courtyards of the clan.

The back courtyards had already become the forbidden grounds of the Changyang clan. No guard was allowed to approach them, and even the patriarch and other important figures of the clan were forbidden from entering the place without giving a prior warning because that was where Changyang Zu Xiao stayed.

Other than Changyang Zu Xiao, even Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, and the dozen or so Saint Rulers that had

left the protector clan lived there as well. Meanwhile, all the people that guarded the place were replaced by the Heaven Saint Masters that had left the clan with them.

Jian Chen saw four Heaven Saint Masters sitting at the entrance to the back courtyards as soon as he approached the area. The surroundings were in utter silence.

The four Heaven Saint Masters opened their eyes at the same time when Jian Chen arrived. After recognizing Jian Chen, they immediately stood up and politely bowed to him.

Even the patriarch of the clan, Changyang Ba, needed to send a message before he could to enter, but Jian Chen did not need to. He could go in and out as he wished and no one would stop him.

Jian Chen amicably nodded to the Heaven Saint Masters before entering the forbidden grounds without any resistance. He had not seen the four Heaven Saint Masters before, but he knew they all belonged to the Zu branch of the protector clan. They had all come with Changyang Zu Xiao.

Jian Chen had heard about how the back courtyards had become the forbidden grounds long ago. He did not mind, and even supported the changes. After all, the people who had settled down here had been lead over by Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao. Changyang Zu Xiao was a Saint King who was already approaching Great Perfection.

Most importantly, Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Xiao had left the protector clan to help him, so even though Jian Chen's relationship with them was not deep, he still felt respect for them from the bottom of his heart.

Jian Chen met Changyang Zu Xiao in a simply-adorned hall. Changyang Zu Xiao's hair was pale gray. He seemed even older than he had been back in the protector clan, and he seemed rather haggard as well.

Clearly, leaving the protector Changyang clan had affected Changyang Zu Xiao on a psychological level. After all, it had been his home for several thousand years. He had deep feelings for it.

Jian Chen first bowed toward Changyang Zu Xiao, greeting him as a junior, before explaining the reason why he had come. He had come to find Changyang Zu Xiao this time to ask him to prepare against the Saint Kings of the Underworld sect, to make sure they couldn't do anything detrimental to the clan.

“Xiang'er, you don't need to worry about that. Although I can't find Saint Kings hiding in the Gesun Kingdom, no Saint King can escape my senses if they enter this small city. The ancient secret techniques of the protector clans are not as simple as that. However, if the Saint Kings choose to attempt an assassination, I can only protect this city. I am helpless to help the royal family of the kingdom. Considering the fact that your fiancée is a part of the royal family and is the daughter of the king, I'll get Yunxiao to guard the palace. Yunxiao might only be at the Fifth Heavenly Layer, but he knows quite a few secret techniques. Ordinary Saint Kings are not his opponent in a fight,” Changyang Zu Xiao said amicably. He treated Jian Chen with great importance, so he completely considered everything related to Jian Chen in this matter.

Jian Chen completely stopped worrying after listening to what Changyang Zu Xiao had to say. Hesitating slightly, he asked again, “Great-grandfather, may I ask how much you know about the arctic Ice Goddess Hall?”

Changyang Zu Xiao frowned slightly when he heard the name arctic Ice Goddess Hall. Only after a moment of silence did he say, “All of my understanding of the Ice Goddess Hall comes from the ancient records of the protector clan, which all originate from the ancient times, personally written by Saint Emperors. I only know that the organization is extremely powerful, such that even the four sovereigns from the ancient times did not venture there. No

one knows when the Ice Goddess Hall appeared, but they never interfere with the matters of the continent, nor do they ever appear on the continent. No one else even knows of their existence other than Mercenary City and the ten protector clans. Their descent over a decade ago was the first time in the past million years, and it was all recorded by the protector clans.”

Changyang Zu Xiao suddenly stared at Jian Chen's sternly. He asked with a heavy voice, “Xiang'er, do you plan on visiting the Ice Goddess Hall?”

“Correct. My sister is there and I want to visit her,” Jian Chen confessed.

Changyang Zu Xiao stayed silent for a while before replying with a heavy voice, “Although I've never been to the Ice Goddess Hall, I do know that it is extremely terrifying, because every single record from the Saint Emperor ancestors have warned the descendents to never offend them or try look for them. They must possess some terrifying person, but after so many years, that person feared by our Saint Emperor ancestors must have passed away. However, I still hope you can reconsider your choice. It's best if you don't go.”

“Since the Ice Goddess Hall is so mysterious and power at the same time, why did they make my sister their holy maiden? I don't know if they're scheming something, but you're right. No matter how powerful that person was, even if they had already surpassed Saint Emperor, it's impossible for them to live for so long, so they can't be as terrifying as the past. I need to go,” replied Jian Chen.

“Since you've already made up your mind, I won't stop you. But do be careful,” Changyang Zu Xiao gave up on stopping Jian Chen seeing how he could not persuade him.

Jian Chen left the back courtyards before going to find Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu again. Jian Chen needed to be cautious with the mysterious and powerful Ice Goddess Hall, so in order to deal with unforeseen events, he ended up deciding on bringing the

three of them with him.

Chapter 1220: Frozen Statues

The arctic was to the north of the Tian Yuan Continent. It was not a part of the landmass, but snowy plains that were separated by the vast sea. The climate there was freezing, and the environment was horrible. Blizzards would erupt from time to time that even Heaven Saint Masters could not withstand. There was also a white haze that filled the sky, which would quickly blow away from time to time as well, leaving behind white streaks in the air. This was the terrifying streams of coldness that were extremely active in the arctic. It was said that they could even freeze steel into an icy mess.

The space of the arctic was unstable, so it was impossible to arrive there through a Space Gate. With his second aunt Yu Feng Yan, Jian Chen, Nubis, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu passed through a Space Gate to arrive above the ocean near the arctic. They then flew toward the plains of ice.

Although they had yet to set foot on the icy land, the weather was already extremely cold. The sky was hazy white while the sea water was freezing with huge blocks of ice floating in it.

Most of them were Saint Kings, so they were unaffected by the chilliness that was enough to freeze ordinary people into ice statues. Only the weak Yu Fengyan paled because of the cold. Although she wore thick clothing made from fox fur, she still trembled. However, Yu Fengyan was filled with excitement even if that was the case. She felt warm inside over the fact that she would be able to see her daughter. She was willing to go through anything to see her.

They arrived on the icy plains very quickly. The temperature was extremely low and the icy wind whistled across the land, cutting at them like sharp blades. Even as Saint Kings, they felt their skin tingle. The wind there could cut Earth Saint Masters into mincemeat easily, so it was impossible for ordinary people to

survive there.

Crack! Crack!

With the soft sounds, Jian Chen, Nubis, Rui Jin, and Hei Yu's clothes rapidly began to freeze. In just a few seconds, they became snow-white as a thin layer of frost covered them.

The next moment, the four of them trembled slightly and easily shook off the frost that had covered them. Their faces remained the same as before, as if the coldness here was nothing.

Yu Fengyan had already arrived beside Hong Lian. The streams of coldness were unable to approach Hong Lian due to the waves of heat she gave off. The frigid air turned to nothing before the heat.

"Senior Hong Lian, please look after my aunt," Jian Chen said to Hong Lian. Hong Lian was a Scorching Divine Phoenix, a sovereign of fire, so even as an ordinary person, Yu Fengyan would not suffer at all by sticking by her side.

Hong Lian nodded slightly. She wrapped her hand around Yu Fengyan and continued on into the snowy plains. The waves of heat from her were warm and gentle. Not only did they pose no harm to Yu Fengyan, they even made her feel like she was basking in the sun.

They flew at a low altitude across the snowy plains, making their way to the depths. As they traveled, the temperature plummeted even more.

The chilly wind there was already enough to threaten Heaven Saint Master. Unless they could control fire-attributed Saint Force, even those at the Sixth Cycle would be cut to pieces by the sharp, cold wind. The streams of coldness that flowed past from time to time could turn one of them into an ice statue in a single moment.

They flew for seven days across the icy plains and arrived at the depths. The cold air forced Jian Chen and Nubis to carefully find a solution to deal with it. A thin layer of energy coated their bodies

for protection while three-inch-long ice crystals constantly formed on the surface of Hei Yu and Rui Jin's bodies, which they would shake to pieces every once in a while. However, the crystals would form again after just a few seconds, and they would have to shake them off again. They had done this for several days already.

Yu Fengyan was coated by a layer of flames, so she was unaffected. Just the waves of heat from Hong Lian were not enough to fend off the cold streams of air in the depths.

At this moment, the icy plains suddenly began to billow, producing ghost-like wails. A large mass of hazy whiteness quickly flew toward them from right ahead.

"Be careful!" Jian Chen called out, immediately using the Illusory Flash to dodge. Nubis, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and the others did not fall behind either, avoiding the stream of white haze.

Hong Lian called out and the brightness from the flames on her exploded. The roaring flames surrounded her and Yu Fengyan with terrifying heat. The heat was enough to melt steel beams in a single moment, but it could only guard the surrounding radius of a meter from the coldness.

Hong Lian's mastery over flames had already reached a level of perfection. She could control the heat of the flames as she wished, so even when engulfed by the terrifying flames, Yu Fengyan did not feel hot at all. Instead, she found them to be extremely warm since they were unable to harm her in any way.

The stream of whiteness passed by very quickly. Jian Chen, Hei Yu, and Rui Jin all successfully avoided it, but Nubis was struck by a stream in the end.

The stream of whiteness was only a fist-sized ball of coldness, but it possessed unbelievable power. Nubis turned into an ice statue in a single moment after being struck.

Nubis began to shine with a bright, golden light. He had been

immobilized by the ice, so he was currently trying to break free with all he had.

He produced a few soft cracks in the ice. With his strength as a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King, Nubis was actually unable to break free in a short amount of time.

Jian Chen stepped over and instantly arrived before him, hurling a punch at Nubis. With a muffled sound, Jian Chen's full-powered punch failed to shatter the ice. Only a tiny crack appeared.

Jian Chen was not surprised. He had witnessed the power of the icy streams long ago. Without saying anything, he immediately hurled another punch.

Bang! The cracks expanded once again with the sound, enveloping the ice in all directions like a web.

Jian Chen punched a third time. Finally, after working from the inside and outside, Nubis broke free with a rumble.

Nubis radiated with coldness after breaking free. His face had become pale, and he could not help but shiver, "So cold. The great Nubis is going to be frozen to death!"

"Be carefully. Don't get frozen next time. The streams of coldness here are just far too terrifying. If it were any other ordinary Third Heavenly Layer Saint King, they definitely wouldn't have been able to break free without help from another person. They would have been frozen to death on the spot." Jian Chen was very stern. The arctic plains were far more terrifying than he had expected. Where they were right now could already threaten Saint Kings.

Jian Chen's group continued on. Four hours later, they had moved another thousand kilometers. They could no longer endure the coldness with their bodies alone, so all of them now possessed a layer of energy protecting them. They had become much more cautious than before, and even Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian dared not to be careless. Jian Chen had also made up his mind

about sending Yu Fengyan into the saint artifact at any moment in time.

This was because the dangers here were already enough to threaten them.

After passing over an icy mountain, all of their expressions hardened. A thousand meters in front of them, several human-shaped statue appeared.

They arrived before the ice statues. They were life-like, and they could clearly see the faces of the sculptures. Every single one of them held different poses, and they could even see a terrifying gaze in the eyes of each statue.

Other than that, every single statue radiated with a vague, chilling pressure.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, Hei Yu, and Nubis all gradually became solemn. Their faces were completely serious. With their knowledge and experience, they could obviously tell that the statues had not been created from ice but from people that had been frozen alive.

“These people were all Saint Emperors when they were alive,” Rui Jin said in a heavy voice. His expression was extremely stern. Saint Emperors were already existences that stood at the very peak of the Tian Yuan Continent. They all felt extremely astounded by the fact that such powerful people had been frozen into statues here.

“These people were even more powerful than the human Saint Emperor when they were still alive,” Hong Lian added in a heavy tone. She was obviously referring to the path lord of carnal desires by ‘human Saint Emperor.’

Jian Chen shivered inside. He had learned that the Ice Goddess Hall was very powerful long ago and was viewed as an extremely terrifying existence. But only now did he discover that the hall was

far more terrifying than he had ever thought.

“There’s more up ahead!” Nubis cried out as he pointed ahead in disbelief.

With that, everyone turned to look. Five huge magical beasts appeared ten kilometers away, also frozen into life-like sculptures of ice.

“Those are Class 9 Magical Beasts!” Hei Yu cried out. He was astounded.

Chapter 1221: Urton

They arrived in front of the frozen Class 9 Magical Beasts next. All the magical beasts were extremely large, and from afar, they seemed like tall structures. Three of them were felines, ten meters tall and fifty or sixty meters long. The fourth one was a giant, two-headed python that sat there. It was three meters thick. The fifth magical beast as an unknown mutated beast of antiquity. Its two huge wings were extended, covering a distance of several hundred meters.

The final magical beast was a hundred-meter-tall Warbeast. It carried a white bone club on its shoulder. Although it had already been frozen into a statue, its wild presence could still be clearly sensed.

Jian Chen and Nubis looked at each other as shocked filled their gazes. Seeing several frozen human Saint Emperors was already stunning enough. They had never thought that they would see another six frozen Class 9 Magical Beasts.

Class 9 Magical Beasts stood at the same level as Saint Emperors. Even in ancient times, Class 9 Magical Beasts were apex existences along with Saint Emperors when ignoring the four great champions. They were supreme.

Yet, so many human Saint Emperors and Class 9 Magical Beasts had been frozen to death on the icy plains, which really affected their thoughts.

When did Saint Emperors become so fragile where they would end up freezing to death from the cold? If this news made it to the Tian Yuan Continent, it would be explosive, able to shake up all the experts on the continent.

However, this exact scene just happened to reflect the terrifying power of the Ice Goddess Hall.

“Saint Emperors reign supreme on the continent. No matter what identity they possessed before they died, they deserve a corresponding amount of respect. I’ll take these Saint Emperors back and bury them on the Tian Yuan Continent,” Jian Chen said in sorrow. He felt sorry for the horrible fate the Saint Emperors had suffered. They were mighty Saint Emperors, yet they met their end by freezing to death in this snowy land. There were not a lot of people throughout history who had suffered such a miserable end.

Jian Chen arrived before the Saint Emperors statues. He wanted to put them in his Space Ring to take them back. Unfortunately, the icy Saint Emperors had fused with the ground, so they were stuck there.

Jian Chen pulled out his Emperor Armament without hesitation and swung it at the ground. The ice was far tougher than he had imagined. After swinging the weapon a few times with full force, he only left behind a shallow mark.

After swinging over a hundred times, the frozen Saint Emperor was finally separated from the ground. However, at that moment, a crack rang out. A chink had suddenly appeared in the ice, which expanded at an unbelievable rate. It covered the entire person in just a few seconds.

Bang! With a gentle sound, the entire statue shattered. There was no blood at all. The Saint Emperor’s flesh had already been frozen.

Jian Chen became stunned at this as he stared at the pile of ice that had once been a Saint Emperor. He could not help but sigh inside after witnessing a mighty Saint Emperor end up like this.

Jian Chen did not touch the other ice statues. He returned to where the Class 9 Magical Beast statues were. After hesitating slightly, he jumped up and swung the Emperor Armament at a feline magical beast.

After attacking several dozen times, Jian Chen finally beheaded the statue. As soon as the water tank-sized head fell to the ground,

it shattered with a bang, reduced to an icy mess.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The next moment, the cracks on the headless body quickly spread and turned it into an icy mess as well.

Jian Chen looked through the mess but he failed to find a complete Class 9 Monster Core. All he found were pieces of a frozen monster core. All of its energy had drained away, so it was useless.

Jian Chen was disappointed. He already understood that the frozen Class 9 Magical Beasts were worth nothing, and they could not be touched just like the human Saint Emperors, or they would be reduced to an icy mess. Even their Space Rings would be destroyed.

“These Saint Emperors and Class 9 Magical Beasts have died far too long ago. Their flesh has completely fused and turned into ice,” Rui Jin sighed. He felt rather heavy-hearted.

“They’ve been dead for at least several hundreds of thousands of years,” said Nubis.

“Let’s continue,” Jian Chen signaled everyone. They no longer paid attention to the ice statues and continued on.

As they rapidly traveled deeper into the icy plains, they came across quite a few ice statues. There were both humans and magical beasts, but they were all at the level of Saint Emperor. None of them were weaker than Saint Emperor.

“This place is just too terrifying. We’ve found over thirty Saint Emperors and Class 9 Magical Beasts that have been frozen into statues,” Nubis said with a slight tremble to his voice. He had already begun to feel some dread for this place. This was basically a graveyard for Saint Emperors.

An hour later, they traveled another five hundred kilometers. The temperature there had dropped even lower. Jian Chen and

Nubis were already using everything they had to stay warm while Yu Fengyan had been sent into the artifact space by Jian Chen. Even Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu had donned their origin armor.

“There’s another fallen expert here,” Nubis said as he pointed ahead.

An extremely burly man sat on the ground. His eyes were tightly closed, having died long ago.

“There’s words!” Jian Chen said with a hoarse voice. A line of words had been carved into the ice right in front of the man.

“I am Urton. I was invincible. After several hundred years of secluded cultivation, I failed to break through to the Origin realm. I learned of the mysterious Ice Goddess Hall from ancient records and came to find them, but who would have thought that I would freeze to death before I could even catch a glimpse of them. I am unwilling. I am filled with unwillingness for falling here...”

“Urton, it’s actually Urton. He’s the ruler of the Beast God Continent five hundred thousand years ago. It’s said that he was the strongest magical beast, having reached the peak of Class 9. No one was his opponent among the humans and the magical beasts. I never thought he ended up dying here,” Nubis cried out.

Chapter 1222: Changyang Mingyue

Jian Chen trembled inside when he heard that. After examining the frozen middle-aged man again, he felt exceptionally shocked inside. Even the ruler of the Beast God Continent, having reached the apex of Saint Emperor and only a single step away from the supreme Origin realm, had frozen to death here as well. The shock that it brought Jian Chen was far greater than seeing the thirty-odd Saint Emperors and Class 9 Magical Beasts earlier.

The power of peak Saint Emperors was incomparable to regular Saint Emperors. The difference was akin to the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler and the First Heavenly Layer of Saint King or Saint Kings at Great Perfection and those who had only recently became Saint Kings. Although they belonged to the same level of cultivation, the disparity was enormous.

Not only was Urton a peak Saint Emperor, he was a beast of antiquity as well. He was even more powerful than human peak Saint Emperors, and it would be true to call him the strongest beneath the Origin realm. Yet, even someone like Urton could not avoid being frozen into a statue. Not only this make Jian Chen and Nubis shiver inside, even Rui Jin, Hei Yu and Hong Lian felt the same.

“Five hundred thousand years ago, Urton was invincible. There was no one who could defeat him, but he actually met his end on these icy plains and did not fall in battle. This place is just too terrifying,” Nubis said in shock. He was shivering inside. His fear for this place had become much heavier after seeing Urton’s frozen corpse.

It was not just Nubis. Even Jian Chen felt a sliver of dread. The icy plains were far too terrifying; just the icy climate was enough to freeze Saint Emperors to death. No wonder the Saint Emperor ancestors of the protector clans were so fearful of the Ice Goddess Hall.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu looked at each other and became extremely solemn. Even before Saint Emperors, they had never shown such a serious expression before.

Nubis bowed deeply to Urton before continuing on with Jian Chen and the others. They did not touch Urton's corpse, not even the Space Ring on his finger. With what they had experienced earlier, they all knew that both Urton and his Space Ring had been reduced to ice after so many years. His entire body would turn into an icy mess after the layer of ice on the surface was destroyed.

Everyone felt very heavy inside after witnessing what had happened to Urton. They did not say anything and continued on in a straight path.

After traveling for another hundred kilometers, Nubis could no longer endure it any longer as the weakest. He was sucked into the artifact space by Jian Chen. If it were not for Jian Chen's Chaotic Body and the Chaotic Force, he probably would not have been able to last until now either. The coldness had reached an extremely terrifying level where even the Saint Force of Saint Kings could be frozen. The only reason why Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu could continue on was because they used their own great powers along with the origin energy armor.

However, they knew very well that the coldness was far weaker than several hundreds of thousand years ago. Otherwise, they would not have been able to make it further than Urton with their strength as Saint Kings. They might have already been frozen into life-like statues before they had even seen the Saint Emperor statues.

They traveled another half a day, but they only traveled five hundred kilometers during that time. They were obstructed by a layer of boundless cold mist. The mist seemed to form a natural barrier, stopping them in their path.

"This mist is something else," Hong Lian said heavily as she

stared at the mist after they all had stopped. It was illogical for mist to exist at such a terrifyingly cold temperature.

Mist was fine droplets of water, yet it was impossible for water to exist in this wasteland because all of it should have frozen into ice that was tougher than steel.

“You guys stay here first. I’ll go in and have a look,” said Hong Lian. The flames on her glowed much brighter and the Scorching Godfire Hairpin appeared in her hands. She carefully made her way into the region of mist.

As soon as she stepped into the mist, a hissing sound was immediately produced from the contact of mist and flames. However, the mist was far more terrifying than anyone had imagined. Hong Lian only lasted a few seconds before her roaring flames were suppressed by the mist. Within the next few seconds, the flames had been forced back into her body. The coldness rapidly drew closer to Hong Lian, where even her fire-red feathermail became coated by a thin layer of white frost.

Hong Lian paled in fright. She had realized long ago that the mist was nowhere near as simple as it seemed, but in no way did she ever expect it to be so terrifying. Without holding back, white flames surged from her hairpin, engulfing her in a single moment.

The power of the white flames was incomparable to the power of the red flames. As soon as they appeared, the ice crystals on her melted and even the mist around her was forced back by three inches.

Hong Lian was relieved. She continued on as she protected herself with her hairpin. However, the coldness in the mist increases as she went deeper inside. Taking just the first step, the mist grew half an inch closer to her, now two and a half inches away.

When she took a second step, the mist grew another half an inch closer, now two inches away. With the third step, it was one and a

half inches away, and with the fourth, it was only an inch away from her.

Hong Lian gently sighed as she looked at the white haziness that showed no signs of ending. She carefully backed off. She knew if she took a fifth step, the coldness would end up pressing against her skin and she would be frozen into a statue. Even with her origin energy weapon, it might not be enough to keep her safe.

“You should all see as well. The mist is far more terrifying than we imagined. Even I can only take a few steps. You can’t make it through it,” Hong Lian said with some dejection. She reigned supreme with fire and could conquer the cold. However, even the mist did not open a path for her even after she had brandished her origin energy weapon. She was unable to lighten up no matter what over this.

Jian Chen frowned as well. He could obviously see just how terrifying the mist was, but it seemed to form a barrier stopping them. It was boundless, so if they could not pass through it, they could only end their journey there, let alone find the Ice Goddess Hall.

At the same time, in a room completely constructed from ice, a lady, who seemed to be around twenty years of age, sat on a white piece of ice as she cultivated.

The lady was extremely pretty, such that her beauty could outshine the moon. She was completely snow-white; not only her hair, but her eyebrows and eyelashes as well.

The lady was Changyang Mingyue who had left the clan many years ago.

Suddenly, Changyang Mingyue opened her eyes. Her face lit up in surprise, and she excitedly said, “Brother, it’s my brother. I can see my brother...” With that, she leaped off the ice and ran out of the room as a white blur.

There was a room completely constructed from snow and ice, and all the decor in there was created from ice crystals. They shone brightly and were extremely pretty. Although the room was wonderfully decorated, it was all snow-white. There was only white, and the temperature there had also reached an unbelievably low level.

Compared to the temperature in the room, an eternal cavern of ice was like a scorching volcano.

A person clad in white armor sat on a bed of ice in the room. Her eyes were closed and the armor completely covered her, only revealing her eyes. Even her face was concealed.

At this moment, the door to the room forcefully swung open. Changyang Mingyue ran in with bare feet in joy as she urgently said, "Protector Shui, I can see my brother. I can see my brother. My brother's come, and he's been obstructed by the profound ice Qi outside. Let him in quick." Her voice was filled with excitement. Perhaps due to being overjoyed, a faint red flush had appeared on her pale-white face.

Protector Shui slowly opened her eyes. She could not help but gently sigh when she saw how excited Changyang Mingyue was. She said, "Your majesty, can't you just forget about them?" The 'them' she had mentioned was not just Jian Chen, it included all the people in the Changyang clan and all the people Changyang Mingyue once knew.

Changyang Mingyue became angered, "Protector Shui, I can never forget my brother. He will always be my brother, so hurry up and let him in."

"Sigh," protector Shui exhaled. Helplessness filled her eyes.

Chapter 1223: Reuniting Mother and Daughter (One)

Jian Chen, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu camped for quite some time outside the hazy mist. All of them frowned, but none of them could do anything to the terrifying mist, including Rui Jin.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian used countless secret techniques of their clans during that time, but they were all useless. Even Jian Chen's presence was unable to penetrate through the mist. As soon as his presence entered it, the chilling coldness would attack his mind by following his presence, stunning him to the point where he no longer dared to make any future attempts.

"Looks like this is as far as we can go," Jian Chen said in a heavy voice. He was extremely disappointed. He had never thought that they would fail to even catch a single glimpse of the Ice Goddess Hall despite bringing such a powerful party.

At this moment, the mist ahead began to churn violently, slowly parting open. Very soon, a three-meter-wide path formed in front of the four of them, and at the end of the path was a snow-white and bright glacial world, not a hazy mist.

They all looked at each other after the passageway suddenly appeared. They had never thought that the mist that had stopped them from traveling further would create a path. They were in disbelief.

Suddenly, Jian Chen seemed to think of something. His eyes immediately lit up and he said, "I understand. This layer of mist must be controlled by someone, and the controller probably knows of our arrival, which is why they've formed a tunnel for us to get through." However, Jian Chen could not help but think about how his sister had become the holy maiden of the Ice Goddess Hall. He guessed that Changyang Mingyue possessed quite the status within the Ice Goddess Hall, but he was uncertain if the formation of the

tunnel had anything to do with her.

With the tunnel, the four of them gave up on the thought of returning. They then carefully passed through it.

The tunnel in the mist was a thousand meters long. The four of them passed through it very soon and arrived in a region beyond the mist. The environment past the mist was like heaven compared to the climate outside. Although it was still a world of ice and snow, the landscape was pretty, picturesque like a lovely drawing. The surrounding glaciers were crystal-clear, like huge mountains of crystal.

If the region outside the mist was like the churning sea, this would be a flat and peaceful part of the ocean. There was no terrifying wind or any icy temperatures that could freeze Saint Kings to death. Outside, even regular Saint Kings would struggle to survive, yet even people as weak as Earth Saint Masters could move around freely here.

Although the two places were only separated by a thousand meters of mist, they felt like they were two completely different worlds.

“Is this the Ice Goddess Hall?” Suddenly, Hei Yu pointed ahead and asked.

They looked to where he was pointing, and twenty kilometers away, a crystal palace that seemed to have been carved from ice stood quietly on the icy plains. It gave off a respectful presence, as if it had stood through many years of wind and rain. Although it was grand and beautiful, the four of them could clearly feel that it was filled with the ancient presence of time.

The crystal palace seemed to have stood all by itself for countless years, while the ancient presence was far heavier than any item they had ever seen that had managed to survive through the ages.

“This must be the Ice Goddess Hall. We’ve finally arrived,” Jian

Chen mumbled as he stared at the divine hall up ahead. His voice was filled with some excitement, and he instinctively began to walk over in a hurry.

The four of them stopped in front of the Ice Goddess Hall very soon. Only by standing in front of the structure could they feel its grandeur. They felt like ants standing before an elephant.

The feeling did not seem to linger around the building, but from the vast presence of the structure.

Dazed, they suddenly felt a different impression, as if they were not facing against the pretty Ice Goddess Hall, but the infinite cosmos.

A person in silver-white armor stood silently at the top of the structure. Her armor covered every part of her, including her face. Only two icy-cold eyes were revealed, but it was still possible to tell that she was female from the shape of her body.

She stood there unmoving like an ice statue, nor did she give off any presence. She seemed to have completely fused with the surroundings, becoming a part of the world.

Protector Shui glanced over the four of them with her emotionless eyes, but to them, she seemed to be transparent. None of them discovered her existence.

Chapter 1224: Reuniting Mother and Daughter (Two)

Jian Chen, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu all observed the huge divine hall in front of them unblinkingly. The ancient, vast presence struck their souls in waves, filling them with deep shock.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian were the first ones to calm down. They stared sternly at the divine hall and a similar thought crossed both their minds. The divine hall did not belong to this world at all.

With a rumble, the crystal door slowly opened. A completely snow-white beauty silently stood there with bare feet as a certain coldness immediately surged out.

“Brother!” The lady focused all her attention on Jian Chen, as if Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu were all transparent. Her face was filled with great joy and excitement while her voice slightly trembled.

Jian Chen’s gaze also landed on her. Although they had not seen each other for over a decade, he was still able to recognize her at first glance. She was the person he was searching for, his sister Changyang Mingyue.

“Sister!” Jian Chen cried out as his heart began to churn as well. Other than Bi Yuntian, his sister had cared for him the most when he was young. At that time, his brother Changyang Ke bullied him several times, and every time Changyang Mingyue saw him, she would stand on his side without any hesitation. As a result, Jian Chen viewed his sibling kinship with her in an extremely important light, even surpassing his brotherhood with Changyang Hu.

It was just a pity after the matters that had occurred with the Huayun sect back then, Jian Chen was forced to leave Lore City. He never saw his sister again and did not even hear any news

involving her. Both he and Yu Fengyan ended up believing many times that Changyang Mingyue had suffered an accident, filling them both with sorrow.

Changyang Mingyue stepped over the great door sill and ran toward Jian Chen. Jian Chen also emotionally ran to her. As they grew closer and closer, Jian Chen could feel the temperature around him rapidly plummet. When they were only ten meters away, Jian Chen had become covered in a white layer of frost.

Jian Chen quickly calmed down. He could feel the sudden drop in temperature in his surroundings and could not help but feel secretly shocked. However, what surprised him even more was that all the coldness actually came from Changyang Mingyue.

Changyang Mingyue's face immediately changed when she saw the layer of frost on Jian Chen. She immediately halted and rapidly backed off, drawing far away from Jian Chen. At the same time, she urgently cried out, "Don't come over!"

Jian Chen stopped and looked at her from thirty meters away. He asked, "Sister, just what is happening? Why are you radiating such coldness?"

Changyang Mingyue radiated with an extremely cold presence. If it were not for the fact that they were in a world of ice and snow, probably a thick layer of ice would have formed in the radius of several thousand meters. Even bodies of water would end up freezing.

Changyang Mingyue was pained, "Brother, it's my Profound Ice Body. My Profound Ice Body has not fully matured yet, so I can't control the profound ice Qi that I radiate."

"How have you become like this, sister? What is all this about?" Jian Chen asked rather urgently. In his memory, his sister had never been like this before.

"It's a long story. I'll tell you about it in detail later, but I heard

from protector Shui that you came across a few problems a few years ago. Are some large clans or sects bullying you? Don't worry. Once my Profound Ice Body fully matures, I'll go to the Tian Yuan Continent and teach all those people a lesson," Changyang Mingyue firmly promised. She cared for Jian Chen very much, as if he was an eternal child in her eyes.

Jian Chen suddenly felt extremely warm inside. Thinking back to his youth, wasn't this exactly how his sister watched over him? She did not want him to be bullied at all, and his brother Changyang Ke had been secretly punished by her several times.

What she did not know was whenever Changyang Ke tried to bully him, he would not only fail, but end up getting the short end of the stick himself. He had never succeeded in benefiting at Jian Chen's expense.

"Has mother been well? And how have father, first aunt, third aunt, and fourth aunt been? What about big brother and uncle Chang? I actually really want to go home. I miss mother so much, but I can't right now. Protected Shui won't let me," Changyang Mingyue said in a rather depressed manner. Her joy from seeing Jian Chen just now gradually faded away as worry filled her face. She wanted to go home far too much.

Jian Chen suddenly snapped back to his sense as soon as he heard about Yu Fengyan. He immediately retreated to Hong Lian's side and released Yu Fengyan from the Saint artifact. Originally, Jian Chen only planned on letting her out, but Nubis ended up coming out as well when he heard that they had arrived at the Ice Goddess Hall.

Although the coldness was much less than outside, it was still not something that Yu Fengyan could endure as a Great Saint Master. Fortunately Hong Lian's was there to help out, keeping the low temperature at bay with her flames.

"Mother!" Changyang Mingyue became so excited to the point

that she could not express her emotions properly when she saw Yu Fengyan. She charged up without thinking, but she stopped after just two steps. Tears rolled down her face as she slowly backed off in pain. She knew just how powerful the profound ice Qi she radiated with was. It was not something Yu Fengyan could endure.

Yu Fengyan became stunned the moment she saw Changyang Mingyue. Tears poured uncontrollably from her eyes while an endless number of thoughts bounced around. She bit her lip tightly as she stared at Changyang Mingyue and could not help but tremble violently.

“Mingyue!” Yu Fengyan called out the next moment and quickly ran toward Changyang Mingyue. There was only one thing she wanted to do right now, and that was to tightly embrace her daughter who she had thought of daily.

How could Jian Chen let Yu Fengyan run over? As soon as she began to move she was blocked by Jian Chen

“Xiangtian, let me through. Don't block me. Xiangtian, I'm begging you. Let me through...” Yu Fengyan struggled in the space frozen by Jian Chen as she pleaded through her sobs.

Jian Chen's heart ached inside. If he didn't need to, he really would not have stopped Yu Fengyan, but he was considering her safety right now. No matter how reluctant he was, he needed to stop her.

“Aunt, sister's Profound Ice Body radiates a terrifying coldness. You can't go over, or you'll be frozen into an ice statue,” Jian Chen bitterly explained.

“I don't care. Even if I freeze to death, I don't care. Xiangtian, I'm begging you, don't stop me. Just let me through. I just want to get a good look at Mingyue,” Yu Fengyan sobbed.

Chapter 1225: Protector Shui Moves

Jian Chen shook his head with a bitter face. He could not let anything happen to his second aunt. Even if she ended up nursing grievances against him, he would not let her through. With his current strength, he could only manage to get ten meters away from Changyang Mingyue. If it were Yu Fengyan, she probably would have been reduced to a frozen sculpture before she even reached twenty meters away.

“Mother, don’t come over. You can’t come over!” Changyang Mingyue loudly sobbed as tears ran down her face. She was extremely sorrowful as she backed off step by step, moving further and further away from Yu Fengyan.

After parting for almost ten years, the two of them had finally met again in this land of ice and snow, but they could only look at each other from a hundred meters away. This was extremely painful to both of them.

In the end, the two of them began asking about each other from a hundred meters away. All their thoughts throughout the years poured out like a flood.

Unknowingly, the two of them had already talked for most of the day, but the sky did not show any changes at all, as if night did not exist in this land.

“Your majesty, you should return now. Your Profound Ice Body has yet to fully mature, so you can’t leave the divine hall for too long.” At this moment, an emotionless voice suddenly rang out. Protector Shui finally spoke while she stood on the divine hall.

Jian Chen, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu were all startled inside by the voice. They looked to the place where the voice originated from. Only at that moment did they realize that there was another person standing high up, fully clad in armor.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu narrowed their eyes the moment they saw her while their hearts wildly churned inside. This was because all three of them felt tricked at the same time. The protector had definitely been there before they had even arrived. She did not conceal herself and had instead casually stood there, yet they had failed to notice her.

The three of them also understood that if she did not speak, they would never have discovered her existence.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu looked at each other as their complexions became horrible. Not only were they unable to see through her strength, they could not even sense her presence, as if she was just thin air. They could only see her with their eyes.

“Surpassed Saint Emperor!” At this moment, the same thought appeared in all their heads. They had fought against Saint Emperors more than once, so they obviously had an extremely good understanding of experts at that level, yet protector Shui’s existence was completely different. They had never witnessed her fight, nor did they know her strength, but they were extremely certain that she was definitely a supreme existence that had surpassed Saint Emperor.

The three of them were utterly astounded by the fact that there were still existences that had surpassed Saint Emperor in this age that lacked Saint Emperors.

Changyang Mingyue looked at Jian Chen and Yu Fengyan, reluctant to leave. She said, “Mother, brother, I will return. Don’t worry mother, once my Profound Ice Body matures, I’ll definitely visit home.”

Yu Fengyan felt a stabbing pain inside now that she was about to part with her beloved daughter. She looked at Changyang Mingyue’s face in reluctance as tears rolled down her face.

“Brother, if you ever come across anything you can’t deal with in the future, come look for me. No matter what it is, I can solve it for

you. I heard from protector Shui that you've already become very powerful and are now a Saint King, but don't look down on me. I'm also a Saint King and at the Ninth Heavenly Layer. You're not my opponent right now." Changyang Mingyue faintly smiled with that. It seemed a little like she was boasting.

"What! You're a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King now?" Jian Chen was shocked and disbelief was plastered across his face.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu became astounded as well.

"Remember to come visit me in a year's time. I have a gift for you. Also, these icy plains are the territory of protector Shui. She'll know every single thing that happens here. I've ordered her to bring you over as long as you are standing on the icy plains." With that, Changyang Mingyue disappeared inside the divine hall.

"Mingyue, I'll be waiting for you to return home. Cultivate well," Yu Fengyan called out when the door had closed.

"Aunt, sister is very well here. She'll return without much longer. Don't be so sorrowful," Jian Chen comforted.

Yu Fengyan clearly understood that it was a great fortune for Changyang Mingyue to stay in this icy land, so she calmed down very quickly. All the worry and anxiety in her heart was rapidly vanishing without her knowing after personally seeing that Changyang Mingyue was well. Some light returned to her eyes and her mood took a drastic turn for the better.

Jian Chen looked toward protector Shui and clasped his hands, "Senior, there is still one matter that confuses me. May I ask why my sister has become the holy maiden? Please enlighten me." Jian Chen was extremely curious as to why Changyang Mingyue had become the holy maiden of the Ice Goddess Hall. However, he also knew that probably even Changyang Mingyue had no idea how to answer the question, which was why he asked protector Shui.

He had already learned from Changyang Mingyue that she was

the most powerful person in the Ice Goddess Hall. Her strength was unfathomable. She stood supreme in the organization with everyone else working beneath her.

“You have no right to know about matters concerning her majesty. If it weren’t for the fact that you were siblings with her majesty, you lot would have frozen to death on the icy plains long ago. How would you still have been able to make it here?” Protector Shui’s voice was extremely cold, as if she was completely emotionless. Shortly afterward, she turned to Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu, She looked at them like ants and said, “Tell me, where did you obtain the saint artifacts that contain a sliver of origin energy?”

The three of them looked at each other and they felt an ill omen. They hesitated slightly but still ended up responding, “They were given to us by the ancient Winged Tiger God.”

“The Winged Tiger God,” mumbled protector Shui. She said, “So it really was that beast. I never thought he’d be far more complicated than I had imagined, actually able to deliver saint artifacts here without me noticing.”

Protector Shui fell silent for some time. She pondered for a while before continuing, “The saint artifacts on the three of you shouldn’t have appeared in this world. Seeing how you’re related to her majesty, I won’t make things difficult for you. Hand over the saint artifacts, and I’ll destroy them.”

The three of them changed in expression with that. The Sacred Dragon’s Armor and the Sacred Dragon’s Sword were clan treasures of the Dragon clan while the Ninerefined Godfire Feathermail and Scorching Godfire Hairpin were clan treasures of the Scorching Divine Phoenix clan. These items held significant value to them, so how could they just hand them over?

“Senior, you say you want to destroy the clan treasures of the Dragon clan and Phoenix clan as soon as you start talking. Aren’t

you going overboard?” Jian Chen was furious as well. He spoke with a dark expression.

“Correct. The treasures are even more important than our lives. It’s impossible if you want us to hand them over so you can destroy them,” Rui Jin angrily replied. Even though he knew that protector Shui was someone who had surpassed Saint Emperor, he still showed now fear.

“The only way for you to destroy the clan treasures of the Phoenix clan is by stepping over my dead body,” Hong Lian spoke firmly as well. Her eyes burned with red light since she was furious as well.

“I would obviously do nothing if your clan treasures were still how they were originally, but now, they’ve stopped being the same. They’re saint artifacts that don’t belong to this world, so I will obviously destroy them. I’ll let the three of you choose. Hand them over to me and I’ll let you leave without a single scratch, or stay here with the saint artifacts,” said protector Shui slowly.

“Hmph, you’ve said in such a firm manner that senior Rui Jin and Hong Lian’s clan treasures were no longer the same as before. Have you personally seen the treasures before?” Jian Chen coldly said asked, but he was extremely nervous inside.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian became extremely ugly. They both had inherited memories, so they obviously understood the treasures very well. They understood that they were indeed very indifferent from how they were before. They had already discovered this the moment they had obtained them.

Hei Yu could not help but draw his origin energy machete and a layer of armor appeared on his at the same time. He furiously said, “I don’t care who you are, but it’s impossible if you want to destroy our origin energy treasures. So what if you’ve surpassed Saint Emperor? I’d like to see just how powerful these sovereign-like existences are.” A vast presence erupted from Hei Yu as he poured

surging energy into his machete, allowing it to glow bright. Powerful blade Qi filled the surroundings.

Hei Yu knew that protector Shui was extremely powerful, having surpassed Saint Emperor, so he used all his strength.

Protector Shui looked at Hei Yu coldly and in disdain. She did nothing, but the next moment, a layer of clear ice crystals quickly spread up from his feet. The crystals of ice moved extremely quickly, coating his entire body in the blink of an eye.

Equipped with both the origin energy armor and weapon, Hei Yu had been frozen into a statue of ice before he could even deal a single attack.

Chapter 1226: Trapped at the Ice Goddess Hall

Rui Jin and Hong Lian were immediately shocked when they saw Hei Yu freeze into a statue in the blink of an eye. Hei Yu was protected by the origin energy armor and possessed an origin energy weapon for offense. He could even stand against Saint Emperors without suffered defeat, yet he was so fragile before protector Shui, having frozen without being able to resist at all. They had finally witnessed the terror of someone who had surpassed Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen and Nubis stared at the frozen Hei Yu in shock as well while their hearts churned inside.

Yu Fengyan could also tell that the three of them had fallen out with protector Shui. She immediately became nervous. She knew that they had helped her quite a lot for her to stand here today, so she was obviously extremely unwilling for anything to happen to them. In her opinion, the reason why the three of them had traveled so far to come to the Ice Goddess Hall was related to her. If the three of them were in trouble because of her, she would be filled with remorse.

“Senior, is it possible to let senior Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu go on Mingyue’s behalf?” Yu Fengyan called out. She really did not wish to see the three of them remain trapped here because of her.

Protector Shui’s eyes were cold and completely emotionless, like ice that would never melt. Although she had heard Yu Fengyan’s request, she did not nothing. She did not even glance at her, completely ignoring her.

In reality, Yu Fengyan definitely would not have been able to stand there unharmed if it were not for the fact that she was the mother of the holy maiden.

“Are you going to have your saint artifacts destroyed, or will you be staying here forever?” Protector Shui coldly asked Rui Jin and Hong Lian.

“Hmph, even if I know we’re not your opponent, we’ll never hand over the clan treasures. The only way for you to destroy them is by doing it over my dead body,” Rui Jin coldly replied before beginning to glow all over with golden light. The dazzling light of the Sacred Dragon’s Armor and Sword covered his body as terrifying ripples of energy pulsed around him. A packed layer of golden dragon scales quickly appeared as well, enveloping his entire body. Even his hands turned into huge dragon claws.

At the same time, fire surged into the sky beside him. With a clear phoenix’s cry, Hong Lian turned into a giant phoenix that was several dozen meters long and surrounded by roaring flames. The Ninerefined Godfire Feathermail covered her body as the Scorching Godfire Hairpin hovered above her head. The flames around her rapidly turned to a pure-white, radiating with terrifying heat.

“Nubis, aunt, you two enter the artifact space first.” When Rui Jin and Hong Lian transformed, Jian Chen did not stand around either. He sent the two of them into the artifact space as soon as he could.

A deafening roar and a clear cry rang out at the same time. Rui Jin and Hong Lian moved at the same time, dealing a full-powered attack together. The Sacred Dragon’s Sword glowed with dazzling light as it was swung toward protector Shui with a shocking might.

The Scorching Godfire Hairpin was surrounded by scorching white flames. It radiated with heat that was even more terrifying than the sun while it shot at protector Shui with unbelievable speed as a white streak of light. Wherever it passed, the air became filled with a burnt smell. It seemed to be incinerating air.

“Looks like you’ve already made your choices. Very well!”

Protector Shui coldly said. A gleam of light flashed through her eyes and the sword and hairpin came to a halt. An invisible barrier seemed to have stopped them in their paths. They could not travel any further no matter how terrifying they were.

The next moment, a layer of ice crystals appeared on the two weapons. The sharp presence of the sword and the terrifying white flames of the hairpin were unable to stop the rapid expansion of the ice. Wherever the crystals formed, froze the sword Qi in place and the instantly extinguished the white flames. In the blink of an eye, the invincible weapons were frozen in the air by a thin layer of frost.

Shock was spelled across Rui Jin and Hong Lian's faces. The next moment, their faces suddenly hardened. The moment had become eternal as a thin layer of frost silently appeared on them as well. The ice crystals engulfed them before they could even react, turning them into ice statues.

Although the layer of ice was thin, it possessed unbelievable might. Not only did it freeze them, an extremely cold stream invaded their bodies as well, freezing their energy and their souls.

At that moment, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu had all fallen unconscious. To them, time seemed to have stopped.

"Senior!" Jian Chen furiously shouted. He arrived beside Rui Jin and constantly threw punches at the ice. Each fist possessed all his strength as he attempted to free Rui Jin by smashing the frost.

However, the crystals were extraordinarily tough despite how thin they were. Jian Chen's fists, which could easily destroy entire mountains, only produced faint thuds as they struck the ice. He could not even leave a mark on the ice, let alone smash through it.

Jian Chen drew his Emperor Armament after seeing how his punches were useless. He stabbed out with everything he had.

Ding! As the sharp sword tip struck the ice crystals, the sword

resonated at a clear frequency. His attack had basically reached the level of peak Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, yet they were still unable to leave a single mark on the ice.

Jian Chen did not give up. He roared at the sky as his hair and clothes fluttered from his aura. He swung the Emperor Armament at the ice that trapped Rui Jin, which rang out every single time he struck it. All his attacks contained everything he had, but the layer of frost remained unscathed despite wildly swinging the sword several hundred times. He still failed to leave behind a mark.

Protector Shui stood unmoving on top of the divine hall like an ice sculpture. She coldly stared at Jian Chen and said, “Go. You can’t break through my Extreme Icelock. You can’t even if you’re a Saint Emperor.”

Jian Chen knew that he could not break through the thin layer of frost, so he stopped his pointless actions. He turned toward protector Shui and said, “Senior, you’ve already frozen up the clan treasures. Can’t you let the three seniors go?”

“I am already acting on behalf of the holy maiden for letting you leave unharmed, yet you want to bicker with me?” Her eyes became much sharper now as heavy killing intent lingered with her words. With a wave of her hand, Jian Chen suddenly disappeared from the icy plains.

Jian Chen only felt like he had been trapped by an invisible force. The force was extremely great, so great that he actually felt like he was facing something as vast as the universe. He felt as weak as an ant before the force, lacking any power to resist at all. The thought of resisting had not even crossed his mind.

“Oh no. Is the protector going to do something to me?” Jian Chen’s heart sank. However, as soon as he thought that, he felt his body lighten. The invisible force had suddenly disappeared, which was then followed by a wave of heat sweeping over him. The world of ice had vanished. He now stood in a desolate region of land.

Jian Chen knew that he had returned to the Tian Yuan Continent, but he could not brighten up no matter what, because Rui Jin, Hong Lian and Hei Yu remained trapped on the icy plains of the north. They had not returned with him.

Suddenly, Jian Chen shot into the sky toward the clouds. He hovered in the air as he pulled out a map, quickly finding his bearings. He discovered that he was not very far away from the sea that separated the arctic from the continent.

With a thought, a golden streak of light immediately flew out of area between his eyebrows. It turned into a fist-sized golden tower that hovered in the air.

“Artifact spirit, find a place to hide with my aunt and Nubis. I’ll be going to the Ice Goddess Hall again. If I don’t return in seven days, get Nubis to take you to the Changyang clan in Lore City,” Jian Chen said to the golden tower.

Receiving an order, the golden tower immediately transformed into a golden streak of light and disappeared into the ground. Jian Chen traveled toward the arctic once more all by himself.

A day later, Jian Chen crossed the vast seas and landed on the icy plains again. He used the Illusory Flash as he hurried to the depths of the icy plains as a blur.

When Jian Chen had traveled less than ten kilometers, a terrifying stream of coldness seemed to have descended on him. The temperature there seemed to have plummeted suddenly and a layer of frost quickly formed on Jian Chen.

Jian Chen knew that it might have been a warning from protector Shui, but he was not afraid at all. He continued on at the same speed, circulating his Chaotic Force as fast as he could to resist the terrifying temperature.

Jian Chen could not allow Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu to remain trapped on the icy plains because of him. He knew his only

chance at saving them was through his sister, so his intentions were very simple. He wanted to approach the Ice Goddess Hall to alert his sister.

More and more crystals formed on Jian Chen as his movements slowed down as well. The bone-chilling coldness constantly attempted to invade his body and freeze all signs of life within him, but it was obstructed by the tenacious Chaotic Force.

“If you don’t back out of the plains right now, you’ll end up the same as the three of them,” an icy-cold and hazy voice rang through Jian Chen’s head.

“Senior, please let them go, or I will never stop!” Jian Chen replied. However, right when he said that, an extremely terrifying coldness engulfed him. Even his Chaotic Body was unable to stop it for a moment. He was instantly frozen into a life-like sculpture and was completely immobilized.

Jian Chen lost control over his body even as he devoted all his efforts to controlling the Chaotic Force to ward off the invading coldness, but the Chaotic Force was frozen as soon as it came in contact with the presence. He lost control over it.

Jian Chen was astounded, but he was unable to stop the advance of the coldness no matter how hard he tried. It quickly spread through his body, freezing up his blood, his flesh, and all signs of life within him. Even his chaotic neidan in his dantian was frozen.

At the same time, the coldness quickly spread toward his head in attempt to freeze his soul.

However, Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness suddenly began to glow with an azure and violet light. It glowed with a brightness that was comparable to the morning sun as soon as the coldness neared his head. The dazzling light illuminated his entire sea of consciousness.

Chapter 1227: The Sea Goddess' News

The azure and violet light engulfed Jian Chen's sea of consciousness, protecting it at the same time. As soon as the terrifying coldness came in contact with the lights, it came to a halt, no longer able to advance any further.

"What coldness. Master, where have you come? Why is there such great coldness where even your chaotic neidan has been frozen?" Zi Ying's voice rang out in Jian Chen's head in shock.

Not only did Jian Chen lose control over his body, he had also lost all of his senses. The moment the sword spirits began protecting his soul, his consciousness had entered his sea of consciousness without choice.

A five-colored crystal hovered within the sea of consciousness. It was the Multicolored Stone Jian Chen had come across by accident and purchased in Walaurent City back then. During these past years, the sword spirits had been absorbing the pure energy within it, and thus, the stone was smaller than before.

An azure and violet light rotated around the stone. The two lights seemed to be connected with one another but not, at the same time. It seemed as if a certain distance was always maintained.

They were the original forms of the sword spirits, but they were deeper in color than before. Jian Chen knew that they had become much more powerful after absorbing the stone and recovering.

Although the sword spirits were recovering in Jian Chen's sea of consciousness, they clearly did not pay attention to everything, so they didn't know that Jian Chen had come across the Ice Goddess Hall.

Jian Chen explained everything he had gone through at the Ice Goddess Hall in full detail, immediately causing the sword spirits to fall into a temporary silence. Only a while later did Zi Ying

sternly say, “Qing Suo and I once felt someone secretly observing us through their presence, but we were far too weak back then so we could not find where that person was hiding. But now, it looks like that person is protector Shui. Master, this protector Shui is extremely powerful. She shouldn’t be a person of this world, and you’re completely helpless against her with your current strength. You mustn’t go out of your way to provoke her.”

“Are you saying that she’s the same as me, from another world?” Jian Chen questioned in surprise.

“Correct, that’s indeed the case. However, the only difference is that master came from the bottom while she came from the top. She’s extremely powerful, but her strength suffers the restrictions of the world, so she can’t act freely, much less break the balance here, or she’ll be punished by the world. As long as you don’t provoke her, you should be fine,” said Zi Ying.

Jian Chen’s heart sank. He had never thought that protector Shui would possess such great origins where she was an expert from a higher world. In other words, he was unable to save Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu any time soon. It would even be impossible for him to see his sister if the protector obstructed them intentionally.

Although the sword spirits had said that the protector could not act freely, it meant that she could not do things without reason. Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu’s origin energy treasures had been described by her as saint artifacts that should not have appeared in this world. This was more than enough of a reason for her to act against the three of them.

“Master, Zi Ying and I have not fully recovered yet, so we’re not protector Shui’s opponent at the moment. However, we can nullify the coldness in your body. You can break free in a while as long as you cooperate, and you must immediately leave the icy plains as quickly as possible. Otherwise, the coldness will be increased by several levels the next time protector Shui moves, and we’ll be

helpless against it at that time,” Zi Ying sternly explained.

“I understand. Zi Ying, Qing Suo, let’s start,” said Jian Chen.

The two balls of light in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness began to glow brighter and brighter. They shot out from his sea of consciousness like swords while the two balls of light revolved around each other. However, they avoided contact as they shot toward Jian Chen’s dantian with lightning-like speed.

The two balls of light were like a miniature sun. All of the coldness that they came in contact with along the way melted away.

The lights arrived at Jian Chen’s dantian and the frost around his chaotic neidan rapidly dispersed, allowing Jian Chen to regain control over his chaotic neidan.

Jian Chen immediately made his chaotic neidan to spit out strands of Chaotic Force without requiring a warning from the sword spirits. The Chaotic Force then worked with the power of the sword spirits as it swam through his body, rapidly cleansing the coldness.

A few seconds later, a great bang suddenly rang through the icy plains. Jian Chen broke free from the thin layer of frost on him, and without any hesitation, he immediately shot into the sky, flying away as a blur. He left the icy plains as quickly as he could.

“Master, we’ve used a lot of energy. We’ll have to sleep for some time. We’ll only awaken if master faces fatal danger or if heavenly resources that peak our interest appear.” Zi Ying’s voice was slightly weak, and he made no more sounds after that.

Jian Chen entered his sea of consciousness again, and indeed, he found the sword spirits to have darkened. Clearly, they had expended a lot of energy to purge the coldness.

Back at the Ice Goddess Hall, protector Shui was still standing where she had been before. She had not moved at all, so she stood

there like an ice sculpture as she contemplated things.

Suddenly, a gleam of light flashed through her eyes. She glanced in the direction of Jian Chen before losing interest again. Her cold eyes swept past Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu's origin energy treasures as if she was deep in thought.

Suddenly, her cold eyes erupted with a dazzling light. Immediately, the surrounding temperature plummeted and became even colder than ancient ice caverns.

She slowly clenched her fist as destructive energy condensed around her hand. She coldly said, "I understand. I finally understand. No wonder I always felt like something was wrong with you as I surveyed you with my presence. So you had discovered me long ago, and you had purposefully acted like that to fool me. Impressive! Very impressive! What an impressive Mo Tianyun! What an impressive Winged Tiger God..." Her voice became colder and colder, chillier and chillier as her fury became stronger and stronger.

She suddenly looked in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent. A huge, stone statue was reflected in her cold pupils. It was the sculpture that stood in the center of Mercenary City. The next moment, the sculpture disappeared from her eyes and was replaced by a huge divine hall that stood ninety-nine floors high. It was the supreme divine hall of the Beast God Continent, the Beast God Hall!

"Just who are you, Winged Tiger God and Mo Tianyun? To even trick this king..." Protector Shui gritted her teeth. She felt like she had been fooled by the Winged Tiger God and Mo Tianyun. This was utterly shameful to her, an embarrassment that could never be washed away.

Protector Shui suddenly swung out and three finger-like arrows of ice condensed out of nowhere. They immediately shot toward the three origin energy weapons that had been frozen, and with

three crisp sounds, the Sacred Dragon's Sword, the Scorching Godfire Hairpin, and Hei Yu's machete were split in half, falling onto the frozen ground with a clatter.

Jian Chen found the saint artifact and returned to the Changyang clan in Lore City in a rather dispirited fashion. He locked himself in his room and did not take a single step out.

After returning from the Ice Goddess Hall, Yu Fengyan's mood took a great turn for the better. Her face was full of life within the next few days while the worry on her face had disappeared. Her haggard face improved with each coming day.

Jian Chen remained in his room for the next few days, and no one came to disturb him. He currently sat on his bed with a dull, high class monster core in his hand as he worked hard to absorb the energy inside.

The monster core originated from within the artifact space. It had already existed for several tens of thousands of years. After being eaten away by time, it could not even be called a monster core, but something that was between a rock and a monster core. Not only had most of the energy leak away, any residue left had basically solidified, making absorption extremely difficult.

After feeling just how helpless he was when Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu had been trapped, it stimulated his desire to become powerful. He locked himself up to cultivate as soon as he had returned to the clan.

Jian Chen did not touch the monster cores in his Space Ring. They all originated from the Heaven's Incense School. After giving Bi Lian and Xiao Bao a lot of them, he did not have much left, and even if he absorbed all of them, he would not be able to reach the fourth layer of his Chaotic Body.

He could only forcefully absorb the large pile of monster cores in the saint artifact since his cultivation method was special and he was in possession of the Chaotic Body. If it were someone else,

even Saint Kings, they would not be able to absorb the energy that had almost solidified, which was why Jian Chen decided to refine these monster cores first.

He also understood that even if he refined all the monster cores in the artifact space as well as the ones in his Space Ring, it would still not be enough to elevate him to the fourth layer. However, it could strengthen his chaotic neidan at the very least.

With each layer of the Chaotic Body, the energy needed to progress to the next was at least several times more than the previous stage, even ten times more. The resources required to progress from the third layer to the fourth layer were unimaginable.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had already been in seclusion for several days. He had refined many monster cores in those days, but the effects were basically non-existent. His chaotic neidan was still the same size. It had not changed at all, Jian Chen could not even feel it grow.

“Jian Chen, the worldly ebb is about to happen. It will erupt in the next few days, so make your preparations and come to the sea realm as soon as possible.” At this moment, the sea goddess’ obscure voice rang through his head. It was extremely gentle and pleasant.

Jian Chen immediately stopped cultivating. He slowly opened his eyes. Just hard work was not enough to make his Chaotic Body reach another level. He required luck.

Chapter 1228: Changyang Hu's Transformation

“It’s about time I complete my promise to the sea goddess, but I never thought that the day of the worldly ebb would have approached so quickly,” Jian Chen mumbled to himself. He was not surprised by the fact that the sea goddess could find him with great precision. Although she had already lost her fleshy body, her soul was even more powerful than in ancient times. She could easily engulf the entire Tian Yuan Continent or the Beast God Continent.

Jian Chen got off the bed. He had no idea how much time he would spend in the sea realm after leaving, so he needed to sort some things out beforehand. This included dealing with the Flame Mercenaries. They risked suffering the revenge of those from the Underworld sect who had managed to escape.

“A’Hu... A’Hu, don’t go! Don’t leave your mother! You’re my only son! I can’t be without you! A’Hu...”

Just when Jian Chen opened the door, his first aunt’s sorrowful voice rang out from afar.

Jian Chen was stunned, but he seemed to think of something soon. His expression immediately changed a little as he ran over.

From afar, Jian Chen could see his eldest brother hovering ten meters in the air with his white robes. He did not give off any rippling of energy and was not hovering in the air like a Heaven Saint Master. At the same time, Jian Chen did not sense the Saints Rulers’ abilities from him. Changyang Hu was levitating in the air through a method that Jian Chen did not know or understand.

There was an indescribably and unexplainable charm about Changyang Hu, making him seem otherworldly, as if he was a transcended immortal. It was a divine charm.

Below, Ling Long looked at him with her head raised. Tears constantly poured from her eyes since she was in utter sorrow. She sobbed as she pleaded with him.

A group of guards had already surged over, and even Yu Fengyan, Bai Yushuang, Bi Yuntian, and Changyang Ba had hurried over. All of them looked at Changyang Hu in unease.

Jian Chen's heart sank. He knew that the exact thing that he did not want to happen had finally happened. He took a step and instantly traversed over a hundred meters, arriving before Changyang Hu.

"Brother!" Looking at Changyang Hu's emotionless face, Jian Chen could not help but call out in worry, as if he was trying to awaken Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu was very calm. His gaze was extremely bright at times, clear and transparent like two luminous pearls, which were filled with wisdom and willpower, yet at other times, it was dark, profound like the starry sky. It seemed to contain a whole different world inside, everything in fact. It was extremely profound and difficult to explain.

"Brother, I will be leaving," Changyang Hu said to Jian Chen as he calmly looked at him. He bore a smile. When he said 'brother,' it had become indifferent, having lost its sincerity long ago.

At that moment, Jian Chen felt like his brother had become a different person. He was so strange that Jian Chen could not find any familiarity at all.

All the times that he had spent with him in Kargath Academy flashed through Jian Chen's head like a movie, making his heart ache. He had realized that his brother had severed his kinship, which was why he had become so unfamiliar. The brother in his memories had ceased to exist.

From that day on, his close brother only lived in his memories.

“Brother, have you really severed your kinship? Are you really willing to see first aunt in so much pain?” Jian Chen’s voice slightly trembled. He still wanted to see if he could turn Changyang Hu back.

Changyang Hu remained smiling throughout the exchange. His expression did not change at all with what Jian Chen said. He looked into the distant space with his profound eyes and said, “The world is emotionless. We were born from the world, and we follow the path provided by the world to comprehend it. The impurities of worldly affairs are like strands of a demonic presence, obscuring the wisdom of people and misleading their hearts. Only by transcending worldly affairs can one regain their original awareness, and thus, see through all the mysteries of the world.

“The life of a mortal is like a dream. When a person is born, the dream begins. When they die, the dream ends. Everything that happens in the dream seems real and fake, but it will all be reduced to a void in the end. The dream seems fake so it cannot be real, and it seems real but it is not real. These are the so-called emotions and desires. They are illusory, and only by abandoning the worldly affairs can you return to your original conscience. Only by understanding the truth and severing the false can you be at peace, stand true to fate, see through the mysteries of the world, and witness the supreme all...”

With that, Changyang Hu drifted away. He moved away extremely freely, without any reluctance.

Jian Chen fell silent. He hovered in the sky as he watched Changyang Hu gradually grow further away. His heart ached. He knew that Changyang Hu had completely severed everything. The current him probably no longer maintained any connections of family. He was only an unchanging spirit to comprehend the world. He had embarked on a different path.

Jian Chen became rather depressed at that moment. He was in a horrible mood. He had just lost Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu,

and now he had lost the brother he respected the most. Although he had the ability to make his brother forcefully stay, he did not do that. He knew that all of it would result in nothing. Changyang Hu's path had already been determined and could no longer be changed.

"A'Hu..." Ling Long's heart shattered like glass after Changyang Hu's straightforward departure. She cried out in sorrow before fainting.

"First madam, first madam..." Several female servants paled in fright as they hurried up to catch her.

"Take her back to her room to rest," Changyang Ba said in dejection as well. His mood was extremely heavy.

Jian Chen starred in the direction Changyang Hu had disappeared in for quite some time before deeply sighing. He returned to the ground in low spirits.

"Xiang'er, come here," Bi Yuntian arrived beside Jian Chen and grabbed his arm. After witnessing what had happened with Changyang Hu, Bi Yuntian became rather scared inside. She was afraid that she would lose her child just like Ling Long.

"Xiang'er, can you tell your father what happened to your brother?" Changyang Ba asked in pain. He could sense that his first son had probably become a thing of the past.

Jian Chen thought silently before he replied, "Brother's chosen a path that's suitable for him. He's embarked on a unique cultivation path. I have no idea what will happen in the future."

A white-robed person stood on a tree branch as he watched Changyang Hu walk away from Lore City. He mumbled, "Looks like Changyang Hu has gotten past the final stage. His Great Liberation is complete. He has finally reached this step."

...

Jian Chen delayed his journey to the sea realm by a day due to

what had happened with Changyang Hu. On the next day, he visited the Flame Mercenaries to sort out some matters before properly comforting Bi Yuntian. He promised that he would return after dealing with his matters. He then set off for the sea realm with Nubis.

Emerging from a Space Gate, Jian Chen and Nubis hovered above the vast sea. They felt the calmness of the sea as well as the gentle sea breeze. A comfortable, easy feeling immediately bloomed within Jian Chen, pushing away all the unhappiness from his brother's departure the day before.

With the sea goddess' assistance, Jian Chen and Nubis passed through the barrier without any obstructions. At the same time, the sea goddess' voice rang in their heads, "The worldly ebb will be erupting soon. I will keep paying close attention to the situation, so spend a few days in the sea realm and wait for my news."

"Yes, your majesty," Jian Chen politely replied. Hesitating slightly, he then said to the empty space, "Your majesty, I have something that I would like to inquire about. May I ask if you know about protector Shui of the Ice Goddess Hall?" Jian Chen knew that the sea goddess basically existed everywhere, so she definitely would have heard what he said.

An illusionary, hazy woman silently appeared before him right after he finished speaking. She sternly asked, "Why are you asking about the Ice Goddess Hall? Do you want to visit that place?"

Before Jian Chen could reply, she followed up with, "I've never heard of a protector Shui of the Ice Goddess Hall, but the Ice Goddess Hall is an extremely terrifying place. From the ancient times till now, countless Saint Emperors have entered those icy plains, but less than a tenth have returned alive. I once tried to investigate the depths of the icy plains using my soul, but as soon as my soul approached that place, it would be frozen by an extremely terrifying coldness. It would even use my soul as a guide and quickly travel toward the sea realm. If I had not pulled back

my soul fast enough, the outcome would have been unthinkable.” The sea goddess’ voice was filled with a lingering fear. It was evident just how terrifying that area was for the sea goddess, who belonged to the Origin realm.

“Afterward, the Winged Tiger God gave me the Empyrean Demon Orb and also warned me to never investigate the place no matter what unless the icy plains disappear from the arctic. That was why I never looked into that area again.” The sea goddess’ voice was filled with some mixed emotions. Her soul was extremely powerful. Not only could it engulf the entire sea realm, she could extend it as she wished into the Tian Yuan Continent, the Beast God Continent, and even the Wasteland Continent.

Without any exaggeration, her soul could move freely throughout the entire world. There was nothing that could threaten her, including the most dangerous place on the Tian Yuan Continent, the Death Nest, except for the Ice Goddess Hall, a region forbidden for her to enter.

“Your majesty, then may I inquire when the Ice Goddess Hall appeared?” Jian Chen asked again. The sea goddess was a sovereign-like figure of the same era as Mo Tianyun. She knew many more secrets than Saint Emperors.

“The Ice Goddess Hall seemed to have always existed. No one knows when it first appeared, but the people of the organization rarely ever visit the Tian Yuan Continent. Every time they appear, they visit the continent in search of disciples, and they handle everything with an extremely low profile,” said the sea goddess. She did not know the answer to Jian Chen’s question either.

At this moment, Jian Chen thought about how the sword spirits had described protector Shui as someone who had come down from above. In that case, did it mean that the organization was founded by protector Shui?

Jian Chen asked again after thinking up to that point, “Your

majesty, if you surpass Saint Emperor, is it possible to live for more than a million years?”

The sea goddess shook her head, “Beyond Saint Emperor is the Origin realm. It has three subdivisions, which are Receival, Returnance, and Reciprocity. With my understanding, those of the Origin realm can only live for a hundred thousand years, and even people who have reached Reciprocity cannot live longer than two hundred thousand years after ingesting various heavenly resources to extend their life. Perhaps only cultivation realms beyond that will allow you to live longer.”

“Of course, if there is any heaven-defying treasures, you may be able to live for a million years or even longer. However, even if that’s the case, they’ll end up the same as me, only able to maintain a soul while the body will be gone. At the same time, the soul will not be able to separate itself from the treasure that protects it.”

Jian Chen became extremely depressed. He had already guessed that protector Shui probably had already surpassed the Origin realm, having reached an even greater level. He could not become happy over this no matter what, as the stronger protector Shui was, the more unlikely he would be able to save Rui Jin and the others.

Chapter 1229: Sudden Changes of the Turtle Clan

The only place Jian Chen could temporarily stay in the sea realm was the Turtle clan, so after his conversation with the sea goddess, he headed to the Turtle clan's territory with Nubis.

The space within the sea realm was much tougher than outside. Saint Kings could not rip open the space there to create Space Gates, so Jian Chen and Nubis could only fly to the Turtle clan.

“Haha, it's said that the barrier around the sea realm can prevent the entry of foreign Saint Kings, yet I've entered the sea realm as a foreign Saint King without any difficulty at all. Probably only the two of us can enjoy such a great treatment,” Nubis could not help but laugh freely as they flew.

“Oh right, Jian Chen, that big fellow is still cultivating in the artifact space. He doesn't seem to have come to the sea realm before, so you might as well let him out to have a look,” said Nubis again.

Jian Chen immediately thought of Tie Ta who had always been cultivating within the artifact space. Hesitating slightly, he still ended up calling him out.

With a flash of golden light, Tie Ta's burly body appeared by Jian Chen's side. His skin carried a faint, golden luster as a gentle, golden light shone from his body. It seemed like his skin was made from gold.

Since Tie Ta's identity was just far too sensitive on the Tian Yuan Continent, Jian Chen never dared to let him appear in front of others. After all, the war god of the Hundred Races had provoked the Beast God Continent and the Tian Yuan Continent in ancient times. As soon as the news that the war god had returned made its way out, he would not be able to keep Tie Ta safe with his current

strength.

However, the sea realm was different. In ancient times, only the Sea race did not participate in the war, so they did not have any enmity with the war god. To the various experts of the sea realm, perhaps the appearance of the war god would have nothing to do with them, much less lead to any conflicts of interest.

Exactly because of that, Jian Chen allowed Tie Ta to appear in the sea realm in such a bold fashion without any worry.

This was the first time Tie Ta had come to the sea realm, so he constantly looked around as soon as he appeared outside the artifact space. He was extremely curious about everything, so he asked Jian Chen and Nubis about everything.

Jian Chen and Nubis explained everything to Tie Ta as they traveled. They shared everything they knew with him without hiding anything.

The three of them maintained a straight course as they flew to where the Turtle clan was. They flew over many large clans, which caused many experts to come up to stop them. However, since they let their presences radiate out without holding back, the aggressive experts immediately became bright red. They would politely clasp their hands to the three of them before obediently backing off.

After flying for several hours, the three of them finally arrived at the Turtle clan. However, what they saw was not a prosperous clan, but a battleground dyed with blood. Blood had pooled into small streams with many corpses strewn across the ground. Not only were there members of the Turtle clan, there were other people as well, but all of the other people wore the same attire. It was possible to tell with a single glance that they belonged to the same organization. Meanwhile, the many, grand structures of the clan had been reduced to ruins by the battle as well. Bloody marks were present everywhere.

Two hundred-meter-wide pits had been dug far away. Between

the ruins of the clan, several dozen people in the same attire worked arduously as they moved the corpses. They moved all the corpses into the two large pits to bury them. Hundreds, possibly even thousands, of dead people were already stacked inside.

Jian Chen and Nubis, who had just arrived, revealed a drastically different expression when they saw this. Only Tie Ta, who was clueless, remained composed as he observed the ruined territory of the Turtle clan.

Jian Chen hovered several hundred meters in the air as he stared blankly at the horrifying landscape. His face was filled with shock and disbelief. He had even begun to doubt his eyes at that moment.

Suddenly, fury surged in Jian Chen's heart. Great killing intent radiated from him without control, causing the surrounding temperature to plummet, as if it had turned into an ice cavern.

Jian Chen suddenly vanished from the air. By the time he had appeared, he had already traversed a thousand meters, arriving beside a middle-aged man who was moving corpses. He grabbed the man by the clothes on his chest and loudly demanded, "What's happened to the Turtle clan!? Speak!"

The middle-aged man was only an Earth Saint Master, so Jian Chen's vast presence and icy-cold killing intent pressed against his chest like a mountain, making breathing difficult for him. He had almost suffocated, and he instantly paled.

The middle-aged man understood just how terrifying Jian Chen was. He even felt like he was stared into a death god's eyes as he looked at Jian Chen's cold pupils. They seemed like they could suck away his soul at any moment.

"W-w- warrior, the Turtle clan's been wiped out by the Tao family. I am a member of the Tao family, so I hope you can spare my life on behalf of the clan," the middle-aged man replied to Jian Chen with a trembling voice. His heart was filled with fear. At the same time, he did not forget to bring up the Tao family in attempt

to scare off Jian Chen to prevent him from doing anything.

“What! The Turtle clan’s been wiped out...” Jian Chen mumbled in a daze as a clap of thunder seemed to have exploded in his head. He felt the world spin around him.

Although he did not have any deep ties with the Turtle clan, their grand elder had saved his life before. In order to save him, the grand elder had been killed, and his attachment to the clan formed a will after his death. This was more than enough to show just how important the clan was to the grand elder.

Jian Chen no longer had the opportunity to thank the grand elder for saving his life, so all he could do was help him fulfil his final wish, to develop the Turtle clan and make them regain their former glory, letting the grand elder die without regrets. Yet now, not only had the Turtle clan failed to return to their former glory under his leadership, they had suffered a disaster instead. How was it possible for Jian Chen to not become mad?

“The Tao family!” Jian Chen clenched his teeth and the killing intent around him had reached a maximum. He struck his hand against the head of the middle-aged man, shattering it into pieces and killing him on the spot.

The several dozen other people all stopped what they were doing and encircled him. They had come originally to see what was going on, but they immediately shivered inside when they saw Jian Chen smash the man’s head into pieces. They began to back away slowly.

Jian Chen glanced over all the people with his gaze filled with killing intent. He coldly said, “Are you all people of the Tao family? If that’s the case, you can all be buried with with the dead clansmen of the Turtle clan.”

“Warrior, please wait...” At this moment, an old voice filled with fear boomed out. An old man quickly rushed over from afar. He wore the exact same uniform as all the other people.

The old man was a Saint Ruler, but only at the First Heavenly Layer. Clearly, he had only just broken through, yet he was already sweating bullets. He was horrified by the icy-cold killing intent radiating from Jian Chen.

“Warrior, an intense battle occurred three days ago between the Turtle clan and the Tao family, but the Turtle clan was not wiped out. All the remaining people have retreated over ten thousand kilometers to the south. We’re only responsible for cleaning up the battlefield,” the old man carefully explained with his head lowered his head. He did not choose to run because he knew that it would all be useless with his strength before Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately expanded his presence after what the old man had said. Indeed, he found quite a few people of the Turtle clan ten thousand kilometers to the south. Without any hesitation, he immediately shot into the sky and flew to where the Turtle clan had gathered.

“Big fellow, let’s go!” Nubis yelled to Tie Ta before following Jian Chen.

The old man sighed a breath of relief after avoiding calamity. He wiped away his cold sweat and turned to the others, “Don’t bother with these corpses anymore. Another great expert has arrived for the Turtle clan. Let’s hurry back to the clan to report this.”

...

The place used to be empty, but it had now become the territory of a large clan. The clan that took up this land was the Turtle clan.

The Turtle clan had only recently claimed this area for themselves. Many structures were newly built, and there were many houses that were still under construction.

Although people flowed in and out of the clan unceasingly, very few people spoke. Every single one of them was filled with sorrow as they silently built their new homes with clenched teeth. Every

single one of them possessed a hatred that they could not let go, which caused a miserable atmosphere to loom over the entire clan.

Jian Chen, Nubis, and Tie Ta arrived at the new territory of the Turtle clan at the same time. As soon as they touched down, a person building his house noticed them. He immediately recognized Jian Chen and became stunned before rubbing his eyes. His face then became filled with delight and disbelief.

“It’s the ruler. The ruler’s returned. It’s the ruler who has returned. Fantastic, our ruler has returned...” The person who recognized Jian Chen exclaimed. His voice was filled with excitement.

“What! The ruler’s returned? Is that true...”

“Where? Where has the ruler returned? Has the ruler really returned...”

“I see him. It really is the ruler. Fantastic, the ruler really has returned...”

More and more people discovered Jian Chen. They all enthusiastically added their voices to the cries as excitement flooded their faces.

To all the people of the Turtle clan, the ruler was their pillar of support. He was the hope of the Turtle clan. Even though they had been forced into such a horrible position by the Tao family, they were still filled with confidence because of the ruler. All of them believed that the Turtle clan would never fall apart as long as the ruler watched over them.

This was because every single one of them could remember just how weak the Turtle clan had been several years ago. The entire clan did not even have a 16th Star expert, yet after the ruler had come, the entire clan had undergone an overwhelming change. In just a few years, they expanded from having no 16th Star experts to having at least five 16th Star experts at all times. They had even

taken back most of their former crystal mines.

Although the Turtle clan had suffered a severe blow this time, all of them believed that the reason why they had suffered this blow was because the ruler was not present. They would never have suffered defeat if the ruler had been present.

Chapter 1230: The Arrogant Tao Family

In the center of the clan, a grand hall over twenty meters tall stood silently. The entire hall was an earthen color. It had been created by a Saint Ruler using his abilities to control the earth, creating it from soil in a very short amount of time. Quite a powerful energy was hidden inside.

At this moment, several Saint Ruler elders of the Turtle clan gathered in an extremely spacious room of the hall in worry. Every single one of them had things weighing on their hearts, filling the room with a heavy atmosphere.

“What do you think the clan should do now? Do we give up all the crystal mines that used to belong to us, or do we continue to develop here and face against the constant threat of the Tao family moving against us,” the fourth elder sternly inquired.

“No, we definitely can’t relinquish the crystal mines that used to belong to us. All these mines are a huge resource for the clan. It’s the only thing that can support our vigorous growth. If we give them up now, it’ll be even more difficult to get them back in the future. Since a hall elder of the Sea Goddess Hall stepped forward to stop our battle with the Tao family, I believe the Tao family won’t attack us so easily in the future,” the sixth elder disagreed right after the fourth elder finished speaking.

“Hmph. Are you relying on the hall elders to always stand by our side, sixth elder? The ancestor of the Tao family, Tao Zhengtian, will reach the peak of the 16th Star soon. He will become a hall elder sooner or later. Once he takes that position, he can move against our clan without the slightest worry. That day will become the true end of our clan,” the fifth elder coldly snorted. He disagreed with the sixth elder very much.

The fourth elder gently sighed because of what the fifth elder had said. He added, “It’s a pity that the ruler’s not present. If he was,

then all would be fine. Only he can determine the rise or decline of our clan.”

“The ancestor of the Tao family is just far too powerful, and he’s even joined with the Moxi clan through marriage, which makes him even more influential in the sea realm. Coupled with the fact that he’s formed an alliance with over ten large clans, the number of 15th and 16th Star experts they’ve gathered is not something our clan can deal with. We probably still won’t have the power to contend with the Tao family even if the ruler returns...” The seventh elder added in a heavy voice.

The fourth elder’s expression changed, and he sternly looked at the seventh elder. He berated, “Seventh elder, how can you talk about the ruler like that. As an elder of the Turtle clan, you can lose confidence in yourself, but you should never lose confidence in the ruler because he is the greatness of the Turtle clan, the person who holds all the hope of the Turtle clan. We are only truly powerful when we have him watching over us. We need to stand firm. Once the ruler returns, we’ll be able to recover from this situation.”

The seventh elder immediately fell silent. He lowered his head. The ruler of the Turtle clan never stayed in the clan for very long, but he had established a great impression among the elders.

“R-report...” At this moment, a guard called out from afar as he rushed over in a hurry.

Seeing how impatient the guard was, the elders immediately stopped their discussion. One of them stared at the guard and heavily asked, “What’s happened? Has the experts of the Tao family come?”

“N-no... elders, the r-ruler has returned. The ruler has returned...” The guard huffed. He was extremely excited.

“What! The ruler’s returned?” The elders present beamed with delight. One of them chuckled aloud and said with a clear voice,

“Everyone, let’s go welcome the ruler.”

“No need, I’m already here,” Jian Chen’s deep voice rang through the hall right after the elder spoke. Before Jian Chen had finished speaking, he had already appeared before everyone with Nubis and Tie Ta along with a great group of clansmen. The clansmen stopped outside the hall while joy and excitement from the bottom of their hearts was plastered across their faces.

“We greet the ruler!” The elders of the Turtle clan immediately bowed to Jian Chen. They were all emotional where even their voices trembled slightly.

Jian Chen walked up to the throne and sat down while the elders stood in a row below in a courteous manner.

Nubis and Tie Ta were much more relaxed in comparison. They knew that Jian Chen had important matters to deal with, so they did not disturb him. Instead, they began to stroll around the place by themselves.

“Tell me exactly what has happened. Why has the Tao family attacked the Turtle clan without any reason?” Jian Chen coldly asked with a sunken expression.

The fourth elder immediately stepped forward. He politely explained the situation to Jian Chen, “Ruler, I believe you know that the Turtle clan has been working on taking back the crystals mines that had been taken from us after our strength had increased. Originally, we had taken back most of them with only a few better, larger mines still in the possession of a few large clans. They persisted in not returning them, so in order to resist the Turtle clan, they’ve even formed an alliance with the Tao family.”

“The remaining mines are just far too important to us, and they belonged to us originally, so we never gave up on them. Hence, many conflicts occurred between the experts of the Turtle clan and the alliance, causing both sides to suffer casualties. However, since we had five 16th Star experts guarding us, we were in no way

weaker than the alliance, so we were locked in a stalemate.”

“But this balance in power was disrupted a month ago. The Tao family has joined with another peak-level organization of the Sea Goddess Hall, the Moxi clan, through marriage. They have two great experts, one at the 16th Star and another at the 15th Star. The 16th Star ancestor of the Moxi clan is almost as powerful as Tao Zhengtian. The alliance completely exceeds us in strength with the participation of the Moxi clan.”

“Soon afterward, the Tao family sent an envoy to our clan and brazenly declared that we had seized many crystal mines without any fear and had broken the peace within the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall because we had the support of a few 16th Star experts. He also demanded us to hand over all our crystal mines as well as pay for the losses they had recently suffered, or the Tao family would unite all the clans and organizations we had abused to come teach us a lesson.”

Reaching there, the fourth elder’s voice had already become filled with an anger that he struggled to suppress. His eyes were about to burst into flames. Even the other elders in the hall were extremely furious as well, and their faces had paled.

Jian Chen’s face sank even more as he sat on the throne. Heavy killing intent had already appeared in his eyes. He had been angered by the actions of the Tao family.

Ignoring the fact that the crystal mines all used to belong to the Turtle clan, just the demand from the Tao family that stated that the clan had to hand over all their crystal mines had already crossed the line for Jian Chen, not to mention that they had even demanded the Turtle clan to make up for the losses that they had suffered in recent years. The Tao family could no longer be described as arrogant and rampant. They had gone overboard, far overboard.

The fourth elder recovered and continued, “How could we agree

to such an overboard demand right off the bat? As a result, the alliance began to launch a large-scale attack on our clan three days ago, but we could do nothing since the alliance's strength completely exceeded our own. Even with Qin Dou, Qing Yixuan, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas, all experts of the 16th Star, we were still unable to stop the attack from the Tao family. The battle lasted for just half a day, and all the five of our 16th Star experts became heavily injured by the people of the alliance. In the end, the battle only reached a conclusion because a hall elder had made it in time.

“Indeed. The Tao family wanted to use the power of the alliance to wipe us out three days ago. If the hall elder had not forcefully interfered and protected us, we probably would have been wiped out by the Tao family already. Ruler, we need to take revenge for this,” said the fifth elder righteously.

“Ruler, our clan sustained extremely heavy injuries in the battle. Half of the clansmen have passed away, over thirty thousand, and we've lost four elders. We can't just do nothing over this debt of blood.”

“Ruler, please lead us...”

“Ruler, you must let us pay back the debt of blood.”

Every single elder within the hall resentfully spoke through clenched teeth. All of their eyes burned with the roaring flames of revenge.

“How many 15th and 16th Star experts are there among the alliance?” Jian Chen coldly asked. He would obviously take revenge for the Turtle clan, but he needed to have a proper understanding of the Tao family's strength first.

Jian Chen could already completely ignore Saint Rulers. He cared more about how many Saint Kings the Tao family had.

The elders all hesitated slightly. Then the fourth elder replied,

“Ruler, the Tao family currently has four 15th Star experts and at least two 16th Star experts. They would be the two ancestors of the Tao family and the Moxi clan.”

“No, there was another expert who matched up against Tai Dou in a stalemate other than the Tao family ancestor and the Moxi clan ancestor. There should be at least one other 16th Star expert.”

“I don’t think all of you saw it, but when the battle erupted, there was another person in the alliance who watched on. I could not discern their strength. He did not take part in the battle. I am guessing that he’s a 16th Star expert as well,” added another elder.

Jian Chen frowned. He discovered that it was indeed rather difficult for the Saint Ruler elders to discuss the level of Saint Kings.

“Stop rambling. Bring me Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas. I know they’re healing, so summon them immediately,” ordered Jian Chen.

“Yes, ruler...” An elder followed his orders and immediately rushed out of the hall as quickly as possible.

Chapter 1231: Envoy of the Tao Family

Jian Chen did not wait for very long before Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas entered the hall. Their faces were pale-white, without a shred of blood, and they were extremely heavily injured.

“To think you would still know to return. You sure are having it easy as the ruler of the Turtle clan. Leaving behind the five of us and then vanishing. Back when I told you to deal with the Tao family, you insisted on saying ‘no.’ Now look at it. The Tao family and the Moxi clan have joined in marriage, and they’re already prevailing. They’re not something that the current Turtle clan can deal with. What do you think we should do?” Qing Yixuan could not help but criticize Jian Chen as soon as she saw him. Although she had already agreed to temporarily watch over the Turtle clan, it was just an agreement in the end. Qing Yixuan was still biased against Jian Chen. She still remembered the moment when Jian Chen had taken the Octoterra Map fragment from her while she was heavily injured. She could not forget it no matter how she tried.

Unfortunately, Jian Chen was no longer the insignificant Saint Ruler from before, so even if she hated him, she was not his opponent.

“I didn’t move against the Tao family back then because I was not confident we could completely suppress them, which was why I let them be. It’s just that I never thought that the Tao family would strengthen so quickly and declare war against my Turtle clan themselves,” Jian Chen coldly replied. What he really feared about the Tao family was their ancestor, Tao Zhengtian. It was said that he was quite close to becoming a hall elder, and all hall elders were Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

“Then do you have the power to deal with the Tao family right now?” Qing Yixuan stared at Jian Chen. Among everyone present,

he was the only person she did not show any respect to. She had always felt like he owed her.

“Tell me in detail just how many Saint Kings the Tao family have first and what level of strength they possess as well as Tao Zhengtian’s exact strength,” Jian Chen said.

“The alliance of the Tao family has a total of nine Saint Kings so far. There are four beneath the Fifth Heavenly Layer and five that are either at the Fifth Heavenly Layer or above. One is of the Fifth Heavenly Layer, two are of the Sixth Heavenly Layer, another is of the Seventh Heavenly Layer, and the last one is of the Eighth Heavenly Layer. The ancestor of the Moxi clan is of the Seventh Heavenly Layer while Tao Zhengtian is the strongest, having reached the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer. He is also only a single step away from reaching the ninth, and I heard that Tao Zhengtian is in possession of a divine hall as well,” Qing Yixuan coldly replied.

Jian Chen frowned. Adding Nubis, Tie Ta, and him, they only had eight Saint Kings. Tai Dou was of the Fifth Heavenly Layer while Qing Yixuan, Lan Jing, Xin Pian and Mochas were all of the Sixth Heavenly Layer. Nubis was the weakest, at the Fourth Heavenly Layer, but if he used the Saint Tier Battle Skill he had modified, he could temporarily match up against experts of the Seventh Heavenly Layer. As for he himself and Tie Ta, both of them could face up against experts of the Seventh Heavenly Layer without suffering defeat. Together, they were in no way weaker than the Tao family alliance. They may even be stronger.

However, what pained Jian Chen was that Tao Zhengtian was in possession of a divine hall. His side seemed very strong, but it was still not enough to destroy a divine hall.

Qing Yixuan thought that Jian Chen was not confident that they could defeat the Tao family when she saw him frown. She could not help but sigh inside. The influence of the Tao family was like the midday sun right now, and without much time, Tao Zhengtian

would become a hall elder as well. At that time, dealing with them would become even more difficult, and she had no idea if she would still have the chance of obtaining what she wanted.

If she did not obtain the item, she would not be brave enough to return to the Tian Yuan Continent.

“God dammit. I had the Octoterra Map fragment before, and I could’ve used it to exchange with the Tao family for what I wanted. It’s all because the map fragment was stolen away by Jian Chen.” Qing Yixuan gritted her teeth in hatred when she thought up to that point.

At this moment, a guard quickly rushed inside. He said in a rather flustered manner, “Ruler, the Tao family has sent an envoy. He’s currently waiting outside.”

“An envoy of the Tao family!” Jian Chen became stunned, probably due to the fact that he did not expect an envoy to come at such a crucial moment. However, he quickly snapped back to his senses and said, “Lead the way for him.”

“There’s no need to lead the way. I’ll come in myself.” An arrogant voice rang out from outside as soon as Jian Chen had finished speaking. He was a skinny old man who strode over with his chest high, as if he was above everyone present.

The old man was a Saint Ruler, and behind him followed two Heaven Saint Masters.

The elders of the Turtle clan immediately became furious when they saw the envoy. Their hatred for the Tao family had already reached a bone-deep level.

As soon as the envoy stepped into the hall, he quickly glanced around. When he discovered the 16th Star experts standing below and Jian Chen sitting above, his heart immediately sank. He could already sense an ill omen, but he immediately became fearless when he thought of the Tao family’s current strength.

The envoy knew that he had come this time as a representative of the powerful Tao family, so even if there were many 16th Star experts present, he still remained composed and unhurried. He observed Jian Chen who sat on the throne without any fear and freely smiled, “May I ask who you are, and why I’ve never seen you before?” The envoy’s attitude was flippant, as if he did not care about Jian Chen’s identity at all.

“How dare you! Kneel before our ruler,” an elder of the Turtle clan berated the envoy.

The envoy came to an understanding and became surprised. He clasped his hands, “Oh, so you’re the legendary ruler of the Turtle clan. Please forgive me rudeness, I have truly been rude.”

“Since you know he’s our ruler, why don’t you hurry up and kneel. It’s your honor to be able to see our ruler at the 13th Star,” another elder demanded.

The envoy began to laugh aloud, “You sure are worthy of being the ruler of a clan, demanding respect at times like this. However, I’ve only ever kneeled to ancestor Tao Zhengtian. Even the current patriarch of the Tao family has no right to make me kneel, so I do wonder if the ruler of the Turtle clan deserves such a thing.”

“How dare you...”

“Such boldness! You must be tired of living for speaking like this to the ruler...”

Every single elder became utterly furious.

Jian Chen deeply frowned as well. The Tao family was just too arrogant. Even a mere Saint Ruler envoy was acting in such a cocky fashion before so many Saint Kings.

“Tai Dou, toss out the three of them,” Jian Chen coldly commanded. No matter what intentions they had come with, he did not plan on talking to them with how arrogantly they acted.

The envoy’s expression immediately changed when he heard that

Jian Chen was about to throw them out of the clan. He yelled, “Don’t you dare! I’m representing the Tao family...”

Once he reached that point, he was thrown out of the clan along with his two followers by Tai Dou. Although Tao Dou was heavily injured, he was still a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King. The envoy could not resist the frozen space.

Plop! Plop! Plop!

A hundred meters away, three muffled sounds could be heard. The envoy and his followers heavily hit the ground. Although they were not injured, they were reduced to a mess.

The two followers silently climbed up and did not dare to say anything. However, the envoy was furious. When he had been thrown out by Tai Dou, he had been locked up by Spatial Force and was unable to control his body, making him come so close to the ground. How could he endure something like that as a mighty Saint Ruler.

At the same time, he had already subconsciously determined the Turtle clan had been defeated and that they should have treated him with plenty of respect and politeness. Yet, the situation was the exact opposite.

The envoy ignored the gleeful gazes of the clansmen from his suffering as he furiously charged back into the hall. He roared out, “How dare you! How dare you treat an envoy of the Tao family like this. You will regret your actions.”

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes, and he said with a heavy voice, “Tai Dou, throw him out. If he charges in again, kill him immediately.”

“Yes sir,” responded Tai Dou as he arrived before the envoy. He extended his hand, about to throw him out.

“Wait!” The envoy had already been trapped by Tai Dou. Seeing how he was about to be tossed out yet again, he quickly shouted to

make him stop. He said through gritted teeth, “I’ve come under the patriarch’s orders to deliver a message. After the message is delivered, I will leave immediately.” With that, the envoy felt like he was out of trouble, so he added something else, “If it weren’t for the patriarch’s orders, I wouldn’t be willing to come even if this mere Turtle clan had invited me! Hmph.”

“Speak! What did the patriarch want you to say?” Jian Chen emotionlessly ordered.

The envoy calmed down and unhappily stared at Jian Chen. He said, “The Turtle clan has attempted to take the grand quality crystal mines in possession of the Tao family time and time again, which has resulted in great losses for us. In the battle three days ago, a large number of experts and elites fell, so the Turtle clan had already caused an extremely great loss to the Tao family. As a result, the Turtle clan has fifteen days to pay up a billion grand quality crystal coins as compensation, or the clan will take corresponding measures against the Turtle clan.”

The elders of the Turtle clan began to tremble in rage after they heard what the envoy had to say. The Tao family was going more and more overboard. Even if they used everything they had, they probably would not be able to gather a hundred million, let alone a billion crystal coins. Although they had been in possession of some crystal mines for some time, it was just far too little time to make a grand sum.

“I have delivered the patriarch’s message. Farewell.” The envoy turned around in an attempt to leave.

“Wait!” Jian Chen stopped the envoy from leaving.

He turned around to look at Jian Chen as he coldly asked, “What is it, ruler?”

A gleam of heavy killing intent flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes. He coldly answered, “Envoy, you would have been able to leave safely before you had said that, but now you can’t.”

The envoy's expression changed. He growled, "What are you trying to do?"

Chapter 1232: Mobilization

Jian Chen ignored the envoy. He looked at Tai Dou and said, "Bring me his head."

Tai Dou became stunned by that command, as if he had never thought that Jian Chen wanted to kill the envoy right there. However, he snapped back to his senses very quickly, moving against the envoy without saying anything more.

"How dare you! Are you trying to make trouble!? I am the representative of the Tao family..." The envoy's expression really changed as he hurriedly cried out. He had never thought that Jian Chen would actually want to kill him. After all, he had come this time as a representative of the Tao family. If the Turtle clan really did kill him, the flames of rage from the Tao family would burn them to a crisp. He did not believe the Turtle clan was the Tao family's opponent, even if their legendary ruler had returned.

Tai Dou ignored the cries of the envoy. He extended his hand and twisted the envoy's head, forcefully wrenching it from his neck. With the envoy's strength as a Saint Ruler, he was completely immobilized by Tai Dou's abilities as a Saint King. All he could do was watch helplessly as his head parted from his body.

The envoy had not died. As a Saint Ruler, severing the head from the body was not enough to claim his life. As long as his soul was still present, he could still survive even if his head had been reduced to pieces. At that moment, the envoy stared at Jian Chen wide-eyed, in shock and anger.

Even now, he refused to believe that the Turtle clan was bold enough to treat him like that, that they were completely unafraid of the Tao family behind him.

Jian Chen flicked a finger from the throne and a sharp sword Qi shot from the tip of his finger. It disappeared between the envoy's eyebrows.

The eyes of the envoy quickly lost their luster and became glassy. Jian Chen's sword Qi had wiped out his soul.

Jian Chen waved his arm and a gust of wind blew away the envoy's head, directing it into the hands of a follower that had come with him. Jian Chen coldly said, "Go tell Tao Zhengtian that he must return all the mines of the Turtle clan within a day and that he must pay ten billion crystal coins in compensation for the casualties the Turtle clan suffered in the battle several days ago. If he fails to do those two things in the given time, my Turtle clan will begin a devastating attack on the Tao family and all those in the alliance. We will not let the matter rest until we are dead."

The two followers had become as pale as paper as fear overwhelmed their souls. They could not help but tremble. They quickly nodded after hearing what Jian Chen had to say before rushing out the Turtle clan with the envoy's head in bewilderment.

All the elders of the Turtle clan were delighted when they saw the outcome of the envoy. Some of the elders had even become extremely excited and emotional from what Jian Chen had said to the two followers at the end. Their Turtle clan finally had no need to endure the oppression of the Tao family. At the same time, they understood just how important the ruler was to the Turtle clan.

They had suffered devastating attacks from the Tao family when the ruler had not been present before. If a hall elder had not interfered, they probably would no longer exist. Now that the ruler had returned, the clan had toughened again. They no longer feared the Tao family.

"Jian Chen, have you really made up your mind to move against the Tao family? Are you confident you can deal with them?" Qing Yixuan sternly asked, but she too felt some anticipation inside.

Jian Chen nodded, "If the Tao family really is only as powerful as you've described, they are indeed not enough to threaten us." The

situation this time was different from the last. Nubis had already emerged from seclusion and coupled with Tie Ta, who was no weaker than himself, the Tao family really did not pose much of a threat to them.

“But the five of us are all heavily injured. We can’t recover in a short amount of time,” Qing Yixuan said with some worry. Although she had no idea where Jian Chen’s confidence originated from, she also knew that Jian Chen was not a reckless person.

A mysterious smile appeared on Jian Chen’s face, “I obviously know that the five of you are heavily injured. You don’t need to worry about this problem. I can heal all of you up very quickly.” With that, a golden streak of light flashed from between Jian Chen’s eyebrows as the saint artifact flew out from his sea of consciousness.

“Don’t resist,” Jian Chen advised before sucking them into the artifact space. He planned on getting the artifact spirit to heal them.

Although Jian Chen was also a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, only water-attributed energy was abundant in the sea realm. Radiant Saint Force was extremely thin. If he used his own powers to heal the five of them, it would be nowhere near as effective as on the Tian Yuan Continent. The origin energy of Radiant Saint Force was a consumable energy to him. It was even more difficult to recover than Chaotic Force, so in order to save on origin energy, he could only let the artifact spirit handle healing them.

To reach Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master, all that was needed was accumulation. Once a Radiant Saint Master possessed a certain level of origin energy, their souls would improve qualitatively and, hence, reach the eighth class. Jian Chen did not possess a lot of Radiant Saint Force origin energy. He had absorbed as much as he could when the seal within the artifact space had broken open. This origin energy was his hope to reach Class 8, so he would not waste even a small amount of it unless he had no other choice.

The artifact spirit had reached Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master, so under his healing, the five of them used less than an hour to make a full recovery from their extremely heavy injuries, which delighted them very much.

Afterward, Jian Chen gave the five of them another half a day to recover their expended Saint Force. Afterward, he lead Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Xin Pian, Mochas, Nubis, and Tie Ta toward the Tao family in an aggressive manner. A few elders of the clan followed along as well.

Jian Chen did not count on the Tao family agreeing to his limit of a single day because he knew that it was impossible.

At the same time, several hundreds of thousand kilometers away, a middle-aged man paced around in a well-adorned room within a medium-sized tribe named the Kalor tribe. His brows were tightly furrowed, as if something weighed on his heart.

He was the current patriarch of the Kalor tribe as well as Kai Ya's father.

"Jia Suo, has the young lady still not emerged from seclusion?" Suddenly, the patriarch asked someone outside.

"Patriarch, the young lady is still in seclusion and has still not come out," replied the guard outside.

The patriarch furrowed his brows even more tightly as he felt a vague unease inside. He understood his daughter extremely well. Even though she had shown great talent since she was young, she was not very enthusiastic about cultivating, or she probably would have become a 14th Star expert already with her talent.

Yet now, she seemed to have undergone an unbelievable change after being taken away by the ruler of the Turtle clan. She entered a long period of seclusion as soon as she had returned, despite never entering seclusion in the past. She had not emerged even now, which filled him with great worry as a father. He was

extremely curious at the same time. He had no idea just what had happened after the ruler of the Turtle clan had taken away his daughter. Why had his daughter become so enthusiastic about cultivating? Had she been abused?

As the patriarch deeply pondered these mysteries, a guard's shocked cry rang out, "Ah! Young miss, y-you've emerged..."

Before the guard could finish his sentence, the door to the room was pushed open. Kai Ya walked in with her sky-blue clothes. Her entire presence was slightly different compared to before she had entered seclusion.

The patriarch became stunned when Kai Ya suddenly appeared before him. However, he beamed with joy soon after, "Kai Ya, you've finally emerged. Fantastic. Do you know how worried I've become since you suddenly went into seclusion."

Kai Ya smiled and gently replied, "Sorry father, I've made your worry."

The patriarch could sense that Kai Ya did not behave abnormally at all, which relieved him. He freely smiled, "It's fine, it's fine. As long as you are well."

The patriarch saw how Kai Ya was hesitating so he followed up with a caring question, "Kai Ya, is there something weighing on your mind? If there's anything I can help you with, just tell me. I'll do everything I can. Oh right, Kai Ya. Why did the ruler of the Turtle clan look for you last time? And why did you enter seclusion as soon as you had returned, only emerging now?"

Kai Ya hesitated before saying, "Father, I've actually emerged from seclusion this time to ask you for some crystal coins."

"It's just some crystal coins. How much do you need?" The patriarch smiled.

"The more the better, because I need a great pile of crystal coins when I enter seclusion," Kai Ya said with a slight blush. She knew

that the amount of crystal coins she needed was so vast that the Kalor tribe probably would not be able to provide them all. However, with her meager strength, she had no other choice than to seek the tribe for help if she wanted to power up quickly.

The patriarch's smile gradually disappeared. He seriously examined his daughter right before him. At that moment, he was doubting whether the person before him was the girl he was familiar with since his daughter had never worked so hard at cultivating before.

Chapter 1233: Battle Between Two Clans

(One)

“Kai Ya, you have to tell me the truth. Just what did the ruler of the Turtle clan do to you when he took you away? Why do you seem completely different than before? You’re working so hard on your cultivation. Has the ruler of the Turtle clan abused you?” The patriarch of the Kalor tribe asked with a heavy tone.

Kai Ya knew that her recent change had lead to her father misunderstanding things. Her father had even thought too much about it and twisted what had happened. She could not help but break into laughter,” Father, stop thinking about all these random things. Actually, the ruler of the Turtle clan came to give me an extremely impressive cultivation method when he came looking for me. I could not help but start working hard on cultivation after being moved emotionally, which is why I immediately went into seclusion right after I had returned.”

“An extremely impressive cultivation method? What is it? It’s even greater than the Innate Spirit-opening technique of the eight divine arts?” The patriarch stared at Kai Ya in shock.

Kai Ya hesitated slightly before saying, “The ruler gave me the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor as well as his experiences and knowledge regarding cultivation. Father, do you think it’s greater than the Innate Spirit-opening technique?”

“What! The cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor!?” The patriarch was greatly shocked as disbelief flooded his face. His expression then suddenly changed, and he immediately erected a barrier to isolate the room with wave of his hand. Afterward, he excitedly looked at his daughter and said with a trembling voice, “My dear daughter, did the ruler of the Turtle clan really give you the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor as well as his cultivation knowledge and experiences?”

“Yes. How can I trick you, father? If you don’t believe me, do you want me to take it out for you to have a look?” Kai Ya seriously asked.

The patriarch immediately waved his hands, “No, no, no. I believe you, but you have to be careful. You can’t let anyone else know that you possess the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor, okay?” The patriarch was extremely stern.

“Yes father, I understand,” Kai Ya solemnly replied. She clearly understood just how important the matter was.

Afterward, the patriarch passed a Space Ring to Kai Ya. He said, “There’s five million grand quality crystal coins in there. That’s all the crystal coins I have on me, so take it and use it first. I’ll call a gathering with the elders later on and persuade them. Then I’ll pour a portion of the tribe’s resources into you. Just don’t worry. I’ll do everything I can to help you obtain cultivation resources.”

“Then I’ll take my leave first. I’ll work extra hard to see if I can become a 15th Star expert as soon as possible.” Kai Ya left with the Space Ring. She did not waste a single moment, entering seclusion once more.

After Kai Ya had left, the patriarch remained in the well-adorned room. He was unable to calm down from his excited state for quite some time. He had never dreamed that his daughter would experience such great fortune, to have actually obtained the cultivation method of an emperor. He also believed that with her talent, it was extremely possible for her to become an expert on par to emperors in the future with the cultivation method and knowledge from the Octoterra Emperor.

As a father, he felt extremely prideful when he thought about how his own daughter would accomplish something so great in the future, even if it had not happened yet.

“Odd. The cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor is invaluable, so why did the ruler of the Turtle clan give it to Kai Ya

for no reason?" The patriarch thought of a very crucial question after calming down, which confused him very much. However, he did not think too much about it. He removed the barrier and walked out. At the entrance, two guards of the tribe stood there with straight backs as they stared ahead.

The patriarch glanced past the two of them. He coughed and said, "Did the two of you hear anything?" As he asked the question, he seemed to be unconcerned, but he devoted all his attention to the two guards.

Confusion filled the gazes of the guards, and they replied, "Patriarch, we didn't hear anything."

The patriarch nodded slightly before gradually walking away without saying anything else. His mind then became filled with methods to direct a portion of the tribe's resources to Kai Ya without causing any doubt among the elders.

...

At this moment, over ten people of various ages gathered in a grand hall within the Tao family. They varied in strength, ranging from Saint Rulers to Saint Kings. They all gathered around a large round table that was filled with various delicacies.

"I never thought that a hall elder would appear and ruin our campaign to wipe out the domineering Turtle clan. What a pity, what a pity. We missed such a good opportunity just like that," said a middle-aged man regretfully. He radiated with a vague but vast presence. He was a Saint King and was a part of the various clans that had allied themselves with the Tao family. His name was Tai Tongyi.

"Brother Tai Tongyi, there's no need to be regretful. The Turtle clan can be lucky the first time, but it definitely won't happen a second time. The patriarch of the Tao family has already sent an envoy to the Turtle clan. If they don't hand over a billion crystal coins in half a month, it will be perfectly justifiable for us to wipe

them out. As long as we are ‘reasonable’ even hall elders can’t forcefully order us to stop,” said the ancestor of the Kai’en clan. He was also a Saint King, having reached the Sixth Heavenly Layer. He was a 16th Star expert.

Tai Tongyi clasped his hands at the ancestor of the Kai’en clan and said, “That’s reasonable, brother Di Sen, but I worry that the Turtle clan will take advantage of this time and flee, moving the entire clan out of the Sea Goddess Hall’s territory. And if they really do pull out a billion crystal coins in half a month, what do we do with them?”

A blue-robed, middle-aged man with quite a striking appearance stood up and clasped his hands, “Senior Tai Tongyi, you are worrying too much. Firstly, the Turtle clan will not be able to retreat. Before they’ve compensated us with the billion crystal coins, it is perfectly reasonable for us to stop them if they try to escape from the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. At the same time, I’ve already sent people to conduct a detailed investigation of the Turtle clan. Even if they use everything the clan has, they won’t even be able to pay up a hundred million crystal coins, let alone the billion that we’ve demanded.”

He was the current patriarch of the Tao family, Tao Yun. He was a Saint Ruler of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, and it was rumored that he would definitely break through in fifty years and reach a greater level of cultivation.

“We won’t worry since the patriarch has put it like that. Several months ago, my most beloved and most favored grandson died to the experts of the Turtle clan. I need to repay this debt with all the blood of the Turtle clan,” said a bald old man coldly. Heavy killing intent lingered in his eyes.

“Don’t worry, brother Ying Mo. You will have your revenge for your grandson. Half a month later will be the day the Turtle clan ends,” said a ruddy, sage-like old man. He was the ancestor of the Tao family, Tao Zhengtian.

At this moment, an old man who seemed to be the caretaker rushed in. His complexion was very horrible, and he hoarsely cried out, "Ancestor, the envoy to the Turtle clan has returned."

"Let them in and report the exact details of the situation," Tao Zhengtian coldly ordered.

"Yes sir!" The person backed out under Tao Zhengtian's orders.

Very soon, the two Heaven Saint Masters that had visited the Turtle clan walked in with a bloodied head. They then knelt on the ground with lowered heads.

Including Tao Zhengtian, all the people in the room revealed a different expression and became furious when they saw the bloodied head. Heavy killing intent flickered in their eyes.

Bang! Tao Zhengtian slammed the table as his face darkened to the point that it had become terrifying. He furiously roared, "How dare they! The Turtle clan sure is bold to kill the envoy that we the Tao family have sent."

"Hmph. The Turtle clan already faces their demise, yet they still don't know how to repent for their mistakes, fearlessly killing the envoy of the Tao family. They are not treating the Tao family with any importance at all.

"This is a naked provocation of the Tao family, as well as a way to demonstrate their might to all of us."

All the experts from the large clans said in a righteous manner in their fury.

"Explain exactly what happened during the visit, the two of you. Do not miss any details at all," Tao Zhengtian indifferently commanded the two followers.

The two followers did not dare to miss anything. They immediately explained what had happened in the Turtle clan exactly how it occurred.

“Hmph, I never thought that the mere ruler of the Turtle clan would be so arrogant. Does he think of himself as a hall elder?” Tao Zhengtian immediately and codly sneered when he heard the story from the two followers.

“Ancestor, the ruler of the Turtle clan has also told us to bring back a message,” one of the followers said with hesitation.

“Speak. What has the ruler gotten you to bring back?” Tao Zhengtian coldly asked.

“The ruler said that we must return all the mines of the Turtle clan within a day and that we must pay ten billion crystal coins in compensation for the casualties the Turtle clan has suffered in the battle several days ago. If we fail to do those two things in the given time, the Turtle clan will begin a devastating attack on the Tao family and all those in the alliance. They will not let the matter rest until they are dead,” the follower said as he trembled.

The hall immediately fell into an abnormal silence with that. All of the people had been stunned by that, unable to return to their senses for quite some time.

“Hahahaha, I haven’t heard wrong, have I? The ruler of the Turtle clan wants us to pay ten billion crystal coins as compensation, or he will launch a devastating attack against us. Has the ruler gone mad from anger?”

“The Turtle clan isn’t even going to weigh their own strength first, and they want to launch a devastating attack against us? Pfft.”

“I think the ruler of the Turtle clan’s gotten ahead of himself.”

...

All the experts in the hall sneered. None of them believed that the Turtle clan possessed the power to do what they had declared.

Tao Zhengtian began to laugh from his anger. At that moment, his gaze became extremely sharp as heavy killing intent wildly

flickered in his eyes. He sneered, “Good! Very well! Very well! The Turtle clan is so arrogant. I’d like to see just how the little Turtle clan will launch a devastating attack against us. Everyone, I originally planned to give the Turtle clan half a month, but it looks like we no longer need to wait that long. We can move against them tomorrow. Everyone, let’s head over to the Turtle clan right now and see just what they possess that’s allowing them to be so arrogant.”

“There’s no need to go. We’ve already come!”

A deafening voice echoed from the sky as soon as Tao Zhengtian finished speaking. The voice was so loud that it continued to echo in the surroundings, lingering for quite some time before disappearing.

Chapter 1234: Battle Between Two Clans

(Two)

Above the Tao family, Jian Chen, Tie Ta, Nubis, Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas hovered a hundred meters in the air in an arrogant manner. Every single one of them was calm and cool as vast presences radiated from the eight of them, blanketing the entire Tao family.

The air seemed to have become heavy under their presences. The weaker members of the Tao family all paled while a small portion of them even began to bleed from the corner of their mouths. Their organs had already become heavily injured, having ruptured from the supreme presences.

Even the Saint Rulers within the Tao family revealed rather unnatural expressions. Powerful energy revolved around them as they used everything they had to resist the unending pressure.

“Hmph!”

A cold snort rang from the central hall within the Tao family. At that moment, nine Saint King presences surged out without showing any indication of giving in, ramming viciously against the eight of them in the air like a wild tiger.

Bang!

A deep sound actually rang through the air with the collision of the invisible presences. The surrounding energy was affected as well. Becoming violent in that moment, it swept out like a storm, kicking sand and dust into the air.

No one gained any upper hand from the clash between presences.

Tao Zhengtian flew up from below with a sunken expression as the eight Saint Kings from the alliance followed behind him. Every single one of them possessed rather ugly expressions.

“You’re the ruler of the Turtle clan?” Tao Zhengtian coldly asked as he stared at Jian Chen before quickly examining the seven other people around him. He immediately became shocked. He had never thought that the Turtle clan would actually possess eight Saint Kings. The number was only one less than his alliance, but what surprised him even more was that the injured five had made full recoveries already.

Tao Zhengtian understood Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas’ injuries extremely well. Three days ago, he had determined that they would not have been able to recover without several years of time and that they would end up suffering from irremediable after-effects in the future. Even if they were in possession of great medicine, they would still need quite some time. It had only been three short days, yet the five of them had made full recoveries. At the same time, they did not seem to be suffering from any after-effects, which completely overturned Tao Zhengtian’s understanding of things.

“Correct. I am the ruler of the Turtle clan. Tao Zhengtian, I’ll be collecting my debt from three days ago with interest,” Jian Chen sneered.

A sliver of disdain appeared in Tao Zhengtian’s eyes. He sneered as well, “Ruler of the Turtle clan, your clan actually has eight 15th and 16th Star experts. This has indeed exceeded what I expected, but if you think that you can deal with my Tao family with just the eight of you, then you are mistaken.”

Jian Chen’s gaze gradually sharpened to the point where it was like a sword. Heavy killing intent was present inside as well. He sneered, “Really? I’d like to see who made the great mistake.” With that, the Emperor Armament appeared in his hand. At that moment, Jian Chen’s presence underwent a sudden change. If he seemed like an ordinary mortal before, he was now like a sword surging with aura.

“Kill!” Suddenly, Jian Chen roared out. He immediately charged

toward Tao Zhengtian in an aggressive manner with his Emperor Armament.

At the same time, Nubis, Tie Ta, Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas moved as well. At the peak of the Sixth Heavenly Layer, Mochas faced up against the ancestor of the Moxi clan who was at the Seventh Heavenly Layer while Lan Jing and Xin Pian faced against two other Saint Kings who were at similar levels as them, both at the Sixth Heavenly Layer. Qing Yixuan's opponent was a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King while Nubis and Tai Dou faced two Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings.

As for Tie Ta, he was dealing with two Saint Kings all by himself. However, they were the weakest Saint Kings within the alliance, one at the Second Heavenly Layer and the other at the Third.

Jian Chen had decided this after discussing their options on the way here. Including Jian Chen, all of them were to keep their opponent busy, and then Tie Ta, who was most powerful among them, would handle the killing by starting with the weakest.

Seventeen Saint Kings erupted in an intense battle above the Tao family. They fought with destructive attacks, where terrifying ripples of residual energy transformed into terrifying storms that wreaked havoc in the surroundings. Even Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers dared not to approach them.

Jian Chen and Tao Zhengtian's battle was the most intense. Tao Zhengtian knew that Jian Chen was not as powerful as him, so he used everything he had right from the start in attempt to finish off Jian Chen as soon as possible. Then he would go assist the other people against the experts of the Turtle clan.

At his limit, Jian Chen's battle prowess could reach the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer. He currently faced against a Saint King at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer, so he used his full power without holding back at all. He abused the advantages of the Chaotic Body as he constantly stabbed out with his Emperor

Armament that bore strands of destructive Chaotic Force, attempting to harm Tao Zhengtian with every attack.

His every attack was extremely quick, where every single strike outpaced the previous. It formed a net of swords that seemed to be water-tight right in front of him.

However, Tao Zhengtian was at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer after all. He was well-versed in battle as well. His experience was in no way less than Jian Chen's. Faced against Jian Chen's torrential attack, he was still able to deal with it in a composed fashion. He even used his abilities as a Saint King to limit Jian Chen's movements from time to time. Although Jian Chen would shatter the space before it had completely frozen, it still caused some problems for him, gradually forcing him into a disadvantage.

Although Jian Chen was not as powerful as Tao Zhengtian, their disparity was just a single Heavenly Layer. At the same time, Jian Chen had experienced countless battles of different sizes throughout his life. His experience in combat was extremely rich, so it was extremely difficult for Tao Zhengtian to finish Jian Chen off in such a short amount of time.

Mochas had also fallen to a disadvantage with Jian Chen. His opponent was a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, the ancestor of the Moxi clan. He had already been forced to retreat by his opponent. He was not as composed as Jian Chen was.

Below, a huge barrier of energy had been erected over the territory of the Tao family. It protected all the weaker members of the Tao family, preventing them from suffering from the ripples of battle.

Even though the barrier was extremely tough, it was still rather difficult to block the ripples from a battle of seventeen Saint Kings. The transparent barrier had already begun to tremble under the constant barrage of the energy ripples, and it was shaking more and more.

Several tens of thousand people had already gathered within the barrier, including Saint Rulers. All of them stared nervously at the barrier above as it constantly shook. They all knew that the Tao family would have been flattened by the ripples of battle in a single moment if the barrier hadn't been protecting them.

At this moment, a golden, dazzling light flickered. Tie Ta quickly swung the meter-long edge of his axe across the air, blowing away the Second Heavenly Layer Saint King.

A supreme battle intent was present within the blade of the axe. It seemed to be able to annihilate the souls of people. As the target of Tie Ta's attack, the battle intent experienced by the Second Heavenly Layer Saint King was the most intense. It collapsed his willpower to battle. He actually felt powerless before the strike.

The golden light grew larger and larger in his pupils. Not only did the battle intent shatter his courage to battle, it had drawn away all of his attention as well. His soul had already become silently injured after being struck by the supreme battle intent.

Spurt! The golden axe passed through the Saint King. From the top of his head, he had been cleaved in half. His soul was wiped out before it could even flee.

After killing the Saint King, the golden axe continued on without weakening at all, continuing toward the energy barrier that protected the Tao family.

Boom!

A deafening sound immediately reverberated from the energy barrier. It was already about to collapse from the energy ripples of seventeen Saint Kings soon, so it immediately caved in after suffering an extraordinary strike from Tie Ta's axe. It shattered loudly.

Without the protection of the barrier, the violent energy immediately surged toward the Tao family like a flood. At that

moment, the various structures in the surroundings collapsed and countless people died or became injured.

Tao Zhengtian roared at the sky in anger. Extremely heavy killing intent radiated from him as he called out, “People of the Turtle clan, if you’re bold enough, face against us ten thousand kilometers away!”

“There’s no need to move that far away. Isn’t it pretty good to have a death match here?” Jian Chen sneered. He was not worried. No matter what the outcome of the battle was, the Tao family would suffer severely

“Argh! Experts of the Turtle clan, I want to skin you alive and wrench out your tendons!” Tao Zhengtian roared at the sky. A third of the elite members of the Tao family had passed away in the short moment since the barrier had shattered. They were all the future hope of the Tao family.

Jian Chen laughed at the sky, “Tao Zhengtian, didn’t you treat my Turtle clan the same way three days ago? It would be rude of me to not return the favor. I just want to return the method that your Tao family used to deal with my Turtle clan. And this is just the beginning.”

Chapter 1236: A Stalemate of Divine Halls

Tao Zhengtian stabilized himself after traveling a thousand meters. He stared in shock at Tie Ta, who was bathed in golden light, as disbelief filled his face. He could feel that Tie Ta was not very powerful, having not reached the 16th Star, but he was able to deliver such a terrifying attacks at will with his level of cultivation. His attacks also seemed to possessed wondrous effects that attacked the soul. This was the first time he had ever come across something like this.

At the same time, he understood that if it were not for the fact that he was at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer and that his soul was much more powerful, he definitely would not have been able to react under the barrage of the battle intent within the axe so quickly. In that crucial moment, if he had reacted slightly slower, he would not have just been knocked away. He would have been heavily injured at the very least.

“Just where did this person come from? And what heaven-defying cultivation method does he practice?” Tao Zhengtian exclaimed inside. Tao Zhengtian found it very abnormal for such a terrifying expert to be unknown in the sea realm.

However, before Tao Zhengtian could think of anything else, Jian Chen rushed over from afar. He stabbed at Tao Zhengtian as a layer of Chaotic Force wrapped around his Emperor Armament, sticking to Tao Zhengtian firmly and preventing him from assisting other Saint Kings.

“Tao Zhengtian, taste my Saint Tier Battle Skill!” Nubis called out as vast energy coiled around his surroundings. His arms moved in a wondrous pattern as he cast his modified Saint Tier Battle Skill.

Nubis was currently pale-white. He had been quite heavily injured when he had been blown away by Tao Zhengtian’s palm

strike. However, he was still a beast of antiquity. Although his body was not as powerful as Jian Chen's Chaotic Body, it was still extremely tough. His injuries were not enough to influence his battle prowess.

It was clearly quite a big deal for Nubis to cast his Saint Tier Battle Skill. He was unable to use it instantaneously with his strength as a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint King, so he needed a few seconds to charge up. A layer of dense, golden energy rapidly surged out of his body, coiling around him as it rotated. The color was the same as the energy used by Tie Ta, but that was only the appearance. In reality, the two energies were completely different. They weren't anywhere close to being the same.

"Soaring Draconic Serpent!" Nubis furiously roared as the golden energy around him froze at that moment. It turned into a huge, golden dragon that coiled around him, and with a clear roar, the snake-like dragon took to the air. A great pressure surged toward Tao Zhengtian, acting against him while he battled Jian Chen.

Nubis' Saint Tier Battle Skill had already reached the Seventh Heavenly Layer, but Tao Zhengtian still managed to deal with both the battle skill and Jian Chen in an extremely composed manner. Each time he stabbed out with his lance, the golden dragon would be cleaved in half. However, Nubis' Saint Tier Battle Skill contained a shred of the Silver Striped Golden Snakes' essence, so it was clearly different from other battle skills. Before the golden dragon could dissipate after it had been split in half, it reformed in an extremely short amount of time, continuing toward Tao Zhengtian with the same amount of force as before.

On the other side, Tie Ta had already arrived by the crater that Tao Lin had formed. He mercilessly swung his axe of golden light, ending Tao Lin's life.

Tao Zhengtian violently jerked with Tao Lin's death as a sliver of sorrow crossed his face. He wanted to help, but he was caught in a busy scuffle with Jian Chen and Nubis. Tie Ta was so close to Tao

Lin as well. He would not have been able to make it even if he had pulled out his divine hall. As a result, he could only watch helplessly as Tao Lin died before his eyes.

Tie Ta took away Tao Lin's Space Ring before arriving beside Qing Yixuan. He said with his deep but gentle voice, "Leave this to me. Go help Jian Chen."

Qing Yixuan said nothing. She nodded before handing her opponent to Tie Ta, charging towards Tao Zhengtian.

Tao Zhengtian finally felt slightly pressured when Qing Yixuan joined in. The Saint Kings on his side were rapidly dying. There would be one extra Saint King on the Turtle clan's side to come deal with him after every death. Once the battle became drawn out, he would gain more and more opponents, and it would become even more difficult for him to face all of them.

Tao Zhengtian knew he could not continue like this when he arrived at that conclusion. The longer he lasted, the more casualties his side would suffer. On the other hand, although there were some people who had become injured on the Turtle clan's side, none of them had died.

"All the people of the Tao family, enter the divine hall immediately!" Tao Zhengtian called out as a sound wave erupted through the battle between the Saint Kings. It echoed within a radius of a hundred kilometers.

A simple divine hall was thrown into the air by Tao Zhengtian. It became a huge, majestic hall in the blink of an eye in the incoming wind. It radiated with a desolate presence and was covered by marks left behind by time. Clearly, it had existed for a very long time already.

The divine hall immediately produced an extremely heavy boom when it struck the ground. The entire place shook violently as the divine hall's door swung open. It stood like a tough fortress and blocked all the violent energies that swept through the sky. It

created a region of safety around the divine hall.

The scattered, terrified clansmen, who were dodging the streams of energy, seemed like they had seen a ray of hope and charged into the divine hall as quickly as they could.

A dazzling golden light radiated through the air. Tie Ta swung his axe with great force toward a black-robed old man in front of him. The old man was a Saint King of the Fifth Heavenly Layer, but he had already become heavily injured from his fight with Qing Yixuan. As a result, he did not have any power to resist Tie Ta's powerful swing. At the moment he had become dazed from the supreme battle intent, the golden axe cleaved his head in half.

Four of the nine Saint Kings within the alliance had been slain by Tie Ta with lightning-like speed, and the remaining five held their ground with difficulty. However, all of them were extremely stern without exception. They no longer revealed the great confidence they had showed earlier.

Meanwhile, the ancestor of the Moxi clan regretted his actions inside. If he had known that the Turtle clan was so powerful earlier, he would never have agreed to the marriage with the Tao family, much less work with the Tao family against the Turtle clan. His Moxi clan had suffered severely from the conflict with the Turtle clan since one of the Saint Kings slain by Tie Ta was a part of his clan.

“Enter the divine hall!” Tao Zhengtian bellowed with a sunken expression. He was not carried away by his battle. He swung his lance as hard as he could, forcing back Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan. Afterward, he retreated, disappearing in the divine hall with a flash. The four other Saint Kings in the alliance did not tarry either, entering the divine hall at the same time as Tao Zhengtian, moving as quickly as they could.

The divine hall's door suddenly slammed shut and the structure rose up from the ground, quickly reaching an altitude of a

thousand kilometers.

“Ancestor, let us in...” Over a thousand clansmen of the Tao family had failed to enter the divine hall in time. They all began to plead as despair filled their faces. A few clever people immediately turned around to flee into the distance when they saw that there was no hope of entering the divine hall. They wanted to avoid the pursuit of the Turtle clan experts as well as the energy ripples from the battle.

Tao Zhengtian did not leave as he controlled the divine hall. Instead, the divine hall rapidly fell onto Jian Chen and the others. He wanted to use the toughness of his divine hall to deal with the eight of them.

Jian Chen coldly smiled when he realized what Tao Zhengtian was trying to do, “Tao Zhengtian, do you think you’re the only one with a divine hall?” The Octoterra Divine Hall had appeared in Jian Chen’s hands and transformed into a gigantic structure instantly. It was no smaller than Tao Zhengtian’s divine hall.

Jian Chen, Nubis, Tie Ta, Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas all charged into the divine hall. Under Jian Chen’s control, the divine hall quickly charged into the sky. It moved like a streak of light, and by the looks of it, it looked to be flying toward the Tao family’s divine hall.

Although the Octoterra Divine Hall had been beaten to ruins by Kaiser, it could repair automatically. After so much time, it had recovered by at least eighty percent even though it had not completely returned to how it had been before, and it seemed fine from the outside.

“Boom!” With a violent sound, the two divine halls brutally collided in the air. The great force created from the collision knocked the two of them away.

The two divine halls remained in perfect condition. The violent collision had not even left a scratch on them.

The divine halls hovered at a high altitude in unison after clashing once. They both knew that neither of them could do anything to the other unless they were in possession of a Saint Emperor's strength.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, I never thought you'd have a divine hall as well,” Tao Zhengtian's cold voice rang from his divine hall.

Jian Chen appeared silently on the highest point of the Octoterra Divine Hall. He coldly stared at the Tao family's divine hall a thousand meters away and responded with, “Tao Zhengtian, I still can't break through your divine hall today, so it ends here. However, this by no means resolves the enmity between your Tao family and my Turtle clan. When I gain the power that can break through the divine hall, the experts of the Turtle clan will come visiting again.”

Chapter 1237: Emissary of the Heaven's Spirit Hall

“Hmph, you sure put it lightly. The only way for you to smash through my divine hall is to break through to the 17th Star and become an emperor. Ruler of the Turtle clan, I must admit that I’ve underestimated the strength of your clan, but it’s impossible for you to become an emperor,” Tao Zhengtian’s icy-cold voice reverberated from the divine hall. It was filled with scorn. How could reaching the level of emperors be that easy? Even Tao Zhengtian, who was about to become a hall elder, did not yearn for such a level of strength.

Jian Chen sneered, “It’s not up to you to decide whether I can become an emperor or not. The next time I visit your Tao family will be the day I smash your divine hall.” With that, Jian Chen controlled the divine hall and flew away. He picked up the elders of the Turtle clan, who were hiding several dozen kilometers away, and returned to the clan.

Jian Chen knew that Tao Zhengtian possessed a divine hall, so wiping out the Tao family was impossible. He still was not in possession of the power to destroy divine halls. What he did today was to collect some of the debt the Tao family owed the Turtle clan and to make the alliance pay a certain price for the disaster they had caused several days ago.

The divine hall vanished into the horizon with the experts of the Turtle clan. Only after confirming that they would not return did Tao Zhengtian put away his divine hall. However, only the five Saint Kings who had managed to survive left the divine hall. Tao Zhengtian dared not let out the clansmen who had entered, afraid that Jian Chen would take revenge on them.

Tao Zhengtian silently hovered in the air with the four other experts as they stared at the land of the Tao family that had been

reduced to ruins. They were all gloomy and their emotions were heavy.

The corpses of the people from the Tao family were littered everywhere in the messy ruins. These people had all died from the great ripples of battle that had appeared in the battle between the Saint Kings, and among the corpses were close to ten Saint Rulers.

Tao Zhengtian slowly glanced over the ruins as his face darkened. His hands creaked from how hard he clenched them as flames of fury burned within him along with deep regret.

His clan had lost far too much during that battle. Over half of the clansmen had died and barely any elites were left. Even two-thirds of the Saint Rulers had died along with Tao Lin, who was a Saint King.

Compared to the Tao family, the losses of the Turtle clan were nothing. After all, their core power still existed.

“We judged the Turtle clan’s strength incorrectly. We never thought that they were actually so powerful. The Turtle clan will not just let this matter go like this. My Taiyi clan does not have a divine hall. Tao Zhengtian, I need to return to my clan immediately and find a way to avoid the revenge of the Turtle clan,” Tai Tongyi informed him with a heavy voice.

“I must immediately return to sort this out as well, or the Turtle clan can easily wipe out my Kai’en clan with the strength they’ve displayed,” said the ancestor of the Kai’en clan. His face was rather pale, and he felt extremely regretful over what he had taken part in. If he had known that the Turtle clan was this powerful before, he would have politely handed over the crystal mines he had taken from the Turtle clan.

“Sigh,” the ancestor of the Moxi clan exhaled as worry filled his face as well. He was constantly berating himself inside. Originally, his clan had nothing to do with the whole matter, but he was greedy for the resources the Turtle clan possessed, so he agreed to

the marriage with the Tao family, causing him to join with the Tao family to handle the Turtle clan.

“It’s all because of my greed,” the ancestor sighed inside. With everything how it was now, he knew that his clan had already become tied with the Tao family. Regret was already useless.

“Everyone, we’ve become complete enemies of the Turtle clan. Fleeing is completely useless. The Turtle clan will never let us go. Let’s fuse our clans together for now and protect ourselves with my divine hall. We can slowly develop a plan to deal with the Turtle clan later,” said Tao Zhengtian. He knew that the experts around him represented an extremely great force. They were a great resource for dealing with the Turtle clan, so he needed to make them stay no matter what.

After considering their choices, the other Saint Kings all nodded before returning to their clans to make some preparations. Afterward, they sent the elite forces of their clans as well as their direct descendants to the Tao family. All the clansmen who had not been sent to the Tao family were dismissed, making them hide themselves in various places around the sea realm. It was no longer their problem if the people of the Turtle clan decided to hunt them down or not.

A huge, majestic divine hall stood quietly in the very center of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall’s territory. The divine hall was a supreme existence within the land because it was where the ruler resided.

At this moment, an illusionary, middle-aged man sat on a throne in the highest, most well-decorated room of the hall. He was an image projected by a powerful soul and not the person himself. A capable old man knelt beneath him.

“Hall master, I have returned from investigating things on the Tian Yuan Continent. That person’s name is Jian Chen, and he is extremely well-known on the Tian Yuan Continent. He is an unprecedented prodigy, having reached Saint Ruler in less than

fifty years of cultivation. In the end, because of matters due to the ancient beast god, he suffered the pursuit of the emperors from the Beast God Continent, which was why he hid in the sea realm. During that time, he assisted the Dare tribe in dealing with the Menghuang tribe and happened to slay the emissary of the Serpent God Hall who was in possession of the Abyssal Crystal. He obtained the crystal from there and fled into the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. He then ended up with the ruler's Qi of the Turtle clan for some unknown reason and becoming their ruler."

The illusionary man on the throne frowned slightly. Although the Winged Tiger God was an ancient beast god that could possibly surpass Saint Emperor, all of it had nothing to do with the sea realm. What truly intrigued him was how Jian Chen possessed the ruler's Qi of the Turtle clan when he was clearly a human.

The old man continued, "I've just received recent news that Jian Chen has been appearing on the Tian Yuan Continent from time to time, and his strength has increased to the level of a Saint King. However, he also appears from time to time in the sea realm and has even ventured into the dangerous divine realm. However, the barrier that guards the sea realm only allows outsiders that are below Saint King to enter. Once they reach Saint King, their entry will be denied after they leave, but this Jian Chen seems to be able to pass through it at will, as if the barrier's restriction of strength is completely useless against him.

"I originally believed that the Jian Chen who had appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent and the ruler of the Turtle clan were two different people, but when I had analyzed when Jian Chen and the ruler of the Turtle clan appeared and disappeared, they matched up perfectly, to my surprise. Everytime Jian Chen appears on the Tian Yuan Continent, the ruler of the Turtle clan would vanish and vice versa. Even more importantly, Jian Chen's increases in strength actually match up perfectly with the ruler of the Turtle clan. When Jian Chen sought refuge in the sea realm, he was just a

Saint Ruler, and the ruler back then was the same. Afterward, the Jian Chen from the Tian Yuan Continent reached Saint King, and the ruler of the Turtle clan mirrored the action closely. This is why I suspect the two of them to be the same person.”

The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall deeply smiled and said, “Other than that, even his name and appearance is the exact same. There’s no need for any more guessing. They’re definitely the same person. If I’ve guessed correctly, the ruler’s Qi that’s appeared on Jian Chen for no reason should explain why he can freely pass through the barrier of the sea realm.”

The old man knelt on the ground courteously as he remained silent.

The hall master waved his hand, “You are dismissed, and send an emissary to the Turtle clan in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. Tell him that I have invited him to my Heaven’s Spirit Hall as a guest.”

“Yes, hall master!”

...

In the blink of an eye, five days had passed since the battle of the Turtle clan and the Tao family. During those five days, Jian Chen lead a group of experts from the Turtle clan to visit all the clans that had allied themselves with the Tao family. Jian Chen ruthlessly wiped out the upper echelon, elites and direct descendants of the clans that had taken part in the attack against the Turtle clan, leaving behind a few innocent mercenaries and servants who were free to go.

Not only did the Turtle clan take back all the crystal mines they had lost several days ago, they even obtained a large number of crystal coins and valuable items from these clans. Other than the large clans that the four Saint Kings belonged to, which were cleared out, all the other clans and organizations either dispersed or were wiped out. Their names completely disappeared from the

sea realm.

Even the great Moxi clan was reduced to an empty shell. All the items that could be taken away were taken away while the direct descendants and the upper echelon had completely vanished. All that was left was a few people of lower statuses.

Jian Chen knew that the Moxi clan and the three other clans had abandoned the bases that they had erected with much effort. They had all lead their experts and elites to join up with the Tao family.

Jian Chen did not really care in regard to this. He could not wipe out the Tao family right now, so it was nothing even if he let them exist for a few more days. Once he obtained the power to destroy the divine hall of the Tao family, he would completely finish resolving their enmity.

The battle between the Turtle clan and Tao family had already swept through the entire territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. All the people were shocked by the Turtle clan's strength. At the same time, all the great clans within the territory began to deeply fear them.

On this day, Jian Chen was discussing the future developments of the clan with the elders of the Turtle clan. A guard suddenly ran in and dropped to one knee, "Ruler, the Heaven's Spirit Hall has sent an emissary. He has said that he was sent by their hall master. The hall master wants to meet the ruler!"

Chapter 1238: Houston Becomes a Saint Emperor

“What? The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall has sent an emissary?” Jian Chen was stunned by the guard’s report. The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall was one of the three rulers of the sea realm. He was a Saint Emperor, so why would someone as great as him send an emissary to the Turtle clan as well as say that he wanted to see him. Jian Chen did not have any connections with the hall master.

“Invite the emissary into the the guest room,” Jian Chen said to the guard after thinking a little.

The guard left as ordered while Jian Chen put his meeting with the elders on hold. He then made his way to the guest room.

The emissary was already waiting in the guest room. There were a total of three people, and the leading person was an ordinary-looking old man. He was dressed in a simple fashion while his eyes shone with gleams of light from time to time.

Two extremely burly men in tight robes stood behind the old man. Their uncovered, thick arms would flicker with weak, blue light from time to time. Both of them possessed deep-blue skin.

Jian Chen was slightly surprised when he glanced over the three of them. He could tell with a single glance that the seated old man was a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King while the two middle-aged men behind him were Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers.

“The emissary sent by the Heaven’s Spirit Hall is a Saint King and his followers are Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. What extravagance,” Jian Chen thought inside.

The emissary immediately stood from his seat when he saw Jian Chen. He clasped his hands at Jian Chen with a smile, “I am Hu Bai, and I greet the ruler of the Turtle clan!”

“You are far too polite, emissary Hu Bai. Please sit,” Jian Chen politely replied with a smile before sitting opposite of Hu Bai. He asked for his well being out of politeness before approaching the main topic, “May I ask why you’ve come from so far away to my Turtle clan?”

The Sea Goddess Hall, Heaven’s Spirit Hall, and Serpent God Hall had an agreement. All members of the halls were not allowed to trespass each other’s territory without explicit permission. Although Hu Bai belonged to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, he had come to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall as an emissary. As long as he did not cause trouble here, he would obviously be able to pass through smoothly.

“Ruler, I’ve come under the orders of the great hall master to pass on a message. The great hall master has personally invited the ruler to our Heaven’s Spirit Hall as a guest. Ruler, so...” Hu Bai said amicably as gave a positive smile. He was very polite.

Jian Chen frowned slightly. He had no ties with the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. He had even visited the Heaven’s Spirit Hall to cause trouble once, but it was resolved when a hall elder of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall told Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas to follow him. He could not agree no matter what if the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall wanted him to visit. This was because he was only safe in the Sea Goddess Hall among the three territories.

Jian Chen immediately displayed a slightly troubled expression when he thought up to there. He said, “Emissary Hu Bai, please help me bring back a message to your esteemed hall master. My clan has undergone conflict with the Tao family recently and we are suffering from significant losses, so I still have many matters to deal with. I really can’t make the time, but if I really am able in the future, I will definitely pay a visit to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.” Jian Chen really meant it when he said he would pay a visit, but that would only be once he was powerful enough to deal with Saint Emperors. At that time, he would definitely pay a visit to the

Heaven's Spirit Hall and the Serpent God Hall, the Serpent God Hall in particular. He had yet to clear his debt from back then with them.

The emissary had obviously heard of the news between the Turtle clan and the Tao family's alliance, so he did not doubt what Jian Chen had said. Also, he was unsure what the connection between the hall master and Jian Chen was, so he dared not to do anything that could offend Jian Chen. As a result, he stood up with a smile and clasped his hands, "Sure, sure. The Turtle clan has just gone through a battle, so there are obviously countless miscellaneous matters to deal with. Ruler, I've already delivered the message, so my mission is complete. I should return, so I'll stop wasting the ruler's precious time. Farewell!"

"Farewell!" Jian Chen also stood up and saw Hu Bai off personally. He then continues the meeting with the Turtle clan discussing the future developments.

After the meeting, Jian Chen went nowhere. He passed down images of the materials needed for the Azulet swords to people so they could search the entire sea realm before entering seclusion himself. He continued to work hard on absorbing the almost-invalid monster cores to increase his strength while he waited for the arrival of the worldly ebb.

Two days later, Hu Bai reported what Jian Chen had said to the hall master without missing a single detail in the gigantic divine hall of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

The hall master remained as a projection of the soul. After listening to Hu Bai's report, he frowned slightly and dismissed Hu Bai with a wave of his hand. He mumbled to himself, "The ruler of the Turtle clan has actually made up an excuse against me. Looks like inviting him over really will be quite difficult. Do I have to visit him personally?"

With that, the hall master sank deep into thought. He remained

silent for quite some time.

An old man in hemp clothing currently sat in a cave within a mountain in a huge, desolate mountain range on the Tian Yuan Continent. A dense red mist permeated his surroundings, and it was sticky like blood. It would pulse from time to time like a heart, churning violently at other times as if a dragon was stirring.

The old man was Houston. After obtaining the Empyrean Demon Orb from Jian Chen, he had left Longevity Valley and found a desolate mountain range with scarce energy of the world to enter seclusion. He was trying to break through to Saint Emperor.

At this moment, the red mist around Houston came to a sudden stop, as if the beating heart had come to a halt. It all stopped moving.

However, this only lasted for several seconds. Suddenly, a terrifying presence that seemed to be enough to destroy the surroundings began to radiate from him. The presence was extremely powerful and destroyed the cave. The entire mountain cracked open as countless pieces of rock flew in all directions.

Houston felt nothing. He sat unmoving like a mountain, floating in the air unaffected by gravity. Wild wind whistled past, but it could not blow him away. Meanwhile, his terrifying presence engulfed the entire mountain range.

An even stickier blood-red mist radiated from Houston's body before turning into a tornado that quickly revolved around him. As it spun, the dense and sticky mist would rapidly grow deeper in color and became more consolidated. It was taking a qualitative leap bit by bit at a visible rate.

A mass of colorful clouds had already appeared in the sky that was originally a deep blue. The clouds actually contained nine colors. They were the nine-colored rainbow clouds that rarely ever appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent.

With the mountain range as its center, the clouds expanded silently in all directions at an unbelievable rate. In just half a minute, the clouds enveloped the entire continent.

At that moment, everyone across the continent stopped what they were doing. They looked at the sky in curiosity, staring at the silent, colorful clouds in the sky. Very few people knew what was happening.

In the various cities on the Tian Yuan Continent, both the hurried or feasting mercenaries and merchants were standing on the street without any exceptions. They all pointed at the nine-colored rainbow clouds and discussed them. No one knew what was happening.

However, different rumors appeared in every place very soon.

Some people said that the nine-colored clouds were an omen of great fortune. The continent was about to change and be united by a powerful empire or organization, creating a whole new empire...

There were some other people who said that a spiritual item of the world or some great treasure was about to come into existence with the nine-colored clouds...

There were even others who said that the clouds were an omen of disaster, that an unprecedented calamity was about to happen to the Tian Yuan Continent, bad enough to destroy the world.

All the Saint Rulers and Saint Kings who stayed in the miniature world within Mercenary City received the news. They made their way out as soon as possible and raised their heads at the sky, staring blankly.

The people with the lowest standings on the continent had no idea what the rainbow clouds meant. However, the meaning behind the clouds was no secret to a few Saint Rulers and knowledgeable Heaven Saint Masters.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, all the Heaven Saint Masters who

broke through to Saint Ruler would produce rainbow clouds. However, the area covered would be tiny and there would only be five colors.

Rainbow clouds would also appear when reaching Saint King. The colors would increase to seven and cover an even larger area.

If a Saint King broke through to Saint Emperor, nine-colored lights on clouds would descend from the sky, enveloping the entire continent.

The Saint Rulers and Saint Kings in Mercenary City all knew from the nine-colored clouds that a second Saint Emperor would be appearing after the path lord of carnal desires on the Tian Yuan Continent.

“Who is it? Just who has become a Saint Emperor?” A Saint King elder hovered above Mercenary City and wondered in excitement while staring at the nine-colored clouds. His voice trembled and contained unhideable envy and yearning.

“Someone has actually broken through the last step to become a Saint Emperor in this age that lacks Saint Emperors. He must be someone extremely outstanding. I just wonder who he is. Is he great elder Tian Jian or a member of the protector clans?” Another Saint King asked with mixed emotions in Mercenary City.

Chapter 1239: Congratulations From Everywhere

“Great elder Tian Jian has reached the Great Perfection of Saint King for many years now, but he has never been able to overcome the final barrier. He’s now approaching the end of his life with only a hundred years left. Just a while ago, great elder Tian Jian suddenly stepped down from his position and left Mercenary City in search of a breakthrough to Saint Emperor, yet the nine-colored rainbow clouds have descended now. This is the sign that someone has reached Saint Emperor. Is it really great elder Tian Jian?” The speaker was a ruddy old man. He used to be the second elder of Mercenary City, but after Tian Jian stepped down, he was elevated to grand elder. He was now the most authoritative person in the city, possessing strength at the Ninth Heavenly Layer and was not too far from reaching Great Perfection.

Meanwhile, Tian Jian became a great elder of Mercenary City after having resigned from his post.

“Great elder Tian Jian has only left the city recently. I don’t think he’s broken through to Saint Emperor is such a short amount of time,” said a red-robed, middle-aged man. He was a Saint King elder of the city.

“The number of Saint Kings currently at Great Perfection on the continent can be counted on fingers. Even if we include those independent cultivators who spend all their time hidden away in the mountains, there’s less than twenty. As for great elder Tian Jian, his talent is extremely great, and he’s read the cultivation experiences and knowledge of many Saint Emperor predecessors of Mercenary City. It’s extremely likely for him to reach Saint Emperor. He might have left the city in such a manner to find something to trigger his breakthrough,” said a skinny, extremely ordinary-looking Saint King elder. He felt unhideable admiration

for Tian Jian.

At this moment, the new grand elder said, “Alright, let’s stop guessing here. In a while, once the person who’s breaking through completely consolidates his cultivation, it will lead to a pulsing of the mysteries of the world that will spread across the entire continent. All we need to do is find the epicenter of the pulsing and then we’ll know who’s broken through.”

The nine-colored clouds had enveloped the entire continent. Although the sight had caused a great commotion as well as some fear among the weaker people of the continent, the matter influenced all the knowledgeable Saint Rulers and Saint Kings the most. All the Saint Kings on the continent struggled to maintain their calm as they all stared at the colorful clouds in excitement. Extremely great envy and yearning poured from their gazes. They were all curious to know just who had advanced.

Ten thousand kilometers away from the City of God, a wooden hut stood alone on the highest peak of the mountain range. The wind whistled wildly there, producing sounds like sobs, but it could not sway the wooden hut at all.

At this moment, Hao Wu was standing with his arms crossed outside the hut. He stared at the clouds that had enveloped the entire world in interest as he mumbled, “Someone’s finally broken through to Saint Emperor on the continent again.” Hao Wu’s eyes twinkled, revealing a sliver of envy and yearning as well. The realm of Saint Emperors was an irresistible enticement to all Saint Kings.

However, he seemed to think of something soon afterward. The yearning in his eyes disappeared. It was replaced by a sliver of loneliness and deep sorrow. He turned around and entered the wooden hut, sitting next to the bed as he held Zaar Caiyun’s white hand. He emotionally said, “I don’t wish to reach Saint Emperor in this life. If only Caiyun could wake up sooner.”

Zaar Caiyun's situation had been caused by her attempted suicide. She had harmed her soul and sealed herself off, which had not left an injury of the body. As a result, Hao Wu could do nothing since injuries of the soul were the most difficult to deal with.

The nine-colored clouds covered the sky for half a day before a powerful pulse of the mysteries of the world suddenly appeared, rapidly expanding into the distance.

The pulsing was at the level of a Saint Emperor and originated from where the person breaking through was. It also symbolized a successful break through to Saint Emperor.

"I know where it is now. Let's go take a look." The grand elder of Mercenary City called on a group of people and immediately ripped open a Space Gate before hurrying away with everyone.

"We finally know where that person is. Let's go and see just who has broken through!" Other than the Changyang clan that had been sealed up, all the Saint Kings from the nine other clans moved out, heading in the direction of the pulsing together.

In this current era, breaking through to Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent was a huge matter. Thus, the identity of the person was extremely important to the continent. His affiliations could affect the future of the continent to a certain degree. If he was affiliated with the good, it would obviously be something worth celebrating over for the continent, but if he was bad, it could lead to a disaster on the Continent.

All the Saint Kings in the three great empires, in the ancient clans, and the ones scattered across the continent had ripped open a Space Gate and hurried over the moment the pulse reached them, including Changyang Zu Xiao at the Changyang clan and Changyang Zu Yunxiao, who was watching over the royal palace of the Gesun Kingdom.

Houston remained hovering in the air above the desolate mountain range. The blood-red mist around him had completely

disappeared into his body while he radiated with a vast presence. Just the mere presence that he gave off from time to time was enough to make the surrounding space violently shake. It was extremely powerful.

When Houston sensed the great powers brought on from breaking through to Saint Emperor, he could not help but sigh emotionally inside. The power of a Saint Emperor was incomparable to Saint Kings at Great Perfection. Even though he had just broken through, he felt like the current powers he possessed were more than enough to squash a Saint King at Great Perfection to death with ease.

He had learned many shocking secrets from within the Empyrean Demon Orb after breaking through to Saint Emperor, because he could see an even larger world through the orb.

“Jian Chen has given me an overwhelming fortune. Saint Emperor is only the beginning of cultivation. The path in the future is still long,” Houston thought. Reaching Saint Emperor was something worth being happy over, but Houston remained very calm.

The surrounding space suddenly began to pulse as Space Gate after Space Gate appeared. Saint Kings emerged from all of them, and without any exception, all of the Saint Kings had erased their presences. They appeared like ordinary people, and even the Saint Kings from the protector clans and Mercenary City were like that.

In just a few short seconds, over two hundred Saint Kings had gathered in the space that had been empty before. All of them focused their gazes on Houston as soon as they emerged from their Space Gates, no longer able to shift their attention away. All of them understood extremely well that a true Saint Emperor sat before them from the terrifying presence Houston gave off from time to time.

“Houston, I never thought that you’d reach Saint Emperor,” the

grand elder of Mercenary City sighed in surprise. He had thought about the people who could have become Saint Emperors earlier, but he definitely did not think that it would be an assassin. After all, the changes from a thousand years ago had greatly affected Houston.

However, the grand elder of Mercenary City also felt rather disappointed after confirming who it was. It was actually not great elder Tian Jian.

“Congratulations, sect master Houston, for reaching Saint Emperor and reaching the apex of the Tian Yuan Continent. A second Saint Emperor has finally appeared on our Tian Yuan Continent after the path lord of carnal desires.” The pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion congratulated Houston first with a smile.

“Congratulations, sect master Houston...”

Afterward, all the Saint Kings arrived in front of him and congratulated him. Every single one of them bore smiles and spoke in a polite tone. In this era that lacked Saint Emperors, even the protector clans with deep heritages were unwilling to offend them so easily.

“Former sect master, y-you’ve really become a Saint Emperor?” An excited voice rang out from behind everyone. The vice sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Jiang Wang pushed his way to the front as he excitedly looked at Houston.

Jiang Wang’s excitement had peaked after learning that it was Houston who had become a Saint Emperor.

Houston finally opened his eyes at this moment. He first nodded at Jiang Wang before clasping his hands at the surroundings, “I thank you all for your congratulations.” Houston spoke with an extremely calm voice, without any joy or excitement that he should possessed after reaching Saint Emperor.

“Houston has already become a glorious Saint Emperor, having become one of the only two of our continent, yet he’s still able to remain so calm. Just this has already surpassed all of us present. No wonder it was Houston who reached Saint Emperor. So his mental state has already reached a level far beyond us,” praised a Saint King, which immediately lead to the agreement of many people.

Houston smiled nonchalantly with that and said, “There is never an end to cultivation. Saint Emperor is only just the beginning, so it’s nothing to be proud about. We must understand that there is always someone greater than us elsewhere. We have only been sheltered and ignorant in the past.”

All the people became stunned with what Houston had said. Saint Emperor was actually just the beginning? If it was someone else who had said that and not Houston, some of the people present would probably have begun cursing them.

“Everyone, I still have matters to attend to, so farewell.” Houston did not give a detailed explanation. He ripped open a Space Gate and left.

He had learned a lot of information from the Empyrean Demon Orb with his break through. Not only did he understand that Saint Emperor was just the beginning, he had learned some shockingly powerful secret techniques. Even as a Saint Emperor, he could only use these secret techniques with difficulty. Their levels had surpassed Saint Tier Battle Skills.

Three days later, Houston consolidated his cultivation as a Saint Emperor and also gained a basic grasp over some of the secret techniques. He then made his way to the Death Nest all by himself.

“It’s here. This is the Death Nest. Weird. Why is the Empyrean Demon Orb constantly telling me that the Death Nest is calling to me?” Houston stopped outside the Death Nest and became extremely curious.

Chapter 1240: Blood-refining Formation

The Death Nest was filled with yin Qi and churned with black mist. Vicious, terrifying faces of ghosts would be conjured from time to time and would roar at the outside world. They wanted to charge out of the Death Nest, but they were trapped inside by the huge barrier that surrounds the nest. No matter how powerful or terrifying the yin Qi of the Death Nest was, none of it could leak outside.

Houston had completely erased his presence as a Saint Emperor. He stood outside the Death Nest at ease with his hemp clothing and stared into the depths with a flickering light in his eyes. Some confusion and curiosity appeared in his eyes. In his head, the Empyrean Demon Orb's cries became more and more powerful, hurriedly urging Houston into the Death Nest, as if there was something that deeply attracted it inside.

Houston was unaffected by the Empyrean Demon Orb. He could suppress the callings, but he did not do that. He knew that the Empyrean Demon Orb orb was extraordinary and the reason why he could become a Saint Emperor.

Houston stood outside in thought for a while before taking a step into the Death Nest. He was now a Saint Emperor, and great confidence came along with his great strength. He believed that even if there was something truly dangerous in the Death Nest, he could still retreat safely.

The Death Nest was the same as before. It was teeming with vile energies while the black mist churned constantly. The slightly-spongy ground was scarlet red, as if it had been doused by blood. The scattered trees and vegetation swayed in the wind. They seemed like ghosts brandishing their teeth and claws, which made them seem sinister and terrifying.

Houston remained the same as before as he calmly walked

through the Death Nest. He maintained a straight path throughout, following the cries of the Empyrean Demon Orb as he headed straight for the depths.

At this moment, a icy presence churned out of the mist, silently entering Houston's head.

Although Houston had sensed it, he did not resist. He allowed the iciness to worm its way into his soul. He wanted to test the power of the icy presence.

However, Houston came to a halt the next moment. A sliver of surprise appeared on his face as he said, "This strand of iciness can actually be devoured by the Soul-devouring Force. It can assist the cultivation of Soul-devouring Force." Soul-devouring Force was also known as Baleful Yin Force. This was something he had learned from the Empyrean Demon Orb.

Before, Houston's cultivation method was a modified version of the Empyrean Demon Arts that came from the Empyrean Demon Orb. It had been modified by the Blood Demon Emperor and was an incomplete method, which was why Soul-devouring Force needed to be refined through slaughter and, thus, explained why it was a consumable. Now that Houston had obtained the complete cultivation method, all the energy within him had been transformed into Soul-devouring Force. Not only was it much more powerful than the Baleful Yin Force he had controlled before, he could create it without slaughter. All he needed to do was absorb the energy of the world and convert it through the Empyrean Demon Arts.

"No wonder the Empyrean Demon Orb wants me to come here. So the Death Nest is like a blessed land to those who practice the Empyrean Demon Arts." Houston understood the situation very quickly and immediately began to move faster and faster.

For both the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent, it was extremely difficult to increase a person's strength once they

reached Saint Emperor. Not only was this because of the absence of origin energy, but even the energy of the world was nowhere near as abundant as before. Very few people could reach the peak of Saint Emperor. Houston could already imagine that his strength would skyrocket in the future in a blessed place like the Death Nest.

Houston moved faster and faster. Although he seemed like he was taking a casual stroll, he would travel several kilometers with every step. Since he moved very quickly, he did not come across a single Saint Ruler vengeful spirit in the first zone, so he quickly arrived in the second zone.

In the second zone, the weakest vengeful spirits were Saint Kings. Before Houston could travel very far, he came across a Saint King vengeful spirit that attacked him from behind as silent as a shadow.

Houston did not slow down at all. With a flick of his finger, a red spark shot out and accurately landed on the vengeful spirit. This was Soul-devouring Force.

If it was before, Houston would have never used Soul-devouring Force so easily because it had been consumable and, hence, was extremely difficult to replenish. But after reaching Saint Emperor with the Emyrean Demon Arts, all the energy within him had been converted to Soul-devouring Force. To him, it was only an ordinary energy now and was extremely easily replenished, so he obviously did not mind using it.

The vengeful spirit was dissipated by the strand of Soul-devouring Force. It turned into a dark mist and was no longer able to reform.

As Houston moved, he suffered many attacks from Saint King vengeful spirits, but all of them were dissipated by him with a single strand of Soul-devouring Force without any exception, and they were unable to reform again.

Along the way, quite a lot the icy tendrils tried to attack Houston's soul, but they were all refined by his Soul-devouring Force and became a part of his energy.

Although the Death Nest was filled with danger, they formed no threat to him. He passed through the second zone very quickly and arrived in the third.

As soon as he stepped into the third zone, an extremely powerful iciness wrapped around Houston from all directions. In the third zone, even Saint Kings at Great Perfection needed to circulate their Saint Force to resist the energies with an energy barrier outside, but Houston did not protect himself in any way, shape, or form. He allowed the iciness to worm its way into his body and soul. There was not the slightest discomfort at all, and instead, he felt extremely comfortable.

This was because all the iciness that entered his body was converted into his own Soul-devouring Force. To Houston, who practiced the Empyrean Demon Arts, not only did the icy presence fail to harm him, it continuously strengthened him instead. It was like a dense energy of the world.

Up ahead, two huge demonic figures slowly appeared in the churning mist, charging toward Houston like shadows.

“Saint Emperor vengeful spirits!” Houston could tell the strength of the two figures with a single glance. They were powerful existences that stood at the same level as him. He immediately became serious, and with a flick of his finger, two powerful strands of Soul-devouring Force shot toward the two figures like swords.

The vengeful spirits did not know how to dodge, so they charged at the Soul-devouring Force. As soon as they came in contact with the energy, they began to tremble violently. Their blurry faces began to distort, indicating pain, and then their bodies quickly faded. In just a few seconds, the two vengeful spirits had disappeared, turning into dull, dark mist that dispersed into the

surroundings.

Meanwhile, since Houston's two strands of Soul-devouring Force were too powerful, they continued into the depths of the Death Nest without weakening at all after dissipating the two demonic figures. The churning black mist dissipated wherever they passed by.

"Can this Soul-devouring Force suppress these vengeful spirits?" Houston was slightly stunned. He was very surprised inside. Before, when he had killed the Saint Kings vengeful spirits, he did not discover this because of how much more powerful he was. Now that he was dealing with Saint Emperor vengeful spirits, the effectiveness of Soul-devouring Force was immediately displayed.

However, what Houston did not know was that the two strands of Soul-devouring Force he had used against the two vengeful spirits were slowly strengthening as they flew. All the black mist they passed by was absorbed by them, constantly strengthening the two strands.

The Soul-devouring Force moved extremely quickly, arriving in the very center of the third zone very soon. Afterward, they dissipated as if they had collided with an invisible wall.

At the same time, the entire place trembled slightly. At that moment, some minute changes seemed to happen to the Death Nest.

Houston could obviously sense the changes as well since the calling of the Empyrean Demon Orb became more and more powerful. This filled him with curiosity as he continued toward the depths.

Along the way, Houston came across Saint Emperor vengeful spirits from time to time, but his Soul-devouring Force was effective against them. No matter how many came, they posed no threat to him.

Without much longer, Houston arrived in the center of the third zone. He did not continue on, and instead, he stood around quietly as he constantly examined his surroundings. His brows slowly furrowed as he murmured, “There’s a formation hidden within the void here. I-it seems to be a formation recorded within the Empyrean Demon Orb, but it’s a little different at the same time.”

Houston sank into his thoughts. A while later, a gleam of light flashed through his eyes as extremely dense Soul-devouring Force began to radiate from him. It turned into a red mist which extended out. Gradually, the formation hidden in the void appeared in front of Houston.

As soon as it had appeared, it sucked away all of Houston’s Soul-devouring Force. The energy seemed to have triggered the formation, and it began to shine with dazzling red light before rotating quickly after absorbing the Soul-devouring Force.

Rumble! At the same time, heavy rumbles constantly rang through the Death Nest. The ground gently trembled as a hidden formation appeared on the ground. It was extremely large and expanded across the entire Death Nest.

“T-this seems to be the Blood-refined Formation recorded in the Empyrean Demon Orb, and it’s complete. How can a complete Blood-refining Formation appear here?” Houston immediately became shocked when he saw the formation appear on the ground.

Chapter 1241: Blood Servant of the Death Nest

“This Blood-refining Formation can refine the blood, flesh, and essence of people into Soul-devouring Force, but only those who practice the Empyrean Demon Arts can absorb Soul-devouring Force. Even if Saint Emperors come in contact with the Soul-devouring Force among the fighters of the Tian Yuan Continent, their souls would be corroded away, yet there’s actually a complete version of it in the Death Nest. Just who cast down this formation? Was it a Saint Emperor who was in possession of the Empyrean Demon Orb in the past?” Houston diligently thought while filled with doubts.

“No. There’s rumors from the ancient times that the strongest human, Mo Tianyun, had collected the corpses of a large number of experts who had fallen in battle and created the Death Nest. Was the Blood-refining Formation cast down by Mo Tianyun before? Did he also know the cultivation method in the Empyrean Demon Orb and practiced the Empyrean Demon Arts, which was why he also knew the Blood-refining Formation recorded in the Empyrean Demon Orb? Was he using the blood, flesh, and essence to refine Soul-devouring Force for his own cultivation?” Houston sank into his thoughts, but he shook his head soon after, “That can’t be possible. According to what I know, the energy used by Mo Tianyun was not Soul-devouring Force. He would not have practiced the Empyrean Demon Arts. Soul-devouring Force is more detrimental to him than beneficial.”

Suddenly, Houston became surprised once more. He cried out, “There seems to be another formation hidden within the Blood-refining Formation.” Houston began to carefully observe the hidden formation. All his knowledge regarding formations originated from the Empyrean Demon Orb. If he did not have this item, he would not have discovered the formations hidden there

even as a Saint Emperor.

A while later, Houston gasped. He recognized the other formation hidden within the Blood-refining Formation. It was one of the many formations recorded in the Emyrean Demon Orb. It was called the Emyrean Demon Mirage, an extremely great illusory formation.

Houston struggled to remain calm after he had discovered two formations recorded within the Emyrean Demon Orb within the Death Nest.

At this moment, the Death nest began to violently shake once more. A large swathe of sticky, red mist churned out from up ahead. Houston's expression immediately changed when he saw the mist because it was Soul-devouring Force that could be refined through the Emyrean Demon Arts. The Soul-devouring Force was several times more powerful than the Soul-devouring Force he could cultivate himself.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Muffled sounds reverberate through the blood mist. With every sound, the land shook. A hundred-meter-tall, blood-red skeleton was obscured within the mist. It was radiating powerful Soul-devouring Force from every single bone. The blood-red skeleton even gave off a powerful presence that was enough to cause the world to tremble.

"This is a Blood Servant, one that has surpassed Saint Emperor!" Houston exclaimed as he stared fixedly at the skeleton. Disbelief was written across his face. At the moment, he suddenly thought of the information he had learned from the Emyrean Demon Orb regarding Blood Servants.

Blood Servants were created with countless remains through the Emyrean Demon Orb before being nurtured with vile blood and essence. Its strength was equivalent to how long it had existed as well as the bones, vile blood, and essence that had been used to

create it.

A Blood Servant was the servant of practitioners of the Empyrean Demon Arts. There was a secret technique within the Empyrean Demon Orb to enslave them. They would not betray their masters, and they would follow every single command. They could be used to assist their masters in battle, and the Soul-devouring Force of the Blood Servants could be absorbed for cultivation as well.

The skeleton did not attack Houston and, instead, stood there blankly. It stared in Houston's direction with its empty eye sockets. It had already sensed an intruder, but the intruder was actually in possession of energy that originated from the same source as it, which was why it did not attack Houston.

Houston became extremely stern. Blood Servants could not form by themselves. He did not even need to think to know that such a powerful Blood Servant had appeared here due to some other person and that that person also knew the various secret techniques of the Empyrean Demon Orb.

But fortunately, Blood Servants would not attack other practitioners of the Empyrean Demon Arts before they had received orders from their master. Otherwise, even a Saint Emperor would only be able to flee before such a powerful Blood Servant, and they wouldn't necessarily be able to escape successfully.

Houston observed the Blood Servant and he became stunned, which was soon replaced by ravishing joy. He excitedly said, "I-it's actually a Blood Servant that hasn't taken on a master." Houston's eyes burned with desire. Without any hesitation. He immediately began to create the Blood Servant's Imprint. The Blood Servant's Imprint was one of the many secret techniques he had learned from the Empyrean Demon Orb. It was used specifically to enslave Blood Servants.

Within just a few seconds, Houston completed the imprint and

sent it out with a wave of his hand. It shot out with lighting-like speed and landed accurately between the eyebrows of the skeleton. However, nothing happened even after quite a while. None of the signs of enslavement recorded in the Empyrean Demon Orb appeared.

Houston became disappointed with this. He gently sighed and said, "I'm far too weak, so I can't subdue a Blood Servant that's surpassed Saint Emperor. Looks like I can only do this in the future. I wonder who has left behind such a powerful Blood Servant."

Houston no longer paid anymore attention to the Blood Servant. It was not like the Blood Servant would attack practitioners of the Empyrean Demon Arts by itself, so it would not affect him at all if he remained there.

Houston shifted his focus back onto the illusory formation hidden within the Blood-refining Formation. The illusions were extremely powerful. With Houston's current strength, he could not create them, nor could he destroy them. However, he knew the way in.

Houston still ended up entering the formation after hesitating slightly. He followed the method he had learned from the Empyrean Demon Orbs and made his way through the formation.

Houston was extremely cautious. He checked every single step several times and would only take a step after confirming that it was completely correct. He knew that he would end up trapped in the formation if he took a single wrong step, and it would be very difficult for him to escape.

After taking several hundred steps, Houston finally passed through the formation. At that moment, he felt his surroundings ripple as the landscape around him suddenly changed. He had already unknowingly arrived in an underground cavern.

The cavern was round, around thirty meters across. The entire

place was filled with dense Soul-devouring Force and a two-meter-long, square pool sat in the middle of the room. The pool was filled with blood-red liquid, which seemed just like blood.

When Houston's gaze fell on the pool of liquid, he immediately became extremely excited. His head began to violently beat in an uncontrollable manner. He could recognize what the liquid was with a single glance. It was Soul-devouring Force that had condensed into liquid because of the high density of Soul-devouring Force in the cavern.

"I understand now. All of the Soul-devouring Force produced by the Blood-refining Formation above was actually all stored here. This Death Nest is basically a holy land made for practitioners of the Empyrean Demon Arts. Although I'm still uncertain as to who made this place, the Soul-devouring Force here has already become so dense, and the Blood Servant up above has not taken on a master either. The expert who created this place must have died if he did not leave.

"If I cultivate here and absorb the Soul-devouring Force in the pool, my strength will definitely skyrocket. Whatever. I may have reached Saint Emperor already, but that's only the beginning of the path of cultivation. I'll devote myself to cultivating here over the next few days," Houston murmured before sitting down beside the small pool. He began to practice the Empyrean Demon Arts.

However, what he did not know was that when he had passed through the Empyrean Demon Mirage and was sent into the cavern by a strand of Spatial Force, the illusory formation had exploded apart with a boom.

In the surroundings, there were even more powerful and even more profound formations that Houston had not discovered. These formations were connected to the Empyrean Demon Mirage. The explosion of the illusory formation led to the self-destruction of the other formations at the same time.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The formations were very powerful. With a string of violent rumbles, the powerful ripples of energy released from the self-destruction of the formations made the entire Death Nest violently shake.

The formations that had exploded were extremely powerful trapping formations, which actually trapped the origin energy that had disappeared from the Tian Yuan Continent for countless years. Now that the origin energy was freed, it immediately dispersed into the surroundings, but the entire place was still enveloped by a formation and a barrier, so the energy was unable to break free no matter what.

An extremely powerful pulse appeared in the void. Another extremely vast formation appeared out of nowhere. If Jian Chen was present, he would definitely have been able to recognize the formation to be similar to the ancient teleportation formation he had seen in the divine hall of the Underworld Sect.

The only difference was that the formation in the Death Nest was even larger and even more profound than the one in the Underworld Sect.

At this moment, a violent gust of wind suddenly rose through the Death Nest. It sucked in all the origin energy from everywhere, causing it all to enter the huge formation in the end.

The formation immediately began to shine with bright white light as it slowly revolved in the empty air, creating an extremely powerful pulse of energy. However, it was obscured by the barrier and formation outside the Death Nest, such that outsiders could not sense it at all.

Everything was connected to the moment Houston passed through the illusory formation into the cavern and to the consecutive explosions and the appearance of the huge formation.

As soon as someone passed through the Empyrean Demon Mirage and was sent into the underground cavern by the Spatial Force, the other formations would be activated. The illusory formation's self-destruction would activate the trapping formations containing the origin energy, and the origin energy would then activate the huge teleportation formation in the air. This had all been planned by someone long ago.

Chapter 1242: Ning Shuang

The teleportation formation glowed with a brighter and brighter and more and more dazzling light, before finally turning into a ball of blinding white light. It shone like the sun, completely illuminating all of the Death Nest.

If it had been outside, the light from the formation would have been enough to turn night into day. The light was enough to engulf the entire continent, but it could only illuminate the entire Death Nest since it was obstructed by a formation and a barrier. Even if it constantly grew brighter, it was still unable to make it outside the Death Nest.

The space within the huge formation pulsed in an extremely unstable manner. It distorted violently as a blurry figure gradually appeared. At the very start, it was only a faint shadow, but it consolidated at a visible rate before turning into the real thing in just a few seconds in the end.

The white light from the formation gradually weakened before completely disappearing after a few seconds. The huge teleportation formation disappeared as well, having disappeared into the void again. The Death Nest also regained its gloominess as vile energies permeated the area and black mist churned, having returned to the way it was before. The only difference was that a person was now present in the air of the Death Nest.

The person hovered there silently. Not only did he give off no presence at all, he did not give off any signs of life. The dense yin Qi and grudges of the dead were unable to affect this person. Looking closely, the vile energies and black mist remained a constant meter away from this person. They were unable to approach the person, or dared not to approach in fact.

He was a middle-aged man in white robes. His eyes were profound and his appearance was striking. He seemed to be forty

years of age from his appearance. Although he did not give off any presence, he unwittingly seemed to overlook everything when he glanced around. This was an indifference toward everything.

If a person who had visited Mercenary City before saw this man, they would definitely discover that he was exactly the same as the sculpture of Mo Tianyun that stood in the center of the city. The only difference was that the sculpture of Mo Tianyun would give people the feeling that he was a drawn sword, revealing its edge to the world and that the world was beneath him. Meanwhile, the man in the Death Nest seemed much simpler.

The middle-aged man looked around as he slowly gazed over every single part of the world. The familiar landscape had deeply touched his heart with his deep memories, causing his eyes, which were like unfathomable wells, to tremble ever-so-slightly in an uncontrollable fashion despite showing no emotion after so many years. Even slivers of excitement had appeared in his deep eyes.

Suddenly, the man disappeared without any prior signs before silently reappearing in the cavern of Soul-devouring Force in the next moment. Houston did not sense his appearance at all as he cultivated beside the pool.

The middle-aged man arrived in front of Houston and examined him. He frowned slightly. At that moment, a blood-red light suddenly flew out from between Houston's eyebrows. It was a thumb-sized orb, the Empyrean Demon Orb that Jian Chen had given to Houston.

The orbs slowly floated to the middle-aged man. Its red light flickered between light and dark as it passed on strands of thought to the middle-aged man. It seemed to be extremely happy.

The middle-aged man stared at the Empyrean Demon Orb and said, "Empyrean Demon Orb, this person's talent is indeed decent, but it is nowhere near the level of a rare prodigy. Why have you chosen him as Ning Shuang's successor?"

The Empyrean Demon Orb seemed to be able to understand what the man was saying. It trembled slightly and quickly flickered with a red light. It passed on strands of thought and was filled with a feeling of being wronged. It seemed like a little girl who had been bullied.

The man became stunned before breaking into laughter, “So you met the Azulet sword spirits of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens, the leading sect of the nine great sects of the Immortals’ World, and you were personally handed over by their master. Although his talent is lacking, you feared the sword spirits and combined with his close connection to the master of the sword spirits, you chose him as Ning Shuang successor. That sure has surprised me. I never thought that you’d actually come across Jian Chen while hiding in the sea realm and be brought to the Tian Yuan Continent. The time we agreed on back then just happened to arrive as well, so you brought him here right after becoming a Saint Emperor.”

The Empyrean Demon Orb gave off another thought. It already possessed intelligence, but it could not speak. This was the only way it could communicate with others.

The middle-aged man slightly furrowed his eyebrows. After a moment of thought, he said, “Your thoughts aren’t too bad. Jian Chen’s already become the master of the Azulet sword spirits, and he practices the Chaotic Body, so he’ll definitely control the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens in the future and become a great expert. Meanwhile, the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens is one of the nine great sects of the Immortals’ World. They’re extremely powerful, so if you gain a foothold with Jian Chen through Ning Shuang’s successor, it’ll be a good thing for both Ning Shuang and her sect.

“However, Jian Chen practices the Chaotic Body. The resources he needs for cultivation are difficult to provide even for peak-level organizations. It’ll be extremely difficult for him to fully mature, and he’s in a lower world of the Saints’ World. Once he becomes

strong enough, he can only go up to the Saints' World and won't be able to return to the Immortals' World. Without the support of large organizations, Jian Chen can only search for his cultivation resources by himself, but Jian Chen's identity in the Saints' World is just far too sensitive. In the battle that year, the Immortal Exalt of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens slayed two Grand Primes with the Azulet swords and heavily injured the Grand Prime of the Ice Goddess Hall. There were countless others below Grand Prime who were felled by the Azulet swords, and the hatred of the Saints' World for him has already reached a bone-deep level. As a result, if Jian Chen's identity becomes publicly known in the Saints' World, it might even draw out a few Grand Primes who have remained hidden. Jian Chen will not be able to escape no matter what when he gets hunted down by Grand Primes. There will only be death for him.

“But what has surprised me is that Jian Chen is actually on good terms with a person of the warring gods. The people of the warring gods are born from the world, and they are born for battle. If they become Grand Primes in the future, they are invincible. Even the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt who had reached the limits of Immortal Exalt and was slightly more powerful than the Immortal Exalt of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens was slain by the Grand Prime of the warring gods. In the end, the Grand Prime of the warring gods was killed by the Grand Exalt of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens when he was heavily injured, yet Jian Chen is actually on good terms with a warring god despite being the successor of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens right now. This really is unbelievable.”

The middle-aged man paused after saying that. He then continued, “Empyrean Demon Orb, release Ning Shuang's soul.”

A speck of light, the size of a rice grain, flew out of the Empyrean Demon Orb. It glowed with faint light. This was someone's soul, but it was extremely heavily injured and weak, weak to the point where the person was permanently unconscious. The soul was also

near the stage of dispersing at any moment.

The middle-aged man's gaze immediately became gentle when he saw the tiny soul. He slowly extended his right hand to carefully wrap the weak soul with a gentle energy. He softly said, "Ning Shuang, after several hundred thousand years of searching, I've successfully gathered the souls of nine hundred and ninety-nine Radiant Godkings. I'll use their souls to create a Soul-nurturing Formation to nurture your soul."

A large number of specks of light suddenly surged from the man. There was exactly nine hundred ninety-nine of them. Every single speck represented the soul of a Radiant Godking. These souls had all been refined through a special method and were the size of a speck of dust. If it were not for the fact that they all flickered with a faint, white light, it would probably have been impossible to notice them with the naked eye.

The souls of the Radiant Godkings all flew toward Ning Shuang's soul under the man's control. He created a Soul-nurturing Formation and stuck them close to her soul. Under the effect of the formation, all the energy within the souls began to leak out as strands before being absorbed by Ning Shuang's soul.

After completing the Soul-nurturing Formation, the middle-aged man stared at Ning Shuan's soul with deep emotions. He said, "Ning Shuang, I've already arranged everything in the Saints' World. You will awaken soon." The man stared at Ning Shuang's soul for quite a while before allowing the Empyrean Demon Orb to take back her soul. Afterward, he silently disappeared silently while the Empyrean Demon Orb returned to Houston's sea of consciousness.

The middle-aged man returned to where the Death Nest was. He looked around at the gloomy place in mixed emotions as he gently sighed, "Your purpose has been fulfilled, so there's no more need for you to exist. It's time for you to end!" With that, the man extended his finger at the empty air a few times. Immediately, a

huge formation hidden within the void appeared and quickly began to revolve. The vile energy and churning mist in the Death Nest was all sucked into the formation before being converted into strands of pure Soul-devouring Force, which were then deposited into the pool underground.

All the Saint Ruler, Saint King, and Saint Emperor vengeful spirits collapsed one after another, turning into black mist as they were sucked away by the formation. They were also refined into pure strands of Soul-devouring Force.

The middle-aged man left the Death Nest and silently arrived in Mercenary City, as if he had teleported. He hovered in the air as he looked at the city below. He did not hide himself, but no one discovered his existence.

“Sigh, Xiao Ling is far too lazy. It’s been so long and she’s only reached Returnance. One of the two seals I had set down back then has been broken through as well. Looks like the remaining seal won’t be able to last much longer either.” With that, the middle-aged man’s presence expanded. Without alarming Xiao Ling, it easily passed through the tunnel deep below Mercenary City and entered the Saints’ World.

Chapter 1243: Mo Tianyun

A while later, a sliver of surprise appeared in the middle-aged man's eyes. He sighed in astonishment, "An unprecedented genius has appeared in the World of Forsaken Saints as well. He possesses such strength at his young age. He probably hasn't even cultivated for a thousand years. However, they are a group of pitiful people, and I can't interfere with this matter right now either. I hope they don't make too great of a mess for the Tian Yuan Continent in the future."

The middle-aged man withdrew his presence and glanced at Mercenary City again before vanishing without any signs. When he appeared again, he had arrived among the mountains of the tungsten alloy mine near Flame City. He hovered several hundred meters in the air as he gazed down with an odd expression. He murmured, "I never thought that this place would give birth to the origin energy of a metallic spirit and that its innate talent and room for growth is greater than Xiao Ling. However, at this rate, the spirit still needs quite some time. Oh well, I'll give him a fortune."

With that, the middle-aged man left. The next moment, he had traversed an extremely great distance, appearing in the Turtle clan of the sea realm. He appeared silently in front of Jian Chen, who was cultivating with two monster cores in his hand. He had completely bypassed the barrier of the Sea race.

The middle-aged man gently extended a finger toward Jian Chen and a droplet of essence blood immediately flew out of Jian Chen's chest. It hovered above the tip of his finger while Jian Chen felt nothing.

Just when he was about to leave, he suddenly produced an interjection of surprise. He looked at the area between Jian Chen's eyebrows in interest and said, "The soul I had left at the Yinyang Saint Rock was just far too weak last time, so I was unable to probe

deeply. I never thought that Jian Chen had obtained this item as well. Does that mean he can control Radiant Saint Force? Radiant Saint Force is an extremely powerful and wondrous energy, but it's been heavily weakened on the Tian Yuan Continent such that its strength cannot be displayed at all. If Jian Chen can use Radiant Saint Force, then he'll have one extra thing to protect himself with."

The middle-aged man transformed into a strand of mist and drifted into Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. He entered the artifact space effortlessly and reformed inside. However, even the artifact spirit who possessed absolute control in the space failed to sense his arrival.

The middle-aged man arrived at the only place within the space that was not controlled by the artifact spirit. A powerful formation sealed away the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force there and would only be unsealed once every fifty years, releasing the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force to give Radiant Saint Masters the chance at progressing to Class 7.

He examined the formation and mumbled to himself, "I wonder who put this formation here. He actually put a powerful formation that only those at Godhood can break through in a treasure that isn't even at the level of saint artifacts. However, this formation cannot be forcefully destroyed, or it'll destroy this treasure as well." The middle-aged man flicked his finger and an extremely pure strand of energy shot out, striking the formation with lightning-like speed and disappearing into it. From within, it began to break down the formation part by part. He then silently left the artifact space before returning to the air above the tungsten alloy mine near Flame City.

"I shall bequeath you with a strand of origin energy to speed up your growth," the man said softly before pointing out. He sent another strand of extremely pure energy which shot through the tough tungsten alloy like a hot knife through butter, reaching the

deep underground. Before the strand of energy, the tough tungsten alloy was as fragile as rice paper and was easily punched through.

Finally, the energy passed through the various obstructions and fused with the origin energy of the metallic spirit hiding deep underground. Immediately, the ball of golden liquid wriggled slightly before solidifying at a visible rate.

Up above, the middle-aged man flicked out the droplet of blood he had obtained from Jian Chen. It followed the passage carved out by the strand of energy and fused with the metallic spirit.

In the Ice Goddess Hall, the silver-armored protector Shui and the snow-white Changyang Mingyue stood in front of a pool that radiated with an icy presence. The water in the pool was transparent, but even while faced with a great coldness that could even freeze Saint Kings, the water remained liquid and did not freeze.

Three fist-sized crystals floated on the surface of the pool at the very center and gave off an icy feeling.

“Your majesty, each Icesoul takes a million years to form. In the three million years I have spent here, I have finally waited until three Icesouls have matured. All that it needs is a few months and the coldness within the Icesouls will completely drain away and turn into extremely pure energy. At that time, as soon as your majesty’s Profound Ice Body fully matures, your majesty can directly absorb these three Icesouls to recover your majesty’s strength. Although the Icesouls have only managed to gather enough energy to be on par to ten-thousand-year-old Icesouls in a million years due to the energy in this world, they should still be able to recover some of your majesty’s power. Afterward, I will be able to take your majesty back and use Icesouls of higher grades to fully recover your majesty’s former strength,” said protector Shui.

“Protector Shui, can anyone absorb the energy within the

Icesouls once the coldness has completely transformed into pure energy?” Changyang Mingyue asked. Her voice contained a sliver of eagerness and anticipation.

“Yes, that’s true,” replied protector Shui.

Changyang Mingyue immediately beamed in happiness. She said, “That’s fantastic. I was worried that the coldness within the Icesouls was too extreme and that my brother couldn’t absorb the energy inside, but now I don’t have to worry at all.”

Protector Shui was surprised inside with what Changyang Mingyue had said. She turned toward Changyang Mingyue in disbelief and hurriedly asked, “Your majesty, do you intend on giving an Icesoul to your brother?”

Changyang Mingyue seriously nodded, “There’s three anyway. I’ll use two for myself, so what’s wrong with giving my brother one? An Icesoul should increase my brother’s strength by a lot.”

“No, that cannot happen. Your majesty, I’ve prepared these three Icesouls for you specifically. Every single one is created through great difficulty. Your majesty can only use them on yourself and not on anyone else.” Protector Shui said in a heavy voice.

A sliver of cunning light appeared in Changyang Mingyue’s eyes. She then sternly looked at protector Shui. She asked, “Protector Shui, do these three Icesoul belong to me?”

“These Icesouls were prepared specifically for your majesty, for when your majesty recovers her strength, so they obviously belong to your majesty. Everything in the Ice Goddess Hall belongs to your majesty, in fact,” protector Shui politely responded.

“Since they belong to me, I obviously have the right to distribute them. My brother’s provoked so many people right now, so how can I endure him being trampled over by so many experts as an older sister? Protector Shui, I know you’re thinking about me, but you don’t need to say anything else about this. I’ve already made

up my mind to gift my brother one of these Icesouls so he can increase his strength as soon as possible. Once he becomes a Saint Emperor, the experts from the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent won't be able to bully him," replied Changyang Mingyue sternly. Her voice was firm, clearly having made up her mind already.

"Sigh," protector Shui gently exhaled. She knew that her majesty had already made up her mind, and nothing she did could change it. She just cared far too much for her brother.

"Protector Shui, I'll go cultivate first and make my Profound Ice Body mature faster. If my brother or mother comes, you must contact me as soon as possible." With that, Changyang Mingyue left the room with the pool.

Protector Shui remained by the pool as she stared at the three Icesouls floating in it. She murmured, "Her majesty's closeness to Jian Chen has greatly exceeded what I've expected, and her majesty even wants to give him an Icesoul now. These three Icesouls are far too important to her majesty, so I can't let that happen no matter what. I need to stop it.

"If I prevent Jian Chen from seeing her majesty, her majesty will definitely go looking for him on the Tian Yuan Continent after her body matures with how much she cares for him, so she'll still end up giving away the Icesoul. Jian Chen is the successor of the Sword Sect of Violent Heavens, and before she recovers her memory, she will not know what happened back then. Her majesty will become enemies with Jian Chen sooner or later. If she gives him an Icesoul, that would be digging her own grave and strengthening her opponents."

A gleam of light flickered through protector Shui's eyes and heavy killing intent flashed through soon after. She heavily said, "Looks like I can only lay my hands on Jian Chen earlier to prevent this."

At this moment, protector Shui violently jerked. She suddenly stared outside the divine hall as her gaze became extremely sharp at that moment. Some shock was also present in her eyes. She suddenly vanished from beside the pool and immediately appeared outside the divine hall. She stood on the roof as she gazed up ahead with sharp eyes.

A white-robed, middle-aged man currently hovered a hundred meters in front of her. He did not give off any presence, nor did he give off any signs of life. He stood there with his arms crossed as he stared at the protector at ease.

“Just who are you?” Protector Shui growled as her heart churned inside.

The man nonchalantly smiled and indifferently said, “You may have never left this place, but you’ve secretly spied on me more than once in the past. You basically watched everything I did, so have you forgotten who I am so quickly?”

“Mo Tianyun, of course this king remembers you. I am asking about what your true identity is. Didn’t you disappear with that sacred beast back then? Why have you suddenly appeared in this world again after so many years?” Protector Shui kept her eyes trained on Mo Tianyun. She already knew that she had been mistaken in the past. She had been tricked by Mo Tianyun without noticing at all.

Chapter 1244: Disaster of the Ice Goddess Hall

“My true identity is not important, and I obviously have methods to return here,” Mo Tianyun faintly smiled. He was very much ease. He caught a glance of the three destroyed saint artifacts below and with a gentle wave of his hand, the destroyed pieces immediately flew over, still covered in a thin layer of frost. They hovered by his side.

Protector Shui’s gaze was very sharp as she stared unblinkingly at Mo Tianyun. She did not stop what he was doing, however.

Mo Tianyun indifferently glanced over the three ruined saint artifacts. The thin layer of frost melted at a visible rate before dripping from the weapons. However, when the water droplets struck the freezing surface of ice below, they did not refreeze. Instead, they melted deep holes through the tough ice, as if they contained a terrifying amount of heat.

In the blink of an eye, the thin layer of frost had disappeared and the suppressed glow of the treasures began to flicker. However, the glows were extremely dull.

Mo Tianyun slowly extended his hand to gently rub the broken places on the saint artifacts. His hand did not contain any presence of energy and seemed completely normal, but under his hand, the saint artifacts slowly closed up. In just a short while, Rui Jin’s Sacred Dragon’s Sword, Hong Lian’s Scorching Godfire Hairpin, and Hei Yu’s machete had returned to how they had looked before. The two pieces had fused back together.

At the same time, the origin energy that radiated from the three saint artifacts was actually even more abundant than before.

Protector Shui’s eyes narrowed suddenly when she saw this. Her face became filled with disbelief. Destroying low-level saint

artifacts was obviously a piece of cake for experts at her level, but repairing one was not simple at all. Mo Tianyun had used a few short seconds to completely repair the three broken saint artifacts. There was no way she could have done something like that.

With the saint artifacts repaired, Mo Tianyun then pointed once at each of the three frozen magical beasts. With a crisp explosion, the thin layer of frost that had trapped Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu burst apart, scattering in the air as ice.

However, Rui Jin, Hong Lian and Hei Yu did not recover immediately. Not only had the coldness frozen them into statues, it had frozen their energy and the signs of life within them, even their souls. However, with the layer of frost gone, the coldness within them lost its source so it began to rapidly weaken.

The three of them slowly recovered their frozen energies and signs of life. Their souls had always been protected by their pearls, so even though they had lost their connection to the outside world, they could still feel the coldness rapidly weaken very clearly.

Without any hesitation, the three of them immediately used all they had to circulate their energy and purge the coldness. The residual energy dispersed very quickly with their full power, allowing the three of them to finally regain their freedom.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu immediately opened their eyes. They saw a white-robed man standing with his back to them at first glance, separating them from protector Shui. Their origin energy weapons hovered in front of him.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu looked at each other. Their eyes were filled with shock. They were not stupid, so they immediately realized that this person was definitely responsible for their escape. However, what filled them with disbelief was that in an age where even Saint Emperors were rare, there was another expert that had surpassed Saint Emperor alive. They were greatly affected by this piece of news.

The three saint artifacts in front of Mo Tianyun flew to them as streaks of light. At the same time, Mo Tianyun's voice rang out, "Take these items and leave here. Immediately find a place to enter seclusion. Do not emerge until you become Saint Emperors. The Tian Yuan Continent will be in for war soon, and the outcome is difficult to predict!"

"Yes, senior!" Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu courteously bowed to Mo Tianyun before leaving with their saint artifacts. Even after leaving, they wondered just who that man was, but before sovereign-like people who had surpassed Saint Emperor, they dared not ask. This was because they understood that even Saint Emperors would be as weak as ants before experts like him, let alone them, Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

Protector Shui did not even glance at the three of them. Her gaze was fixed on Mo Tianyun for the entire process. Finally, she said in a cold voice, "Mo Tianyun, have you come just to save them?"

Mo Tianyun shook his head, "I've used so much effort to come down not because I want to save them. I do however have some news regarding the Ice Goddess Hall, which I think will interest you."

Protector Shui narrowed her eyes and her breathing became slightly hurried. She had already left the Saints' World for over three million years. She had not heard any news of it the entire time.

"What news? Speak!" Protector Shui's ice-cold voice became rather eager. She knew that Mo Tianyun had probably come down from the Saints' World and that he knew the most recent news. However, she could sense something bad from the way Mo Tianyun spoke.

Mo Tianyun said, "This might not be good news to you. Among the four protectors of the Ice Goddess Hall, all of them have advanced from Godking into the Primordial realm except for you,

Shui Yunlan, who has to endure the fact that you cannot make any progress in cultivation by coming to a lower world to wait painfully for the reincarnated Snow Goddess.”

“So what? Wu Han, Bing Qin, and Cai Xia’s talent isn’t any worse than mine. In such a long amount of time, it’s logical for them to reach the Primordial realm,” Protector Shui coldly replied. If that was the bad news Mo Tianyun was referring to, she had no need to become so nervous.

“It indeed would be nothing if that was all of it. However, you probably would never have thought that Wu Han would become a traitor and would trap Bing Qin and Cai Xia. Two of the three elders have fallen while the remaining one has fled with heavy injuries. Their whereabouts are unknown. The Ice Goddess Hall is basically under Wu Han’s control now, and Wu Han has already entered the forbidden grounds to go to where the Ice Goddess is healing. She wants to lay her hands on the Ice Goddess while she is heavily injured,” said Mo Tianyun.

Protector Shui was greatly astounded. Mo Tianyun’s news was just far too shocking, to the point where she struggled to believe it.

“Impossible, that’s impossible. Even if Wu Han reaches the Primordial realm, she’ll only be an Infinite Prime at most. How can she become a traitor? And the three elders of the Ice Goddess Hall are all Chaotic Primes. It’s impossible for Wu Han to be the opponents of the three elders. How could she have killed two of them,” protector Shui cried out. She had considered the fact that Mo Tianyun might be tricking her, but she could vaguely feel that Mo Tianyun would not use something so absurd to try to trick her.

“With Wu Han’s strength, it’s indeed impossible, but it’s a whole different story if there’s someone helping her,” said Mo Tianyun.

“Who? Who is helping Wu Han?” Protector Shui’s voice became shrill and heavy killing intent filled her icy-cold eyes.

“Nan Potian!” Mo Tianyun stressed each syllable.

Protector Shui shivered inside, “Nan Potian? The Nan Potian of the Moon God Hall?”

“Correct. The Moon God has disappeared. It’s rumored that the Moon God died after failing to break through to Grand Prime. The Moon God Hall is under Nan Potian’s control now. The elders of the Ice Goddess Hall suffered sneak attacks from him. Two died and one was injured. Other than that, I learned that Wu Han is having an affair with Nan Potian.”

With that, protector Shui suddenly jerked as sorrow filled her eyes. If her face was visible, it would have been sheet-white. All of the members of the Ice Goddess Hall were female and every single member needed to maintain their purity. Having their bodies contaminated by men was an unforgivable crime. This was a particularly harsh rule for the four protectors. If one of them were contaminated by men, all four of them would be punished.

“Then what’s the situation of her majesty?” Protector Shui urgently asked. She had already guess that the person who had actually moved against the Ice Goddess was probably Nan Potian of the Moon God Hall. Although the forbidden grounds of the Ice Goddess were protected by very powerful formations, Nan Potian was a Chaotic Prime. He was daring enough to lay his hands on the Ice Goddess, so he definitely had something he could rely on.

“That I do not know. This is all that I know actually. If you don’t want the Snow Goddess to fall into the hands of Nan Potian, it’s best if you don’t return to the Saints’ World. Even if you do, you can’t go to the Ice Goddess Hall,” Mo Tianyun sternly explained.

Protector Shui calmed down very quickly. Light flickered in her eyes as she paid close attention to Mo Tianyun, “Mo Tianyun, why are you telling me this? Are you connected to the Ice Goddess Hall in a certain way?”

Mo Tianyun’s face suddenly sunk and instantly became filled with fury. He said heavily, “I am not connected to the Ice Goddess

Hall, but Nan Potian meddled with my affairs, so I obviously will disrupt his plans.”

Protector Shui came to an understanding with Mo Tianyun’s explanation. No wonder Mo Tianyun had purposefully come over to tell her this. He had an enmity with Nan Potian.

Mo Tianyun continued, “There’s something else. You’re not allowed to touch Jian Chen here or interfere with any of his matters.”

“You probably don’t know who Jian Chen is. His existence is a hidden threat to our Saints’ World,” replied protector Shui coldly. She did not want her change her plans at all in regards to this.

Mo Tianyun looked at her in scorn and said, “Shui Yunlan, I know much more than you. However, I feel like you should consider how you will make it through the disaster of the Ice Goddess Hall and not do things that are rather pointless. At the same time, with Jian Chen’s connection with the Snow Goddess, he might end up as a crucial figure in assisting you overcome this problem.”

“Hmph. Her majesty the Ice Goddess was injured by the Immortal Exalt from the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens, and she still remains injured. Isn’t the problem we currently face caused by that Immortal Exalt? We don’t need the successor of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens interfering with matters of our Ice Goddess Hall,” snorted protector Shui coldly.

“Then compare it to the survival or death of the Ice Goddess Hall. I have delivered my message, and I wish you all the best.” Mo Tianyun did not say anything more. He threw that out before silently vanishing.

Chapter 1246: Wiping Out a Saint Emperor's Clone

Jian Chen was secretly shocked. He had never thought that the hall master would get everything correct to such a degree and would even know about the sea goddess' situation. He had even been spot on with the secret about how the sea goddess helped him only in hopes of having her body reconstructed.

“Hall master, may I ask just what you've personally come for?” Jian Chen asked. He refused to believe that the hall master would lower himself and visit the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall with his dignity as a Saint Emperor just to tell him these things.

The hall master thought a little and continued, “Jian Chen, I've come to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall personally because I actually want to talk to you about cooperating.”

“Cooperating?” Jian Chen was slightly stunned. He could already guess how the hall master wanted to cooperate, but he continued to ask in a curious manner, “May I ask why the hall master wants to cooperate with me? My strength is weak, so I may not be able to help the hall master.”

The hall master gently chuckled, “Jian Chen, there's no need for you to belittle yourself. This deal can be made without anyone else except you, because my plan will probably be impossible for the rest of my life without you.” He paused before continuing, “You must know that the sea goddess has lost her body by now and that she's been reduced to a soul that is hiding in the divine hall floating through the Sea of Despair. The reason why you've received her help time and time again as a human is because she wants you to recover her body. I may not know just what method the sea goddess will be using to do that, but I have already determined that you are definitely a crucial part of her plan and that you will get closer and closer to the sea goddess' soul in the

future, or even enter the divine hall where her soul resides. Our cooperation would be for us to act when the opportunity arises and obtain the sea goddess' soul together.”

“You want to devour the sea goddess' soul?” Jian Chen's heart sank slightly. The hall master had actually said something so reckless in such a flagrant manner. He was completely fearless. It was more than enough to see just how fearless he had become to fulfil his wild ambitions. He did not even worry about this information making its way to the outside world.

The hall master sinisterly smiled, “Not devour, but fuse. I know a supreme secret technique that can fuse souls. With my current strength, I only need to fuse with half of the sea goddess' soul, and then I'll probably be able to surpass Saint Emperor. The remaining half will obviously go to you. At that time, I will pass on this secret technique to you, so you can fuse with the other half. Although you might not necessarily surpass Saint Emperor, it'll allow you to reach the higher levels of Saint Emperor at the very least and make it so that it's extremely likely that you can break through to even greater levels in the future.”

Jian Chen fell silent. His eyes flickered with light as he became uneasy.

The hall master coldly smiled when he saw how Jian Chen acted. He thought, “The sea goddess may have helped you in the past, but you're not close to her. I refuse to believe that you won't take the lure now that I've shown you such a tempting thing. I obviously don't have a secret technique that can fuse with souls, but even if I did have it, it wouldn't be something you would be able to enjoy.”

A while later, Jian Chen slowly raised his head. He stared at the hall master and said, “You mean you want me to find a way into the divine hall to obtain her soul before giving it to you?”

The hall master was overjoyed inside when he heard that response. He could already guess that Jian Chen had probably been

hooked by his deal. He immediately suppressed his excitement in a forceful manner and shook his head, “Although the sea goddess is just a soul, she’s still someone who surpassed the level of Saint Emperor in the past. It won’t be enough to deal with her with just you alone. You’ll require my full power to suppress her. Jian Chen, if you’re willing to cooperate with me, I’ll hide this clone of my soul in your body. Once you make it into the divine hall, I’ll use this clone to suppress the sea goddess’ soul. Only like that can you remain safe.”

“Won’t the sea goddess see that you’ve hidden a clone in me?” Jian Chen asked in doubt.

The hall master was confident, “Although my strength is not as great as the sea goddess when she was in her peak condition, you have to remember that she’s no longer that sovereign of the past. At the same time, my mastery over my soul has reached a level of perfection. With the assistance of an ancient secret technique, hiding away from the sea goddess is obviously no problem.”

Jian Chen suddenly understood everything. He finally nodded his head after hesitating for while, “I’ll cooperate with you.”

The hall master chuckled loudly and said, “Alright, alright, alright. Jian Chen, I haven’t misjudged you. You really are someone who can do big things. I believe you’ll surpass Saint Emperor soon. Now please open up yourself and don’t resist at all. I’ll hide my clone in you right now.”

Jian Chen nodded before sitting down. He closed his eyes and dropped his guard, allowing the clone of the hall master to enter his body without any worries.

Seeing how Jian Chen had indeed dropped his guard, the hall master could not help but sneer with his blurry face. His body faded and turned into a wisp of energy that entered Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness between his eyebrows.

The hall master recondensed in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness.

He smiled as if his scheme had been successful. He indeed was quite skillful with his soul, which was why it was much more powerful than a regular Saint Emperor's soul. He believed that even as a clone, he could completely take control of Jian Chen as long as he entered Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

“As long as I control Jian Chen's body, I can use him to continue to interact with the sea goddess and then find an opportunity to enter the divine hall and devour her soul, so my soul can strengthen qualitatively.” The hall master became extremely excited as soon as he thought up to there.

But at this very moment, an azure ball of light and violet ball of light began to glow brightly in the depths of his sea of consciousness, engulfing the hall master in an instant.

The hall master only felt the landscape in front of him make a sudden change. He had actually arrived in a vast, starry part of space without any reason. Countless experts clad in various armors fought intensely there as the terrifying ripples of energy destroyed galaxies and caused the entire universe to shake. He could even see a huge sword, three thousand meters long, shining with a dazzling golden light. It produced a terrifyingly large sword Qi that cut through several large stars in a single stroke before disappearing into the depths of the cosmos.

“W-where is this place?” The hall master became as white as a sheet in that moment. Even his clone that had been condensed from his soul trembled gently. He could clearly feel the terror of the people present. He could sense that even the weakest people present were countless times more terrifying than Origin realm experts. As a mighty Saint Emperor in front of these people, he felt even more insignificant than an ant.

“This is impossible, this is definitely impossible. How can there be so many terrifying experts in the world? It's fake, it's fake. It's all fake,” the hall master said with a trembling voice. He felt like he had fallen into an illusion and that his soul was about to be

pressed to pieces by the terrifying presences of these people.

At this moment, a violet sword and an azure sword suddenly appeared in the battlefield. They radiated with lights so bright that they could not be ignored as they danced in the void. Wherever the two swords passed, the terrifying experts would immediately be slain without any power to resist like ants. In the blink of an eye, the entire place was filled with golden blood that gave off powerful ripples of energy.

Without any doubt, the hall master felt that a single droplet of blood was enough to kill a Saint Emperor. He felt extremely shocked when he realized that a supreme emperor in the sea realm was not even on par to a droplet of blood.

“What terrifying swords are they? They’re actually even more terrifying than these people. They’re killing them like ants...” The hall master shook more and more intensely. He had already begun to stagger back. He had become utterly frightened by the two swords.

At this moment, something that filled him with terror happened. The two swords actually charged toward him, locking onto his presence.

“No...” The hall master produced a horrified cry. He began to flee without a second thought. However, the swords moved just too fast. He did not even possess the power to escape.

“Argh!” The hall master howled out painfully. He helplessly watched as the two swords impaled his body, causing his soul immediately faded by a lot. At the same time, he suffered from excruciating pain.

However, the landscape before him suddenly disappeared after he became injured. He returned to the first space he had been in with azure and violet lights, which was Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness.

However, before he could become relieved, his eyes suddenly narrowed. Horror filled his face as the two terrifying swords reappeared a thousand meters in front of him. Their tips were pointed toward him.

The hall master became utterly terrified. This time, he did not wait for the swords to shoot over before he immediately fled. He wanted to leave Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

At the same time, the two swords shot toward the hall master as streak of lightning, impaling his soul clone once more and making it fade even more.

The hall master clenched his teeth as he fled as fast as he could. He had already begun to regret entering Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. This was no sea of consciousness, rather an extremely terrifying hell. The battle among the stars he had just witnessed was particularly bad. It had utterly frightened him.

A golden tower suddenly appeared just as he was about to escape from Jian Chen's soul, perfectly blocking his path with a dazzling golden light.

"Esteemed hall master, why are you in such a hurry to leave as soon as you've come to my sea of consciousness? Don't you plan on staying a little longer?" Jian Chen's voice rang out from the side. He had already silently appeared by the hall master's side, forming a triangle encirclement around the hall master with the Azulet swords and the saint artifact.

"Nah, I changed my mind. I still have important matters to attend to. Jian Chen, let me leave first," the hall master said in horror. At the same time, he glanced at the Azulet swords behind him as fear permeated the depths of his eyes.

Chapter 1247: Enrichment of the Soul

“Esteemed hall master, what could be more important than devouring the sea goddess’ soul? Why do you want to leave? Are you no longer planning on devouring her soul?” Jian Chen asked with a smirk. His voice was filled with sarcasm as he looked at the hall master’s soul.

If the hall master’s real body had been present, Jian Chen obviously would not lay his hands on him, but unfortunately for the hall master, only his soul was here. It was evident that Jian Chen could not stop the clone outside, but it was his sea of consciousness here. It was his territory, so the hall master naturally could not cause any trouble. Just the Azulet sword spirits were enough to heavily-injure him.

The hall master no longer spoke to Jian Chen. The horror of the sword spirits behind him had peaked, so he immediately tried to make his way around the saint artifact in front of him and fled as quickly as he could.

However, right when he moved, the saint artifact reappeared in front of him with a flash of golden light, stopping him from retreating.

The hall master did not give up. He tried to make his way around the tower through various routes many times, but the outcome was still the same. He was stopped by the saint artifact every time. No matter how fast he was in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness, he would still not be able to speed past the saint artifact.

The hall master was both flustered and furious. He knew that Jian Chen was secretly behind everything and that Jian Chen did not want him to leave. Jian Chen wanted to wipe out his strand of soul here.

“Jian Chen, how dare you attempt a sneak attack against me!” The hall master bellowed as his face became pale-white. He had

never thought that he would fail such an easy task in such a miserable fashion. As it turned out, Jian Chen, who had just been a sitting duck, was more complicated than he had imagined, forcing him into such a horrible situation.

Jian Chen coldly smiled, “Hall master, you never had any good intentions as soon as you arrived in my sea of consciousness. All you can blame is yourself for not being strong enough, so why try to explain it as a sneak attack?” A sword that was two fingers wide appeared in Jian Chen’s hand. The sword was condensed from the power of his soul from his sea of consciousness. With a violent tremble, the sword turned into a resplendent streak of light as it shot toward the hall master’s soul.

The hall master’s soul had already become extremely weak after being terrified by the battle among the stars and then heavily injured by the sword spirits. Coupled with the fact that he was in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness, his movements were restricted. It was impossible for him to block Jian Chen’s attack, even dodging was not possible.

Jian Chen’s sword passed through the hall master’s soul, causing him to wail in pain. His soul became even more faint.

“Jian Chen, I will not let you go for this,” the hall master roared. He knew that this strand of soul was done for today.

Jian Chen said nothing. An icy-cold light flickered in his eyes. His sword swung toward the hall master again as a streak of resplendent light.

After sustaining three attacks, the hall master’s soul finally dissipated, having been destroyed in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness.

Jian Chen deeply exhaled and the sword in his hand disappeared. He knew that the destruction of a strand of the hall master’s soul would definitely affect his strength. The hall master wanted to devour the sea goddess’ soul, yet Jian Chen had already made up

his mind to assist her. It was very likely that he would come into conflict with the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall in the future, so he did not regret wiping out a clone of his.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's eyes froze. He could clearly sense a strand of power from the soul where the hall master's clone had vanished. The power was extremely pure, but there was only a single strand of it. It did not possess any consciousness within.

Jian Chen rejoiced inside. He understood what had happened very quickly. After being destroyed in his sea of consciousness, the soul did not dissipate. Instead, it was trapped there. Although the strand of power had weakened, it was still an extremely beneficial thing to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately began to absorb the power. Fortunately, the strand of power was rather gentle in nature, so Jian Chen encountered no difficulties absorbing it. Very soon, the strand of power disappeared from his sea of consciousness, having been completely absorbed away.

Immediately, an indescribable feeling of ecstasy filled Jian Chen. He could sense that his soul had been enriched, becoming even more powerful than before. Even the sword spirits benefited after absorbing the power.

Returning his attention back to his body, Jian Chen immediately felt that he could sense his surroundings in an even sharper clarity. Even if he did not use his presence, he could vaguely sense the clansmen a thousand meters away.

Suddenly, Jian Chen expanded his presence as much as he could, and he was in for a big surprise. His presence before could only cover a radius of ten thousand kilometers, yet it could now cover a twenty-thousand-kilometer radius. The radius had increased by an entire fold.

"The strength of my soul should have already surpassed the souls of Saint Kings at Great Perfection, but it's still a little weaker than

a Saint Emperor,” Jian Chen deduced inside. However, he shook his head soon after. He felt like it was inaccurate to use a standard like that. This was because among Saint Emperors, there were those with stronger and weaker souls, such as the Class 9 Magical Beasts from the Beast God Continent. They were also Saint Emperors, but their souls were their weakness and would not necessarily be more powerful than Jian Chen’s current soul. On the other hand, the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall may not have been as powerful as the Class 9 Magical Beasts of the Beast God Continent, but his soul was definitely several times stronger.

“Though the hall master has given me a great gift this time, allowing my soul to strengthen by so much,” Jian Chen thought. He was currently in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, so he did not need to fear the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. If the hall master’s true body was bold enough to move against him, the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall would personally come to stop him without any need for Jian Chen to do anything.

At this moment, a heavy but loud sound suddenly reverberated from the divine hall within the territory of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, along with a wave of vast energy that rushed out like a tsunami. It caused the entire structure to shake violently. Many experts who cultivated there were alarmed, and all of them emerged from their rooms in surprise. They all began to whisper to each other in discussion.

“Jian Chen, I’ll never forgive you. I’ll make you suffer the most excruciating torture for as long as possible before killing you,” the hall master bellowed angrily from within the divine hall. A figure who radiated with terrifying ripples of energy left the divine hall like a streak of lightning as he made his way to the Sea Goddess Hall.

“Isn’t that the hall master who hasn’t emerged for quite a few years? Why has the hall master suddenly become so furious...”

“Didn’t you hear the hall master curse the ruler of the Turtle

clan, Jian Chen. Jian Chen sure is something. The hall master has such a good temperament, yet he's actually become so furious because of Jian Chen. I really do wonder what Jian Chen has done..."

"Weird. From what I know, the ruler of the Turtle clan has always stayed in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall and has not ventured elsewhere in recent times. How has he offended the hall master and made him so furious..."

Many guests, elders, and hall elders quietly discussed the matter in the divine hall. A portion of them obviously hated Jian Chen, but there was also a tiny group of people who secretly admired him. He had offended the hall master of the Serpent God Hall before and now he had offended the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. His boldness really was admirable, offending the emperors of the two halls one after another.

The hall master flew toward the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall while radiating with a powerful killing intent. His face was extremely sunken as his bone-deep hatred for Jian Chen burned inside. Jian Chen had killed a clone of his. Not only would it severely affect the strength he could use, it even heavily injured his soul, making it difficult to recover. What was even more unbearable for him was that he had actually suffered a sneak attack from a 16th Star expert as an emperor. That was just utterly embarrassing for him.

"Hmph, Jian Chen, do you really think that the fake image you conjured when I was in your sea of consciousness would be enough to scare me away? I'm not muddle-headed like a child. That image was very realistic, giving the feeling as if I was actually there, but it's an illusion in the end. It's impossible to be true. How can such terrifying experts exist in the world, where a single droplet of their blood would be enough to kill a Saint Emperor? And that there's an innumerable amount of them? It's a joke that I believed as real back then," said the hall master through gritted teeth. He was torn

between anger and shame. To think that he, a great emperor, had been frightened by a realistic illusion. That only deepened his shame.

However, when he arrived at the boundary between the two territories, he began to hesitate. He did not cross it in a hurry.

“If I enter the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall right now, I would be breaking the agreement. At that time, I’ll be stopped by the hall master before I even see that blasted Jian Chen. My soul’s injured right now, so I’m not that woman’s opponent,” the hall master calmed down and thought inside. He hesitated.

“Hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, are you intending to trespass the territory of my Sea Goddess Hall?” Just as he hesitated, an icy-cold voice rang out from up ahead. A figure surrounded by blue light silently appeared opposite of him. Her figure was blurred, but she was clearly a woman. She stood exactly ten meters away in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, facing the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.

Chapter 1248: Arrival of the Worldly Ebb

“Hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, are you intending to trespass the territory of my Sea Goddess Hall?” Just as he hesitated, an icy-cold voice rang out from up ahead. A figure surrounded by blue light silently appeared opposite of him. Her figure was blurred, but she was clearly a woman. She stood exactly ten meters away in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, facing the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.

“Hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, I never thought that you’d arrive so quickly. You’ve appeared as soon as I’ve arrived at the border. Are you really that afraid of me entering your territory?” The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall heavily questioned. The woman coated in blue light right in front of him was the Saint Emperor of the Sea Goddess Hall. He had not expected her to arrive so quickly.

“She’s probably discovered me long ago and probably set off at the same time as I left the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. It’s fortunate that I didn’t act irrationally in my anger. If I had accidentally entered the Sea Goddess Hall’s territory, it would have been troublesome. I would obviously be fearless if I was in my peak condition, but my soul was just injured and my strength was greatly affected. I’m definitely not this woman’s opponent if we really do start fighting,” the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall thought in relief.

“There is a clear agreement between the three territories among the sea realm. All those who are part of the halls cannot trespass in the territory of the others, and even emperors must follow this agreement. Hall master, I hope you do not break this agreement,” said the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall coldly.

The hall master’s face sank, “Of course I know. I may have come to the boundary between the two halls, but I am still in the territory of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. I have not formally entered

your lands, so I have not broken the agreement.” With that, the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall disappeared with a sway. He had already left with extremely great speed, returning to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.

“Hmph, I’ll let you live a few more days, Jian Chen. I’ll definitely return your action of wiping out my clone by a thousand fold,” thought the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall viciously.

The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall watched him leave as her lips slowly curled into a smile. Joy appeared on her face as she celebrated the suffering of the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. She murmured, “Jian Chen sure is skillful, to be able to destroy one of his clones. You’ve made me worry for nothing. However, the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall has suffered greatly this time. It’ll be very difficult for him to recover in a short amount of time with that injury to his soul.

“Hmph, did he really think that he could deceive everyone by secretly coming here with a clone and trying to control Jian Chen without anyone noticing? He doesn’t know that I have half of her majesty the sea goddess’ legacy...”

In the blink of an eye, another few days passed. During that period of time, it was extremely calm in the Turtle clan. Jian Chen had handed over all the miscellaneous matters to the elders to deal with while he remained in the room to cultivate. He did not take a single step out and had only gave a rough direction in regards to the development of the Turtle clan. He handed all the authority to the elders for that after giving his rough idea.

During that period of time, the Tao family maintained an extremely low-profile. The activity of the clan members also became minimal. They were not willing to try their luck just in case they came across the Turtle clan. At the same time, the Turtle clan did not provoke the Tao family purposefully. Both sides knew that their opponents had a divine hall, so they could not be defeated. They were unable to do anything to each other and,

hence, were locked in a stalemate. If they went overboard and caused their opponents to go on a wild slaughter, they would only be able to helplessly watch as their opponents hid in their divine hall.

As a result, the Tao family and Turtle clan actually came to a rare ceasefire, but still maintained their weariness of each other.

Jian Chen remained seated in the room of the Turtle clan as he cultivated. Since he cultivated the Chaotic Body, he absorbed monster cores extremely quickly. The speed at which he absorbed them was incomparable to regular people. The number of empty monster cores stacked in the corner of the room had already neared a thousand, basically forming a small hill.

“Jian Chen, the worldly ebb is about to erupt. Make your final preparations immediately...”

At this moment, a hazy voice rang through Jian Chen’s head. Only the voice was present, without an exact source. It was the sea goddess secretly communicating with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s ears twitched slightly as he ended his cultivation. He used a communication technique to call over Tie Ta and Nubis before making his way to the central hall of the clan.

Very soon, Tie Ta and Nubis walked in. As soon as they saw Jian Chen, Nubis said, “Jian Chen, why have you called the two of us over?”

“The worldly ebb of the sea realm has arrived. I’ll be leaving the clan immediately to go to where it occurs. Will you be coming with me or remaining in the Turtle clan?” Jian Chen asked the two of them.

Nubis also knew about the worldly ebb, “Her majesty the sea goddess gifted me with a ruler’s neidan as well back then, so I, the great Nubis, owe her a favor. I will obviously go to the worldly ebb to return the sea goddess’ favor.”

“Jian Chen, I’ll go with you. I’ll go wherever you go.” Tie Ta did not hesitate either. Although he had no clue as to what the worldly ebb was, he had already made up his mind to follow Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded and agreed to have the two of them to go with him. Although the dangers there were unknown, he could still use the saint artifact. If they came across any dangers, they could hide in the artifact space.

Afterward, Jian Chen summoned Qing Yixuan. He gave her the Octoterra Divine Hall and said, “Qing Yixuan, I’ll be leaving for a period of time for some matters. I’ll leave the divine hall with you for now and give you a portion of its control, just in case the Tao family launches a sneak attack.”

Qing Yixuan did not become happy or excited because Jian Chen gave her the Octoterra Divine Hall. She glanced at him emotionlessly and coldly said, “You sure are a leisure ruler of the Turtle clan. Probably the first in history.”

“Hehe, you obviously have no right to nitpick what I do as the ruler. Just do what you need to do while you remain in the Turtle clan. You need to guarantee the safety of the clan before I wipe out the Tao family,” Jian Chen nonchalantly replied.

Qing Yixuan coldly snorted before quietly accepting the divine hall. If it were not for the fact that the Tao family was in possession of something extremely important to her, she would not be helping the Turtle clan stand up to the powerful Tao family.

Soon afterward, Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Nubis silently left the clan. Other than Qing Yixuan, no one else knew of their departure. Everyone in the clan, including the elders, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, and the others, all thought that Jian Chen was still in seclusion.

Jian Chen did not want his departure to be leaked. If the Tao family learned that he had left and decided to move against the Turtle clan during that time, there would be very heavy losses.

Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Nubis erased their presences as they hurried through the sea realm with extremely low profiles. They hurried to the location the sea goddess had told them about.

The three of them moved very quickly, leaving the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall in just a day. They arrived in a desolate land that lacked energy of the world.

The region did not belong to any of the three halls' territories because it was extremely barren. There were no crystal mines, and the energy of the world was extremely thin there. Violent storms would erupt from time to time that could even kill an Earth Saint Masters. It was impossible for weaker people to live there while stronger people would never go there to cultivate. As a result, the region became desolate after some time. No one was willing to go there.

The three of them continued flying for over ten thousand kilometers, headed to the depths of the desolate region. Suddenly, an extremely powerful ripple of energy entered their range of senses.

Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Nubis's expression hardened as surprise appeared in their eyes. The energy ripple was so powerful that it made their expressions change. The energy was filled with violence and destruction, and the vast disturbance made them wonder if there were two Saint Emperors fighting up ahead.

"That's the place that the sea goddess told us. Has this powerful ripple of energy been caused by the worldly ebb? Just what is the worldly ebb like?" Jian Chen thought as doubt riddled him inside.

The three of them flew for another several thousand kilometers before finally seeing the source of the terrifying ripple. The source was an extremely vast whirlpool of energy, several dozen kilometers wide. It spun at an unbelievable speed, and the terrifying force it created caused the space several kilometers away to visibly distort. Pitch-black space cracks would appear from time

to time.

Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Nubis stopped a hundred kilometers away from the whirlpool. They stared at it in shock. The whirlpool was actually completely formed from extremely pure energy, such that it had almost become a liquid.

The energy within the terrifying whirlpool had completely surpassed the energy within Saint Emperors. Jian Chen even suspected that the energy within those of the Origin realm would probably only be a tenth of the total amount.

Jian could even feel that the energy became purer the closer it was to the center.

“What a terrifying whirlpool of energy. Jian Chen, is this the place of the worldly ebb?” Nubis stared blankly at the whirlpool as he choked out his words.

Jian Chen said nothing because he didn’t know either. He had never seen what a worldly ebb looked like.

Chapter 1249: Absorbing the Energy of the World Ebb

“What a terrifying whirlpool of energy. Jian Chen, is this the place of the worldly ebb?” Nubis stared blankly at the whirlpool as he choked out his words.

Jian Chen said nothing because he didn’t know either. He had never seen what a worldly ebb looked like.

“Correct, this is the worldly ebb.” At this moment, the sea goddess’ voice rang through their heads. The sea goddess’ illusionary body gradually appeared before the three of them. Her face was a blur, making it impossible to see her appearance. Only her pupils, bright like moonlight, could be seen.

The sea goddess swept her gaze over the three of them before looking at the huge whirlpool of energy. She said, “This place can be labeled as the most wondrous as well as the most well-hidden place in the sea realm. Extremely powerful energy ripples will erupt once every ten thousand years here before forming this huge whirlpool of energy. I call it the worldly ebb.

“In all these years, I’ve tried investigating the reason for the worldly ebb, but I have learned nothing. Even now, I have no idea why it forms, but all I know is that the vast energy that gathers here comes from the entire world. All the various energies in this region silently gather here once every ten thousand years and form this huge whirlpool. No one can sense it, and if I had not purposefully watched over this place, I would not have been able to discover the secret hidden here.

“A tunnel will gradually form at the center of the whirlpool. It is a tunnel to another region of space. I once used my soul to explore that space. It does not have any energy of the world, nor any laws of the world. Even if Saint Emperors enter that space, they’ll lose all their comprehension of the mysteries of the world, and even

their physical power will be suppressed. They will be reduced to ordinary people.

“It’s definitely not safe in there either. There are many vicious beasts that live there. Although they lack intelligence, they are not weak. Even Saint Emperors will fall when their abilities are suppressed and they can’t use their full strength.”

The sea goddess gave Jian Chen a deep look when she reached that point. She said, “Jian Chen, the reason why I’ve come to you is because the energy you use is different from others. Although I’ve never seen or heard of this energy, I can sense its power. I suspect that your power may not be suppressed in that independent space, so you’ll be the one who can use most strength in there or maintain it perfectly. Even if I’ve guessed incorrectly and your power is suppressed, you can use your powerful body to not die to the vicious beasts.”

Jian Chen thought silently for a while before asking, “Your majesty, may I ask just what you need me to look for.”

“I need you to find two things for me. One of them is a soft, white substance while the other is a green liquid. The liquid is teeming with the presence of life. Those two items are crucial to reconstruct my body,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen nodded, “Your majesty, don’t worry. I’ll definitely bring back these two items.”

“Although I’ve entered that independent space with my soul and obtained some information before, my soul dispersed after only moving around in the outskirts after a short while. As a result, I don’t know if there are even greater dangers in the depths of the space, so don’t go too far in when you enter this time,” the sea goddess warned Jian Chen in concern. He was her only hope for reconstructing her body, so she obviously did not wish for any accidents to befall him.

“Then when can I enter, your majesty?” Jian Chen asked as he

stared fixedly at the swirl of energy.

“A tunnel has already formed in the center of the whirlpool. If you’re fully prepared, you can enter now. This tunnel will only exist for half a year, and it’ll disappear after that timeframe. As a result, you have to exit before it closes, or you’ll be trapped in there,” said the sea goddess.

“Only half a year? Isn’t that a little too short?” Jian Chen thought inside. He found it rather regretful. He then said to the sea goddess, “Your majesty, not only is the energy gathered here extremely vast, it’s extremely pure as well. I want to cultivate here for three months and enter the space after that.”

The sea goddess became surprised because what Jian Chen had said. She responded with, “The energy here may not possess offensive capabilities, but it’s also extremely violent and very difficult to absorb. And once you enter the whirlpool, the pressure will be extremely powerful. Are you certain you want to cultivate here?”

Jian Chen nodded without any hesitation. If he wanted his Chaotic Body to become stronger, he needed to accumulate vast amounts of energy, even if the amount of energy in the whirlpool was so terrifying that it exceeded his imagination. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for him, so how could he miss it so easily? He knew that he would have to endure the pressure if he wanted to absorb the energy there, he believed that it was possible with his tough Chaotic Body, which was at the third layer.

The sea goddess helplessly agreed after seeing how Jian Chen was determined, “Alright then. You can cultivate here for three months. After that, I’ll split a strand of my soul to enter with you. Although the strand can only exist for less than two hours away from me, I can use its power to search and provide you with accurate locations. If you come out early, you can continue to cultivate here for some time.”

Afterward, Jian Chen asked Nubis and Tie Ta if they were willing to cultivate here for three months. Nubis immediately paled when he caught a glance of the vast and violent energy and requested to be sent into the artifact space. Although he was a beast of antiquity, just the pressure and ripples of the terrifying energy were no weaker than a battle between two Saint Emperors. He was not confident that he could resist the threat of the whirlpool.

“Jian Chen, I’ll stay outside and see if I can absorb the energy. As the war god, my body should be able to endure it.” Tie Ta hesitated before planning to try it as well.

Afterward, Jian Chen sent Nubis into the artifact space before entering the whirlpool carefully with Tie Ta. He originally planned to let out the white tiger in the artifact space to cultivate as well, but when he remembered that he was not even at the level of Saint Kings, he gave up on that. As a beast god, the white tiger’s body could probably rival Tie Ta, but Tie Ta was not fully confident even as a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta entered the edge of the whirlpool and their bodies suddenly jerked. The whirlpool spun at an unbelievable speed, and it spun faster near the edges. The terrifying suction force almost caused Jian Chen and Tie Ta to lose their balance as soon as they had stepped into the whirlpool.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta reactions were extremely quick. With a deep grunt, they arduously worked to stabilize themselves. Their feet were planted into the ground like roots, and they did not move no matter how great the force of the whirlpool was.

The pure energy that had almost liquified swept over the two of them like sharp blades. The moment it swept over them, their clothes were reduced to shreds while a layer of thin wounds appeared on Tie Ta’s body. Golden blood could vaguely be seen.

However, Tie Ta’s recovery rate was very fast. His wounds immediately began to close up right after they had been split open

by the energy. He could remain a certain equilibrium between suffering damage and healing.

“Jian Chen, I’ll cultivate here. I probably can’t absorb the energy inside,” Tie Ta said to Jian Chen before immediately sitting down to cultivate.

Jian Chen did not stop at the edge. He continued toward the center of the whirlpool all by himself. The toughness of his Chaotic Body was clearly tougher than Tie Ta’s body as the war god at his current level. Although it was extremely painful to be cut by razor-sharp energy blades on almost every inch of his body, no wounds formed.

Jian Chen stopped after traveling thirty kilometers inside. He had almost reached the center of the whirlpool, and the energy there was even more pure than where Tie Ta had stopped. The suction force had weakened as well, but it was several times more dangerous than the outskirts.

The more pure the energy was, the more violent it was. Thus, the energy here was very difficult to absorb, so it was a huge test of the body. At the same time, the pressure from the energy was even more terrifying. A single moment of carelessness would lead to a backlash and heavy injuries or would lead to death on the spot.

Jian Chen had pushed the Chaotic Body to its limits long ago. He then sat there and began to absorb the energy.

As soon as the energy entered him he violently shuddered. The energy he was absorbing felt like gunpowder and exploded as soon as it touched him. If it were not for the toughness of the Chaotic Body, he probably would have been heavily injured already.

Chapter 1250: Peak of the Third Layer

Jian Chen quickly recalled the cultivation method of the Chaotic Body recorded in the Azulet Sword Law before entering a state of cultivation. He silently endured the burning pain brought on by the violent whirlpool of energy as the chaotic neidan in his dantian produced strands of Chaotic Force. These strands of Chaotic Force quickly rampaged through his body. They viciously smashed into the energy of the whirlpool like dragons, grinding away the violent factor inside and leaving behind the purest energy possible. Then it could finally be absorbed and slowly be converted into Chaotic Force.

Jian Chen's chaotic neidan became smaller and smaller. He had directed a third of all of his Chaotic Force out of the neidan, basically forming rivers that ran through every corner of his body. The vast amounts of Chaotic Force flowed quickly, forming a protective net. All the energy he absorbed from the whirlpool would have to pass through the net, filtering out the violent factor. All that was left behind was the purest energy for Jian Chen to absorb.

Outside the whirlpool, the sea goddess' figure that had been condensed from her soul hovered there silently. She stared fixedly at Jian Chen as he cultivated several dozen kilometers in the whirlpool. The surprise in her eyes grew heavier and heavier.

"I never thought that Jian Chen's body had actually reached such a level of toughness. Without any protection, he can stay near the center of the whirlpool and remain unscathed just with the toughness of his body. Probably even Saint Emperor magical beasts can't do this. Although Saint Emperors can easily reach where he is, they need to use their powerful energy to resist the rush, or even they will become injured.

"But what has surprised me even more is that not only can Jian Chen stay there and remain perfectly fine with his tough body, he

can absorb the energy and cultivate. The violent factor within the energy grows stronger the closer one is to the center. If energy like that enters the body, it would reduce the interior to a battlefield without any doubt. This is extremely fatal even to a Saint Emperor. They could end up utterly doomed with the slightest careless mistake.

“I really do wonder what cultivation method Jian Chen practices. Not only does he wield a powerful energy that I’ve never seen or heard of, but even his body is terrifyingly tough. He probably can just stand there and Third Heavenly Layer Saint Kings won’t even be able to puncture his skin with his current toughness.”

In roughly a dozen minutes, Jian Chen had already absorbed an extremely vast amount of pure energy from the whirlpool. The energy was so vast that it was enough to shock a Saint King, but to Jian Chen, it was only a strand of Chaotic Force after being filtered.

Jian Chen finally refined his first strand of Chaotic Force from the whirlpool in that short amount of time, which immediately delighted him.

“I still have another three months to cultivate here, and there will be many dozens of minutes in three months. I wonder if I can reach the fourth layer within that time frame.” Jian Chen began to anticipate the end of the cultivation period. His battle prowess would increase by several smaller cultivation realms with every increase in the Chaotic Body. Once he reached the fourth layer, he might reach the level of Saint Emperors, but he was certain he could reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint King or even Great Perfection.

“It’s a pity that time’s limited. I can only cultivate here for three months. Although there’s an endless supply of energy here, raising my Chaotic Body to the fourth layer in three months will still be rather difficult. If only I could stay here forever. There’d even be a tiny hope of reaching the fifth layer if that were the case, let alone

the fourth.” Jian Chen could not help but feel rather regretful. Places like the worldly ebb were just far too difficult to find, and the worldly ebb would only occur once every ten thousand years. He could not rely on waiting for it to appear again, because the energy in the worldly ebb might not mean anything to him after ten thousand years.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had stayed there for a month. In that time, he had refined so many strands of Chaotic Force that he had forgotten the number. However, he could feel his chaotic neidan swell at a slow rate every day as the Chaotic Force in it increased.

Tie Ta spent the entire time cultivating as well. Although he was a warring god with a battle prowess no weaker than Jian Chen, his body was nowhere near as tough as his. As a result, Tie Ta remained in the very outskirts of the whirlpool to absorb the energy and did not progress any deeper.

Although the suction force at the outskirts was even greater than in the depths, the violent factor present in the energy was minute, so it was much easier to absorb.

A month later, the toughness of Jian Chen’s Chaotic Body slowly increased after being forged by the energy of the whirlpool. It no longer posed any risk to him now, so he stopped cultivating and ventured another five kilometers toward the center. He stopped when he had reached his utmost limit before continuing to cultivate.

Although he had only advanced by five kilometers, the purity of the energy had greatly increased. He required around a dozen minutes to refine a single strand of Chaotic Force, but five kilometers later, he could refine thirteen or even fourteen strands in about two hours. His refinement rate had increased very much.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen had cultivated for three months. However, to his regret, he failed to reach the fourth layer in that

time. He remained at the third layer, but his egg-sized chaotic neidan had reached the size of a fist. To no surprise, this was the sign of the peak of the third layer.

Jian Chen ended his three months of cultivation. Although he knew that he only needed another month to reach the fourth layer, the time frame agreed upon by him and the sea goddess had ended. He needed to stop cultivating and enter the independent space to find the materials required to reconstruct the sea goddess' body. Finding the materials were far more important than reaching the fourth layer to him. After all now that he was at the peak of the third layer, he could reach the fourth layer with just a large pile of high class monster cores even if he could not use the energy of the worldly ebb anymore. However, the opportunity to reconstruct the sea goddess' body only came once every ten thousand years, and if he missed it this time, he would need to wait another ten thousand years. And at that time, she might not be able to find someone suitable.

Jian Chen pulled out a set of robes from his Space Ring and put them on. With a thought, he condensed a layer of Chaotic Force around him to resist the violent energy that constantly swept past him. He then made his way to Tie Ta. Although he was several dozen kilometers away, Jian Chen could cross the distance in a few seconds.

Roused by Jian Chen, Tie Ta immediately stopped cultivating and a golden energy surged from him. He obstructed the violent energy of the worldly ebb around him. As he pulled out a set of robes from his Space Ring and put them on, he said with a muffled voice, "Jian Chen, this place sure is a good cultivation location. I've only cultivated here for three months, but I can already feel that my strength has increased a lot."

Jian Chen examined Tie Ta and, indeed, discovered that Tie Ta's strength had increased by quite a lot. Although Tie Ta's cultivation method was special and could not be measured using the standards

of the Tian Yuan Continent, Jian Chen made a rough estimate from his strength and presence. In these three months, Tie Ta's strength had increased from the Fourth Heavenly Layer to the Fifth, and he was quite close to the Sixth.

Jian Chen nodded in agreement, "Tie Ta, let's go into the independent space to find the materials for the sea goddess. The sooner we find them, the sooner we can come out, and we might have enough time to continue cultivating here."

"Then let's hurry. Let's save some time to continue cultivating here." Tie Ta immediately became rather impatient.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Tie Ta walked to the center of the swirl, protected by a layer of energy. The sea goddess' soul was beside them as well.

"Jian Chen, there's a black tunnel at the center. You two can enter that place to get to the independent space. The energy of my soul will be consumed even faster within the whirlpool, so I can't stay in here for too long. I'll be going first," said the sea goddess. Afterward, the strand of her soul condensed into a faint shadow that quickly shot into the hole and vanished in an single moment.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta sped up as well. They entered the center of the energy swirl while resisting the great pressure.

As soon as they entered the eye of the swirl, the two of them immediately felt their bodies lighten. All the pressure they had been resisting vanished in a single moment and right before them was a black hole that was three meters wide. Nothing was visible inside.

Chapter 1251: Xuanhuang Microcosm (One)

Jian Chen and Tie Ta examined the black hole. It was the eye of the whirlpool formed by the worldly ebb. It was very calm but filled with a mysterious power. Even Jian Chen's soul, which had surpassed a Saint King at Great Perfection, could not reach into it.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta stood at the edge of the hole for a while before nodding at the same time and leaping in.

Jian Chen only felt himself rapidly fall when he jumped into the hole, but that feeling only lasted a few seconds. Afterward, he felt like he was floating in space as if gravity had disappeared. The surrounding space would pulse from time to time, and Jian Chen would sense something different every time, as if he was shifting with every pulse.

"Is this spatial teleportation?" A thought suddenly crossed Jian Chen's mind. Everything was pitch-black, and he could see nothing. In order to verify whether he was right or not, he immediately attempted to expand his presence to observe his surroundings. Unfortunately, his presence was suppressed to the limit of his body by a mysterious power, preventing him from expanding it.

Oddly enough, Jian Chen actually failed to sense the flow of time in the pitch-black environment. The darkness seemed to have lasted for an entire era yet also seemed as brief as a few seconds. When Jian Chen finally regained his vision, he had arrived on a whole different world.

Standing on solid ground, Jian Chen immediately looked around. He could not help but feel relieved when he discovered Tie Ta standing beside him unharmed. He guessed that he had probably teleported a long distance through pitch-black space. Teleporting was extremely dangerous since they could end up lost in the void

with the slightest careless mistake, or they could have been separated after teleportation.

The independent space contained many unknown dangers. They did not even have a single idea as to how large the place was. If they ended up separated after being teleported, reuniting would almost be impossible. But fortunately, that did not occur.

“My strand of soul has been greatly consumed by passing through the tunnel. It is extremely weak now, and it can last for half an hour at most. Jian Chen, I will do all I can to find the materials I need before this strand of soul dissipates. Once I find them, I will tell you where they are,” said the sea goddess. She had already arrived before Jian Chen and Tie Ta, but her figure was extremely illusory now. She seemed like a wisp of smoke that could be blown away by the slightest wind.

“It’s best if you make a mark here. If you find the item, you can return here and return to the original world through the distorted space behind you,” continued the sea goddess.

“Alright, I’ll make one right now,” said Jian Chen. He immediately began to do create a mark. Marking a location was extremely easy at his current strength. He made one nearby very quickly and then preceded to make several more in the surrounding radius of three kilometers just in case.

The sea goddess stared at Jian Chen as he made the marks. She came to an understanding through Jian Chen’s speed and methods of making the marks that his strength was unaffected in this independent space, which immediately made her ravish with joy.

“There’s still three whole months. That should be enough time for Jian Chen to collect my materials here. Maybe once Jian Chen gets out, I’ll be able to fulfil my wish of reconstructing my body,” thought the sea goddess. She then turned into a wisp of smoke that spread out as she expanded her limited energy, searching for the materials she needed in all directions.

Jian Chen arrived in front of Tie Ta and asked, “Tie Ta, can you use your strength as usual?”

Tie Ta closed his eyes to sense his strength before responding, “I can use it as usual, and even my Mysteries of War have not been impacted. I can use my regular strength in here. What about you, Jian Chen?”

“My soul has been suppressed to sixty percent of its peak condition, and I cannot sense the mysteries of the world at all. I cannot use the abilities as a Saint Ruler, but I can use my Chaotic Force as usual,” said Jian Chen in a heavy voice before letting out Nubis from the artifact space. However, his presence began to weaken at an unbelievable rate as soon as he was let out. In less than a minute, all the energy within Nubis was suppressed by a mysterious power. He could not even use his abilities as a Saint King. He had been reduced to an ordinary person.

Nubis immediately became pale-white. He cried out, “God dammit, what is this bloody place? I’ve actually been reduced to a regular person. To think of all the glory and strength I, the great Nubis, possess outside, I can’t even beat a Class 6 Magical Beast in here. This place is far too terrifying. Jian Chen, return me to the artifact space.” Nubis was unwilling to stay outside a moment longer and immediately returned to the artifact space.

Among the three of them, Jian Chen used Chaotic Force. Although it was not true Chaotic Force since its strength was not even ten thousandth of the real deal, it still possessed the word ‘chaotic,’ so it completely exceeded the limits of regular energy and was obviously unable to be suppressed. As for Tie Ta, he was a warring god. His legacy originated from the world, so the energy he used was obviously incomparable to the norm, which explained why he was unrestricted by the mysterious energy of the space. Only Nubis walked a regular path of cultivation, so he was impacted by the restriction.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta left the area. They chose a single direction

to move off in as they constantly looked around. They were currently located in a desolate, boundless plain. The sky there was yellow, which was extremely rare, and there was no energy of the world nor mysteries of the world. Jian Chen could not even sense Radiant Saint Force.

However, Jian Chen could feel an energy that he had never seen or heard throughout the space. Although the energy was extremely thin, he could vaguely sense that it was no weaker than his Chaotic Force.

Afterward, Jian Chen began trying to absorb the mysterious and powerful energy, but to his surprise, he was unable to absorb it.

Chapter 1252: Xuanhuang Microcosm (Two)

“I never thought that there would be a power great enough to rival Chaotic Force in this independent space. This is really surprising. Looks like this space is far more complicated than I had imagined,” Jian Chen thought inside, but he also became more cautious. Although Tie Ta and his strength had not been suppressed, Jian Chen dared not to be careless within this extraordinary independent space.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta lost their ability to fly freely in this space. An invisible force filled the surroundings, and they would be suppressed by it as soon as they took to the air. Not only were they limited to an altitude of a hundred meters, the energy they consumed was several hundred or even a thousand fold compared to the energy consumed outside.

As a result, Jian Chen and Tie Ta chose to travel by foot, but they still moved extremely quick. They had traversed over a hundred kilometers in a short while, but the surroundings remained the same. It was still desolate as far as the eye could see.

At this moment, the sea goddess' soul floated over as a wisp of smoke. She condensed herself as an extremely faded figure in front of them. This strand of soul was clearly even weaker than before.

“Jian Chen, there's a small forest two hundred kilometers southeast of where you are now. There's a natural pool of water there, and it's filled with green water. The water is filled with a very powerful presence of life, and there's a thumb-sized ball of liquid at the bottom of the pool. The liquid is different from the water and is extremely sticky. It's one of the two materials I need to reconstruct my body. Jian Chen, go help me collect that liquid right now, but I may need quite a lot of it when I do rebuild my body, so please collect as much of it as possible in the next few days,” explained the sea goddess. However, her illusory figure wavered slightly as she spoke, as if she was about to disperse soon.

“We’ll head over there immediately. Do not worry, your majesty. I will definitely collect enough materials for you to rebuild your body,” Jian Chen swore before immediately changing directions with Tie Ta, heading off to the southeast as fast as he could.

“There’s two Class 7 vicious beasts that guard the small forest. They’re no threat to you, but still be careful because there are even more powerful beasts in the depths of this space. I once explored this place with my soul in the past, and the strongest one I came across was a equivalent to a Saint King at Great Perfection. I suspect that it still isn’t the most powerful in this space, but I could not probe any further before my soul dispersed due to hitting my limit. As a result, I don’t know if there are Saint Emperor vicious beasts in here.

“At the same time, the green water in the pool is no ordinary object either. It’s best if you take some with you. The green water here is something that has never been seen outside, so it’s probably some impressive treasure. My soul is being consumed at an extremely fast rate and is about to disperse. Jian Chen, it’ll be up to the two of you in the future. Remember to return safely in three months’ time. I shall await your good new outside...”

The sea goddess’ voice gently faded away. At the same time, the strand of her soul completely dispersed into the surroundings.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta said nothing. They only focused on hurrying along, and very soon, a small forest appeared in their vision. The lush, small trees swayed in the breeze.

The small forest stretched for several dozen kilometers, so it was indeed insignificant compared to the random forests that could stretch for thousands or even tens of thousands of kilometers on the Tian Yuan Continent. The vegetation that grew there was sparse. Although the tallest tree was only a dozen or so meters tall, every single tree grew vigorously, with densely-packed, lush leaves across every branch. They were teeming with life.

As soon as Jian Chen and Tie Ta entered the forest, they propelled themselves by kicking off the trees. They shot into the sky as they charged toward the center of the forest like arrows. They vanished in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen did not use his presence. His presence was severely limited in this strange little world, and as soon as he used it, it would be consumed at a rate several dozen times faster than the outside world. As a result, he just used his eyes to distinguish where the center of the forest was.

In less than a minute, the two of them arrived at the very center of the forest. They stood beside a green pool of water that was only two meters wide. The water was transparent, free from any impurities, so they could see the bottom of it. It was only one meter deep at most, and Jian Chen had indeed discovered a thumb-sized ball of liquid sitting quietly at the bottom. The liquid's color was an even deeper hue than the water, allowing him to distinguish it in a single glance. It just sat in the water and did not dissolve.

Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes as he stood beside the small pool. He sucked in a deep breath and immediately felt the intense presence of life enter his body through his nostrils. Comfort filled his organs.

“What an intense presence of life. There's such a clear feeling with just a breath. If I drink it, wouldn't the effects be even more shocking? It even has the effect of extending my longevity.” Jian Chen exclaimed as he stared at the green water before him. He had not cared much when the sea goddess had mentioned that the water was teeming with the presence of life. Only after personally experiencing how intense it was did he understand how extraordinary the water was.

“So nice!” Tie Ta copied Jian Chen as he closed his eyes and sucked in several breaths of the presence of life. He looked like he was intoxicated.

Just when the two of them had relaxed, two figure suddenly darted out of the forest, charging towards the two of them with lightning-like speed.

Jian Chen's eyes snapped open as a sharp gleam of light flashed through them. He glared at the two figures as a strand of gray sword Qi condensed in his right hand in a single moment. The sword Qi was condensed from Chaotic Force and was a meter long. It radiated with a violent and destructive presence.

With a swing of his arm, he used the sword Qi as a sword and chopped at the figures at a speed several times faster than them. Jian Chen could clearly sense a sliver of resistance when the sword Qi collided with the figures. The toughness of their bodies was rather frightening, but it was still not enough to change anything. One of them was split in half by Jian Chen.

On the other side, Tie Ta hurled his fist at the other figure. With a heavy sound, the figure was knocked far away, hitting a tree as thick as a water bucket twenty meters away before falling to the ground. If this happened outside, the same tree would have snapped in half if it was struck with such force or even turned to pieces, but the tree only shook violently. Not only was it completely fine, not even a branch had snapped off.

Jian Chen examined the figures that had ambushed the two of them. He discovered that they were one-meter-long, feral-dog-like beasts covered with fleshy scales. All their limbs possessed sharp claws and their bodies were extremely tough.

However, both of them had been reduced to corpses now. Besides the one that had been split in half by Jian Chen, the one that had rushed Tie Ta died from his punch. Even though the two of them were Class 7 vicious beasts, they were weak like ants before Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

"I wonder if these vicious beasts have monster cores," Jian Chen thought. He then walked over to the vicious beast he had killed

and used sword Qi he conjured at the tip of his finger to carve through it, carefully searching through the body.

A while later, Jian Chen was pleasantly surprised. Indeed, there was a tough, peanut-sized crystal within the vicious beast. It contained a pure and powerful energy equivalent to the energy hidden within Class 7 Monster Cores.

“This really has failed to disappoint me. Is this the monster core in these vicious beasts?” Jian Chen marveled at the peanut-sized crystal in his hand. The energy within the crystal was equivalent to Class 7 Magical Beasts, but it was much smaller.

Tie Ta's face lit up in joy as well when he saw this. He jogged over to the vicious beast he had killed with a punch and also removed a peanut-sized crystal from its body. He rubbed it against his clothes like a treasure before happily putting it into his space ring. He smiled honestly, “Hehe, if I sell this Class 7 Monster Core on the Tian Yuan Continent, it should make me quite some money.”

Jian Chen glanced at him in a critical fashion. He had roamed the Tian Yuan Continent for so long, but this was the first time he had heard that a Saint King lacked money.

Afterward, Jian Chen returned to the side of the pool. He gathered some of the water without any hurry and then carefully pooled some of the green water near his mouth, slowly gulping it down.

Immediately, a cool feeling filled his body before turning into warm feeling that quickly reached his organs. It was absorbed by his entire body, and he felt an indescribable comfort. At that moment, Jian Chen felt deluded, as if his life force had slightly increased with that mouthful of water.

Obviously, Jian Chen understood this was all an illusion. The water he had just drunk did not increase his life at all.

“What a heavy presence of life. Master, what heavenly resource

have you found this time... Hmm? I can actually feel the faint presence of Xuanhuang Qi...” A sword spirits’ voice rang through Jian Chen’s head before coming to a sudden halt. The next moment, it began to cry out in disbelief, “How is this possible? Why do I feel the existence of Xuanhuang Qi...” The sword spirits appeared outside with that. They looked around and immediately became extremely excited. Their faces were filled with serendipity and disbelief. They cried out, “It’s a Xuanhuang Microcosm. It’s actually a Xuanhuang Microcosm...”

Chapter 1253: Spring of Life

Jian Chen immediately became stunned when he saw how violently the sword spirits reacted. He had been with them for so long, and it was extremely rare for them to behave like this. However, Jian Chen knew that the sword spirits were extremely experienced and had seen countless wondrous treasures. Ordinary items nevered pique their interest, but anything that could was an extremely rare treasure without a doubt.

“A Xuanhuang Microcosm?” Jian Che murmured softly before looking at the world around him. He started to feel like the world was far more complicated than he had expected since the sword spirits reacted like that.

“Jian Chen, who’re they?” Tie Ta discovered the sword spirits when they appeared above Jian Chen, so he asked a question while full of doubt. The gaze he directed at the two of them was filled with a deep curiosity. The appearances of the sword spirits were the same as before. They appeared as a young man and a woman around the age of twenty. The man was handsome while the woman was pretty. They seemed like a match made in heaven, and the only flaw was that they were illusory and not tangible.

Jian Chen gave a simple explanation to Tie Ta before asking the sword spirits, “Zi Ying, Qing Suo, what’s this Xuanhuang Microcosm about?”

The sword spirits were extremely excited as they constantly looked around. Their excitement became even more intense instead of dissipating, as if they had found a huge treasure stash.

“It’s actually an untouched Xuanhuang Microcosm. This is fantastic, far too fantastic. Master, we never thought that you’d have such great fortune that you’d come across an untouched Xuanhuang Microcosm,” Qing Suo said in delight as her excitement surged.

Zi Ying understood that Jian Chen had no idea what a Xuanhuang Microcosm was, so he explained what it was in detail, “Master, the Xuanhuang Microcosm is a microcosm formed from Xuanhuang Qi. Xuanhuang Qi is an energy that arises from Chaotic Force and is only second to Chaotic Force. It is even greater than the Yin Qi and Yang Qi that arises from chaos. However, Xuanhuang Qi is also known as Creation Force because it can create everything. This microcosm before you is created from Xuanhuang Qi, so we call it a Xuanhuang Microcosm.”

“Many heavenly resources and heavenly treasures appear in Xuanhuang Microcosms, treasures that can even move experts at the level of our former master. Because the Xuanhuang Microcosm is filled with Xuanhuang Qi, everything that appears here is extraordinary. Even the most common heavenly resources in the outside world will drastically increase in value after they are tainted with Xuanhuang Qi. An ordinary thousand-year-old heavenly resource from the Xuanhuang Microcosm will be worth a two-thousand-year-old or even three-thousand-year-old heavenly resource outside.

“Other than that, the Xuanhuang Microcosm will give birth to many wondrous items that can’t possibly appear in the outside world, and the spring water filled with the presence of life master has just ingested is one of them. The origin of this spring water is known as the Spring of Life. Not only can this water be used to create immortal pills, it can greatly increase their grade. At the same time, ingesting the water can heal any hidden wounds, so it possesses regenerative properties. However, the most valuable part is still the essence that has been nurtured for countless years within the water. The essence can extend lives, nourish the life source of people, and refine their souls. It can also heal wounds on the soul which makes it extremely valuable.”

Jian Chen could not help but marvel at Zi Ying’s explanation. He had never thought that he had unknowingly come to a such

treasury. From what Zi Ying said, every single item within this microcosm was a treasure. Not only did this include the useless-looking vegetation, it probably included an ordinary blade of grass and possibly even the soil.

At this moment, Jian Chen's gaze landed on the thumb-sized ball of liquid at the bottom of the pool. He asked, "Zi Ying is this the essence that's been nurtured by the spring water?"

Zi Ying only glanced at the liquid at the bottom of the pool before continuing to observe his surroundings. He said, "Correct, that's the essence, but most heavenly resources are split into different grades. The Spring of Life here is only the first grade of the Immortal Tier, which will produce spring water of the the lowest grade among all of the spring waters. It's useless to some stronger people. If master reaches the sixth layer of the Chaotic Body, the spring water and essence here would be completely useless."

Jian Chen immediately became disappointed when he heard that the spring water was useless to stronger people, but it was immediately replaced by delight when he heard the last part. He understood now. It was only the first grade of the Immortal Tier, but it was useful to experts below Saint Emperor. It was probably useless to those of the Origin realm.

Jian Chen immediately pulled out a container and eagerly began to collect the water after gaining an understanding of its value. Jian Chen then carefully stored away the thumb-sized essence at the bottom of the pool.

"Master, this Spring of Life is what this forest relies on, so you can't drain the whole thing," Qing Suo warned.

Jian Chen nodded. In the end, he only took half of all the water, which was over fifty liters in total. If it were not for the fact that his gourd was similar to a Space Ring and contained another space inside, he would probably have needed several of them to store all the water.

“Master, the closer you get to the center of the microcosm, the more heavenly resources you’ll come across, and their quality will be even greater. We’re only on the very outskirts right now. Let’s travel further in. There’ll definitely be even more good things inside, and even the Springs of Life will be of higher grades,” said Zi Ying excitedly. Although there were very few items useful to him in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, that was not necessarily the same for Jian Chen.

“Zi Ying, will there be even more Springs of Life inside,” Jian Chen suddenly asked as his face became rather blank.

“Correct. Although there are no Springs of Life in the outside world, they’re equivalent to ordinary water sources here. They are not rare. The Springs of Life near the center of the microcosm can even form small lakes.”

Jian Chen glanced at the palm-sized gourd in his hand. He had not purchased it himself but found it in a space ring owned by one of the experts that had died to his hands. Every single gourd contained around half a cubic meter of space, so they could store roughly five hundred liters. However, he only had around ten of gourds in total. Although he had a few more containers that could store liquids, the amount of space was limited. Even if he combined all the containers, he could only store around ten thousand liters at most.

The Xuanhuang Microcosm contained many Springs of Life and the water in it was so precious that it was non-existent outside. Jian Chen obviously wanted to store enough of it in one stroke, and ten thousand liters was clearly not enough for him. After all, the worldly ebb in the sea realm only occurred once every ten thousand years.

Chapter 1254: Comprehension Tea Tree

Jian Chen's face immediately became rather bitter when he thought of the fact that he did not have enough containers. The Springs of Life were everywhere in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, but they were extremely rare in the outside world. Could he only take ten thousand liters with him since he had entered the Xuanhuang Microcosm by coincidence?

Although it sounded like a lot, there were just far too many people Jian Chen needed to think about on the Tian Yuan Continent. Ten thousand liters was nowhere near enough.

"Zi Ying, Qing Suo, I want to collect some of the spring water in this place and take it out, but I don't have enough storage for it at all. Do you have any good ideas?" With no other choice, Jian Chen could only seek help from the sword spirits. In most cases, heavenly resources needed to be stored carefully through a special method, and he did not understand the spring water, so he obviously could not think of a better idea.

"Then do this, Master. Gather some of the soil in this place and use it to create pools in the artifact space. You can load the spring water into those pools," Qing Suo immediately responded.

A sliver of surprise appeared in Jian Chen's eyes. He asked, "Does that work? Won't it affect the efficacy of the spring water?"

Qing Suo giggled and sweetly answered, "There's no need for you to worry, master. The water's efficacy will not be affected for at least ten years. Once master leaves the microcosm, you'll have plenty of time to find even more containers to store the spring water, but all of them must be wooden.

Jian Chen completely stopped worrying with that. He did not need to worry about the fact that the containers needed to be wooden. All he needed was to pass down a single message when he returned to the Tian Yuan Continent and the Flame Mercenaries

along with the Bloodsword sect would be able to help him find a large number of wooden storage items.

Afterward, Jian Chen immediately began to collect some of the Xuanhuang Microcosm's soil. He sent all of it into the artifact space and got the several dozen elites of the Flame Mercenaries in there to create pools to store spring water.

Zi Ying glanced at the corpses of the two beasts and said, "Master, you can collect the corpses of the Xuanhuang beasts as well. Since these beasts have grown up in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, their flesh is extremely nutritious to cultivators. They will bring many great benefits if their meat is consumed over a long period of time."

With that, Jian Chen collected the two corpses as well before strolling through the forest. After confirming there was nothing valuable left, the two of them headed off. They traveled in the direction the sword spirits provided, heading to the central region.

The Xuanhuang Microcosm was filled with various wondrous treasures, but almost all the good items gathered near the center. There were very few items on the outskirts.

Since they couldn't stay in this place for very long, the two of them traveled very quickly to save time. After entering the Xuanhuang Microcosm, the sword spirits maintained their human form above Jian Chen's head, moving along with him. The task of looking for treasures along the way fell to them. After all, their knowledge and experience was incomparable to Jian Chen. Many heavenly resources seemed ordinary and did not stand out in any aspect, but their value would be incalculable. Jian Chen would not necessarily recognize them even if they were placed right before him, so he needed a guide like the sword spirits.

After traveling for another several hundred kilometers, a small hill gradually appeared before Jian Chen and Tie Ta. It was filled with wondrous flowers and the fragrance they gave off lingered in

the air several dozen kilometers away. It was a faint but lovely smell.

Jian Chen smelled the unique fragrance from far away and subconsciously sucked in a deep breath. He immediately felt at ease and reinvigorated, as if his head had cleared up a lot at that moment. A light, joyful feeling filled him all over.

“These flowers can’t be any regular flowers for them to have such great effects on Saint Kings,” Jian Chen praised from the bottom of his heart. The Xuanhuang Microcosm really was littered with treasures.

The two of them arrived at the hill very quickly. The whole place was filled with various flowers. Jian Chen had never seen a single one of them before, so he obviously could not name them.

Now that he was in the sea of flowers, the fragrance was becoming heavier and heavier. It slowly entered Jian Chen’s body through his nostrils, and he felt intoxicated. It felt like all his pores had opened up and the foul gases contained within him had all been released. Even though that was not really the case, the fragrance made him feel such a wondrous thing.

“These flowers are known as Heaven-connecting Flowers. Their fragrance can help you concentrate and refine things. If you cultivate in a place where a lot of these flowers are planted, not only can they refine the energy within you, they can suppress your inner demons, providing you with a smooth path for cultivation and your demons will not affect you,” Zi Ying explained to Jian Chen.

“I want to take all these flowers away and then plant some at the Changyang clan and in Flame City,” Jian Chen immediately made up his mind. He understood extremely well just how valuable these flowers were.

Qing Suo rolled her eyes at Jian Chen when she heard him. She giggled, “Master, these flowers aren’t easy to plant. They can only

survive in the soil of the Xuanhuang Microcosm, and they need to be watered by the water from Springs of Life. The spring water appears naturally in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, but they're a consumable in other places. If master really does plan on planting these flowers in all those places, master'll need at least several thousand liters of spring water to water them so that they can survive."

Jian Chen secretly became speechless. Providing the soil for the flowers was no problem, but he could not afford the water. However, Jian Chen did not want to let go of the flowers with how beneficial they were to cultivating. He did not take them all. Instead, he dug away several dozen square meters of flowers to replant in the artifact space. He even removed a lot of the soil in the surroundings just in case.

Even though it was just a few dozen square meters of flowers, he needed at least a few liters of spring water to support them every month.

At this moment, Zi Ying's eyes suddenly froze. He stared at the extremely-obscure tree that grew at the top of the hill and cried out, "That's a Comprehension Tea Tree. I never thought that we'd come across one so quickly. Master, the tea that you make with the leaves of the Comprehension Tea Tree is extremely precious. Ingesting the tea can assist people in comprehending the ways. Even in our former world, a few leaves from trees of higher grade would cause many experts to fight until they were bloodied and bruised. Master, if you have the assistance of the tea leaves, you'll be able to reach the first realm of the Way of the Sword in the shortest time possible once you forge the Azulet swords."

Chapter 1255: Class 8 Xuanhuang Beast

Jian Chen's gaze immediately landed on the highest point of the small hill, on the extremely obscure tree. His eyes immediately began to burn with desire. He did not even need to think about how great and valuable the tea leaves would be since they could help him comprehend the Way of the Sword.

Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash as he shot toward the highest point at an extremely fast speed. He was a blur. He was not far away from the tree, so he arrived right before it in a moment. There was actually a pool of water near the tree, and it was filled with green spring water. Both its size and depth exceeded the Spring of Life Jian Chen had come across in the small forest before.

However, Jian Chen did not care at all despite finding a much larger Spring of Life. He did not even glance at it, only noticing its existence from the corner of his eye. Currently, the focus of his eyes was the Comprehension Tea Tree. That was where he gathered all his attention.

The tree was only a meter tall, but it was extremely sturdy. It possessed a thick layering of bark that did not match with its height and many branches. However, there were only eighty-one leaves scattered across the whole tree. On each leaf, there were eighty-one veins. These veins seemed to have grown naturally without a specified pattern, but with a close observation, they seemed to fuse and resonate with the world, like they possessed the infinite truths of the world.

Jian Chen stared at the veins of the leaves, and gradually, his attention was drawn into them. In that moment, he seemed to have seen the pitch-black cosmos as the complicated and profound truths of the world flashed through his head. Vaguely, he felt like he had understood something, seen something, and grasped something.

However, this feeling only lasted for a very short amount of time. When Jian Chen returned to his senses, he immediately discovered that the feeling just then had completely vanished without a trace. He was still the same, having not understood or grasped anything.

Jian Chen gasped. The Comprehension Tea Tree sure was extraordinarily wonderful. Just by staring at the veins of a leaf, he had experienced something like that, as if he was about to comprehend the truths of the world. If he drank the tea made from the leaves of the tree like the Azulet sword spirits had said, wouldn't the effect increase by several fold?

On the Tian Yuan Continent, Heaven Saint Masters needed to comprehend the mysteries of the world to reach Saint Ruler. Advancing to Saint King or even Saint Emperor, required the comprehension of the mysteries of the world as well. It was just that the comprehension required was on whole different levels.

Among the three thousand great ways, the mysteries of the world comprehended by Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and even Saint Emperors were all a way. Their rough control over space and the ability to use Spatial Force was a way as well, and Saint Tier Battle Skills also belonged to one of the ways. This was even the case for the five realms of the Way of the Sword. Not only could the tea leaves allow Jian Chen to comprehend the first realm of the Way of the Sword as quickly as possible, they were also beneficial to the cultivators on the Tian Yuan Continent as well. The tea leaves could assist them in comprehending the mysteries of the world.

Clearly, Jian Chen understood this, and he immediately became extremely excited. Although the spring water and flowers he had obtained were unbelievable treasures, they were nothing compared to the Comprehension Tea Tree.

At this moment, Jian Chen felt the ground beneath his feet tremble. Soon afterward, soil was suddenly kicked into the air several dozen meters away, revealing a hole that was a meter wide. A three-meter-long, tiger-like Xuanhuang beast that was

completely pitch-black with a single horn on its forehead leaped out. Its scarlet eyes shone with aggression as it stared fixedly at Jian Chen. It was filled with hostility and a powerful presence radiated from its body.

Jian Chen stared at the Xuanhuang beast that had suddenly appeared, and he felt slightly surprised. It had actually already reached the level of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King. However, it lacked intelligence and the abilities of Saint Kings, only possessing the instincts of a beast, so it only had the battle prowess of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King at most. But since it was a Xuanhuang beast born in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, even a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King would need tremendous effort to slay it with the toughness of its body.

Even though that was the case, the beast was still abnormally powerful; at the very least, Saint Emperors that came from the outside world would not even be able to flee before it, unless they were like Jian Chen and Tie Ta, whose strengths were not restricted.

The Xuanhuang beast pounded forward dexterously and immediately transformed into a blur, rushing over from several dozen meters away and arriving between Jian Chen and the Comprehension Tea Tree. It constantly growled with deep rumble.

Jian Chen understood what was happening when he saw what it did. Almost every region in the microcosm with life was protected by a few Xuanhuang beasts. Just like the small forest he had passed through earlier, it was the same with this hill covered in various vegetation, and clearly, the hill where he stood was the territory of this Xuanhuang beast. It was just that this beast was stronger than the two from before.

The Xuanhuang beast gave a deep growl in warning once again as it constantly raked one of its front paws against the ground. It held a stance that seemed like it was about to launch an attack, warning Jian Chen to leave. With its bestial instincts, it could clearly sense

that Jian Chen was not easy to deal with, which was why it did not attack him as soon as it had seen him.

Jian Chen coldly smiled. He needed to obtain the Comprehension Tea Tree in front of him. He would not give up on it even if the Xuanhuang beast was at the level of Saint Emperors, let alone a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Jian Chen drew his Emperor Armament from his Space Ring unhurriedly. Stabbing out, a sword Qi a finger wide immediately shot out, striking the beast's head. It left behind a small gash.

The bodies of Xuanhuang beasts were extremely tough. Jian Chen's casual strike had made it bleed, but the small injury was basically nothing to it. However, it had become furious because of Jian Chen's attack. It roared before leaping toward Jian Chen with a wild gust of wind.

Chapter 1256: Killing the Beast and Obtaining the Leaves

The bodies of Xuanhuang beasts were extremely tough. Jian Chen's casual strike had made it bleed, but the small injury was basically nothing to it. However, it had become furious because of Jian Chen's attack. It roared before leaping toward Jian Chen with a wild gust of wind.

Jian Chen did not continue to attack when he saw the Xuanhuang beast lunge over. He gently kicked off the ground with the tip of his foot and drifted back as quickly as the Xuanhuang beast, softly creating a beautiful curve in the air like a falling leaf as he landed away from the hill.

When Jian Chen landed back on the ground, he was already several hundred meters away from the hill. However, he did not stop because of that. He kicked off with the tip of his foot again and began to fly back extremely quickly.

The Xuanhuang beast had become aggravated when Jian Chen had injured it. It pursued him without rest and constantly roared. However, it was unable to get within ten meters of Jian Chen. Its speed was actually exactly the same as Jian Chen's speed, making it difficult for it to get any closer.

After all, the Xuanhuang beasts did not have any control over the mysteries of the world. They could not use Spatial Force to move faster.

Jian Chen continued to back off as he pulled the beast away. He came to a stop five kilometers from the hill while staring at the Xuanhuang beast with shining eyes. The beast did not seem to be a Class 8 vicious beast in his eyes. Instead, it appeared to be an extremely precious Class 8 Monster Core.

Tie Ta stood in the sea of flowers on the hill several kilometers

away. He glanced at Jian Chen before losing interest. He continued to sniff the flowers in a bent over position. He closed his eyes as he greedily breathed in the heavy fragrance. He seemed to be intoxicated.

A sword Qi flashed to life several kilometers away from the hill. Jian Chen was already embroiled in a great battle with the Class 8 Xuanhuang beast. The Emperor Armament in his hands glowed bright. Its snow-white blade was like a mirror, reflecting its surroundings.

Swish!

Jian Chen stabbed out extremely quickly. With a flash of white light, the Emperor Armament shot out like a bolt of lightning, shooting toward the beast's head.

At the same time, the Xuanhuang beast launched its own attack on Jian Chen. The attack was simple and concise, lacking any abilities. It opened its large mouth and bit at Jian Chen's weapon.

Ding! As if it was a clash of metal, Jian Chen's Emperor Armament was tightly gripped by the beast's sharp teeth. The toughness of its jaw was unimaginable.

The Xuanhuang beast forcefully twisted its head after it had gotten a hold of Jian Chen's Emperor Armament in attempt to snap it. However, Emperor Armaments were left behind by Saint Emperors, so no matter how hard the beast tried, it could not break the blade since the sword was even tougher than its jaws. Its teeth failed to leave a single mark on the Emperor Armament.

The Xuanhuang beast seemed to have understood that it could not break Jian Chen's Emperor Armament, so it simply yanked the weapon away. However, Jian Chen stood like a sword as he held onto the Emperor Armament. No matter how hard the beast tried, it was unable to make Jian Chen take a simple step, but web-like cracks quickly spread out in all directions with his feet at the center. They reached several kilometers away.

The Class 8 Xuanhuang beast possessed shocking strength, but Jian Chen knew many skills. He stood there as if his feet were rooted to the ground, redirecting the force that the Xuanhuang beast exerted on him into the ground. He achieved an effect where he seemed to be connected to the ground. It was impossible for the Xuanhuang beast to be Jian Chen's opponent with just its bodily strength.

Jian Chen sighed inside. If the beast in front of him possessed intelligence, killing it would take some effort, but it just happened to lack that. All it possessed was great strength that could only follow its bestial instincts, so dealing with it was easy. Suddenly, Jian Chen's gaze grew cold, and he suddenly channeled some energy through his sword-wielding hand. He raised the beast, which was still biting the blade, high up in the air. He quickly spun in a circle a few times before smashing it against the ground. It created a huge crater, but the beast's jaws remained tightly locked around the weapon.

Jian Chen arrived before it with a single step. He raised his foot high up into the air before viciously stopping on the Xuanhuang beast's head. The force was abnormally great, burying the beast's head deep into the soil below.

Roar! The Xuanhuang beast was angered by Jian Chen's stomp, so it produced an earth-shaking roar. It finally let go of the Emperor Armament as it bit at Jian Chen's foot.

Jian Chen coldly smiled. He avoided the huge mouth of the beast as he coated the Emperor Armament with a layer of Chaotic Force, taking advantage of its attack to stab the beast in the head. This time, Jian Chen felt an even greater resistance. The beast's head was unbelievably tough. Jian Chen believed that even steel that had been forged countless times would not be as tough as this beast's head.

This was because Jian Chen could split any type of steel, no matter how great, into two with a simple stroke of his blade like a

hot knife through butter. However, Jian Chen had to use a lot of force, including Chaotic Force, on the Xuanhuang beast's head, and he was only able to stab half of the sword in, just happening to reach the center of the beast's head.

Jian Chen did not give the Xuanhuang beast the chance to struggle one final time. Sword Qi formed from Chaotic Force surged from the Emperor Armament, reducing the head of the beast into a mess in a single moment. The Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King Xuanhuang beast died in the end without even being able to let out a miserable wail.

Jian Chen found a thumb-sized energy crystal within the beast's body. Only after sensing the powerful and energetic ripples of energy did he nod in satisfaction. The energy within the crystal was equivalent to a Class 8 Monster Core.

Class 8 Monster Cores were extremely rare on the Tian Yuan Continent. Only the Gilligan clan was in possession of one or two Class 8 Magical Beasts.

Chapter 1257: Reconstruction Gel

After removing the energy crystal from the Xuanhuang beast's corpse, Jian Chen tossed the carcass into his Space Ring. He had obtained a Class 7 and 8 Monster Core in less than half a day after coming here, which delighted him very much. At the same time, he believed that there would definitely be even more Class 7 and 8 Xuanhuang beasts as he progressed further into the depths. That way, he would be able to obtain more and more of these energy crystals. He might even be able to break through to the fourth layer using the energy crystals from the Xuanhuang Microcosm.

Although Jian Chen had managed to increase his chaotic neidan from the size of a chicken egg to the size of a fist and reached the peak of the third layer back in the whirlpool of energy, it did not increase his battle prowess at all. It only made the Chaotic Force he could store in his dantian reach to a limit. Only by breaking through and reaching the fourth layer could his strength increase.

Jian Chen returned to the hill. His battle with the Class 8 Xuanhuang beast was extremely short, having ended in less than a minute. Tie Ta remained in the sea of flowers. He was intoxicated by the fragrance so much that he could not return to himself.

Jian Chen glanced at Tie Ta from quite far away and did not disturb him. He knew that Tie Ta was no weaker than him right now, but the matters he had experienced and the heavenly resources he had come across were nowhere near as plentiful. The fragrance of the Heaven-connecting Flowers was extremely attractive to someone who had not come across various heavenly resources before, let alone Tie Ta who had rarely ever come across any of them. This was why Tie Ta's immunity for the flowers was not as great as his own.

Jian Chen arrived in front of the Comprehension Tea Tree and was about to begin collecting the leaves. The reason why he had fought the Xuanhuang beast five kilometers away was because he

was afraid that the ripples of battle would damage the tree. He did not want such a valuable Comprehension Tea Tree to be destroyed by his own carelessness.

“Master, the Comprehension Tea Leaves are rather different from regular heavenly resources. You must not use your hands to touch the leaves when you collect them. You must use their branches instead. At the same time, you cannot use jade boxes to store them. It would be best if you used wooden boxes created from the trees that naturally grow in the Xuanhuang Microcosm,” Zi Ying warned Jian Chen. He was afraid that Jian Chen would store the tea leaves like any other heavenly resource and either ruin its quality as a result or destroy them entirely.

Jian Chen immediately used the Emperor Armament to chop down a 30-centimeter-wide tree nearby. The trees in the Xuanhuang Microcosm were extremely tough. Jian Chen needed to swing the sword several times to cut through the tree that was only as thick as his waist. Afterward, he hollowed out a piece of wood and created a simple and extremely rough-looking box before returning to the location of Comprehension Tea Tree. He gently snapped off a few branches of the tree and used them as chopsticks, removing the leaves one by one.

The leaves of the Comprehension Tea Tree took an extremely long time to grow. They would only grow back after ten thousand years. However, this also meant that basically every time the worldly ebb descended, the trees would be covered in leaves again, so Jian Chen did not hold back. He removed all eighty-one leaves on the tree and carefully stored them in his wooden box before sealing it up with self-crafted wooden nails.

“Master, these Comprehension Tea Leaves are only of the first grade of the Immortal Tier. They’re the lowest quality in the entire Xuanhuang Microcosm. You’ll definitely come across trees of higher quality as you head further into the depths. Different quality leaves need to be stored separately, so it’s best if you make

a few more boxes,” Qing Suo explained to Jian Chen.

As a result, Jian Chen made a few more simple boxes from the remaining wood, around a dozen just in case. Every single one of them was around half the size of his body, so they could easily store several hundred tea leaves.

Jian Chen originally planned to take the tree with him and plant in the outside world, but he could only give up on that idea after he learned from the Azulet sword spirits that the tree could only grow within the Xuanhuang Microcosm, and it would immediately wilt if it left the realm. Clearly, Comprehension Tea Trees could not be planted like the Heaven-connecting Flowers.

In the end, Jian Chen left behind the bare Comprehension Tea Tree. It stood all by itself on top of the hill. Although its trunk was filled with vigor, there was not a single leaf left. It seemed like an old man who had all his hair plucked out.

Afterward, Jian Chen arrived before the Spring of Life several dozen meters away. The pool was much larger than the one he had come across in the small forest, and it contained several times more spring water as well, reaching over five hundred liters. A ball of essence sat at the bottom of the pool as well.

Jian Chen immediately pulled out several storage containers from his Space Ring to collect the spring water. He removed around two hundred and fifty liters, half of the total again. He obviously did not miss the essence either.

Jian Chen checked through the lair of the Xuanhuang beast after collecting the spring water, but he found nothing. He then called over Tie Ta to leave. He continued into the depths of the region by following the sword spirits' directions.

But after traveling for ten kilometers, Jian Chen finally came across the other material that the sea goddess needed to reconstruct her body. It was a white substance the size of a fist and slightly transparent. It was soft to the touch and elastic, but it was

extremely tough at the same time. Jian Chen was unable to rip it in half when he used all his force.

“Master, this is called Reconstruction Gel. It can reconstruct the bodies of people. It’s something extremely common in our former world, but we never thought that the sea goddess mentioned by master would understand the usages of this gel. She really has surprised us,” said Zi Ying.

Chapter 1258: Recurrence of the Nine-colored Clouds

Jian Chen immediately collected the Reconstruction Gel. Although it was extremely common in the former world of the sword spirits, it was probably something that would never appear on the Tian Yuan Continent.

“It’s just a pity that there’s only fist-sized amount of this gel. It’s nowhere near enough to reconstruct the sea goddess’ body. I’ll need to collect as much of this gel and essence from the Springs of Life as possible in the future,” Jian Chen mumbled to himself before continuing on his way with Tie Ta.

Back on the Tian Yuan Continent, Changyang Ba and Jian Chen’s mother, Bi Yuntian currently sat in the conference hall of the Changyang clan with several sagely old men in luxurious robes as they conversed.

Because Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian had managed to give birth to an extremely impressive son, they had already become figures that could create a great sensation. Even though their strength was nothing on the Tian Yuan Continent, the respect they deserved even exceeded the kings of the eight great kingdoms. Before the two of them, even the Saint King ancestors of ancient clans needed to show some respect and lower themselves to be on friendly terms. They dared not to offend them.

The sagely old men that currently spoke with them were the Saint Rulers of the closest ancient clan to the Gesun Kingdom. They had come under the orders of their ancestor with precious gifts to visit the patriarch of the clan and the fourth madam.

Saint Rulers were all hermit experts on the Tian Yuan Continent. It was common for them to not appear within a century, and some people could even go their entire lives without catching a glimpse of a Saint Ruler’s glory. There were no Saint Rulers that watched

over any organizations in the Gesun Kingdom apart from the Changyang clan. If it was before, Changyang Ba would have needed to nod and bow while speaking carefully. He would have been fearful of offending a Saint Ruler with just one wrong word and drawing disaster upon his clan.

But now, not only did the two of them stand on equal ground with Saint Rulers of ancient clans, able to converse without any fear, they could even show dissatisfaction. That was how glorious and prideful they had become.

It had been more than once that they felt prideful for their impressive son, because they both knew very well that the status of the clan and their own glory was all brought on by their son, Jian Chen, himself.

If they did not have Jian Chen, the current Changyang clan would probably be so insignificant that they would have been trampled by the Huayun sect, which only had two Heaven Saint Masters.

“Patriarch, madam Bi, we shall bid farewell. Our ancestor of the Yunhe clan has personally told us to tell the patriarch and madam that you are welcome to visit our clan any time. We will definitely welcome you with the greatest etiquette. We hope that we can be on good terms with your great clan and the esteemed young master forever and become the greatest of friends.” The Saint Rulers from the ancient clans stood up and clasped their hands at the couple. They spoke extremely politely.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian hurried to return the gesture, but they were completely calm since experts of ancient and hermit clans had constantly visited them over the past few years. They had received Saint Rulers countless times, and even the Saint King ancestor of the Tianmu clan had paid them a personal visit.

At this very moment, a powerful ripple of energy suddenly emerged from the back courtyards of the Changyang clan. Even

with the formations and barriers, it was not concealed.

The Saint Rulers who were about to leave immediately became surprised. They were shocked by the powerful ripple of energy. It was just far too powerful. With their understanding, even Saint Rulers at the Ninth Heavenly Layer could not emit such powerful ripples of energy.

“Patriarch, madam Bi, may I ask what this is about?” One of the old men asked out of curiosity.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian looked at each other. They had obviously felt the ripple of energy come from the back courtyard, but that had already become the forbidden grounds of the Changyang clan. Other than their son, no one in the clan could casually set foot there, so they had no idea what was happening there.

“Look at the sky outside!” Suddenly, one of the Saint Rulers cried out as he pointed at the sky outside the hall.

Everyone immediately shifted their gazes and saw that a layer of colorful clouds had already flooded the deep blue sky in a silent manner. There was a total of seven colors.

“They are seven-colored rainbow clouds. It’s the sign of someone reaching Saint King. Someone’s broken through to Saint King!”

“Is there really another person breaking through to Saint King in the Changyang clan?”

The Saint Rulers of the Yunhe clan all cried out as unhideable admiration appeared plastered across their faces. In this era that lacked Saint Emperors, Saint Kings had basically become the greatest experts of the continent, existences that stood at the apex.

Even though it was just breaking through to Saint King, just overcoming the gap between Saint Ruler and Saint King made reaching the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint King and standing on the apex of the continent a possibility.

The rainbow clouds had appeared silently and covered a radius of several hundred kilometers. Even the Saint Kings in Mercenary City that was a million kilometers away could sense it.

The new grand elder of Mercenary City hovered above the land as he stared in the direction of the Gesun Kingdom in interest. He mumbled, "From today on, another Saint King has appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent. I just wonder who it is."

The four Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom silently hovered above the four Qin Heaven Palaces as they stared silently in the direction of the Gesun Kingdom. Admiration filled all of their eyes.

Every Saint Ruler wished that they could become a Saint King one day and truly stand at the apex of the continent. Unfortunately, there were many people who would end up stuck at the Ninth Heavenly Layer, and there were only a few who could truly overcome the barrier of becoming a Saint King.

Aside from them, all the Saint Rulers who had sensed that someone was about to become a Saint King hovered high up in the air in various places across the continent. They all stared blankly at the horizon.

A long whistle rang out from the back courtyard of the Changyang clan. A figure shot into the sky with lightning-like speed and bathed in endless light. It was an extremely impressive sight.

The figure was a beautiful woman. Even though she seemed to have reached middle age, she was still extremely pretty. She was Changyang Zu Yeyun.

She had been stuck at the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler for many years already. Her mental state had been incomplete because she was always thinking about her son, Changyang Zu Yunkong, which was why she never broke through. Not only had her son returned safely, even the seal in his head had been

removed, so her greatest dream of many years had been fulfilled. Now that her mental state was complete, she had finally become a Saint King.

At this moment, a Space Gate suddenly appeared. Changyang Zu Yunxiao, who had been tasked with watching over the royal palace of the Gesun Kingdom, rushed back as soon as possible. The gaze he used to look at Changyang Zu Yeyun was filled with excitement. Not only did reaching Saint King bring on an increase in strength, it also brought an increase of life. Saint Kings could live longer.

“Another Saint King’s appeared for the Changyang clan.” The Saint Rulers from the Yunhe clan all sighed emotionally.

However, only a short while after the seven-colored clouds had appeared for Changyang Zu Yeyun when she became a Saint King, they rapidly dispersed. Soon after, rainbow clouds of even brighter colors suddenly filled the sky, stretching even further. This time, the clouds engulfed the entire continent, and they had increased to nine colors instead of the seven from earlier. The nine colors merged together to form the most beautiful scene ever. The clouds dyed the entire world with different colors and blotted out the sun.

The joy on Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s faces immediately froze. They stared blankly at the nine-colored clouds as disbelief filled their faces.

Changyang Zu Xiao appeared silently in the sky. He also stared at the clouds in shock as his expression became extremely mixed.

Chapter 1259: The Third Saint Emperor

“Nine-colored clouds. It’s actually the nine-colored rainbow clouds. Has another person reached Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent?” Several Saint Rulers flew out of the forbidden grounds of the Changyang clan and wondered aloud while staring at the clouds that stretched across the continent.

These Saint Rulers were all people who had broken away from the protector Changyang clan with Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao. All of them were members of the Zu branch, and any single one of them would possess terrifying seniority among the Changyang clan of Lore City. All of them were Jian Chen’s great-grandfathers.

Staring blankly at the rainbow clouds in the sky, Changyang Zu Yeyun revealed an extremely interesting expression. Today should have been the day where she celebrated reaching Saint King. The descent of the seven-colored clouds would have informed the entire world that another Saint King had been born on the continent. However, she had never thought that as soon as the clouds that celebrated her breakthrough appeared, they would be completely engulfed by nine-colored rainbow clouds. Changyang Zu Yeyun had no clue how to describe how she felt because of this.

“Houston reached Saint Emperor only recently, having become the second one of the Tian Yuan Continent. I never thought that another Saint Emperor would appear on the Tian Yuan Continent so soon. This really is unbelievable. Is breaking through to Saint Emperor really that easy now?” Changyang Zu Yunxiao looked at the sky as he asked with mixed feelings.

Changyang Zu Xiao gently sighed, “From now on, our Tian Yuan Continent will have three Saint Emperors. I just wonder who the person who has broken through is. Does he belong to the protector clans? Or does he belong to some other organization? Or maybe he’s even an independent cultivator?”

“Now that our Tian Yuan Continent has three Saint Emperors, our absolute strength is on par to the Beast God Continent. It doesn’t matter who he is, he’ll increase the strength of our continent at the very least. Now if the Beast God Continent tries to invade the Tian Yuan Continent again, they better think it over properly,” said Changyang Zu Yeyun. Although her glory for reaching Saint King had been overshadowed by a Saint Emperor, she did not become annoyed at all. Instead, she became rather happy.

If the seven-colored rainbow clouds Changyang Zu Yeyun’s breakthrough to Saint King had lead to a few emotional sighs among all the Saint Kings, the appearance of the nine-colored rainbow clouds had thrown the entire continent into a commotion again. It shocked all the Saint Kings, and they experienced both admiration and envy inside.

Saint Emperor was a realm that was unreachable in the eyes of all Saint Rulers, but it was the realm that all Saint Kings strived for on the Tian Yuan Continent. It was just that breaking through was extremely difficult. The continent, with its enormous population, had given birth to many geniuses. Reaching the Great Perfection of Saint King for them was no difficulty, but reaching Saint Emperor was virtually impossible.

Just when the grand elder in the air was about leave Mercenary City, he discovered that the rainbow clouds in the sky had dissipated and had been replaced by nine-colored rainbow clouds.

The grand elder obviously knew what the nine-colored clouds represented extremely well. He immediately became stunned as he stared at the clouds blankly. He remained rather dazed for quite some time.

It had been less than half a year since Houston had become a Saint Emperor, yet another Saint Emperor had appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent now. This made it rather difficult for Saint Kings, who were used to Saint Emperors only appearing once every

thousand years or several thousand years, to accept.

The space around the grand elder began to ripple, and in just a few seconds, several dozen experts had already appeared around him. None of them were weaker than Saint Rulers, and there were even several Saint Kings sandwiched between them.

All the experts of Mercenary City had been drawn out by the descent of the nine-colored clouds.

“Another person’s become a Saint Emperor. I wonder who it is...”

“In three days, we will know who has become a Saint Emperor...”

Two of the Saint Kings murmured after feeling stunned for quite some time.

All the Saint Kings from the three great empires, protector clans, and ancient clans emerged from seclusion, including some independent Saint Kings who dwelled in desolate mountains.

An extremely run-down thatched hut stood silently in an ancient forest that was always enshrouded by mist. The sounds of magical beasts would constantly ring out, including deafening roars that would reverberate across the sky from time to time. These were the roars of Class 6 Magical Beasts, and there were more than just one of them. However, all of these magical beasts gathered around the thatched hut. Even though the hut sat exactly where the energy of the world was most abundant in the forest, none of the magical beasts dared to step a single foot closer. They maintained a distance of three thousand meters from the hut.

At this moment, an ordinary-looking old man covered with wrinkles and wearing coarse robes emerged from the hut. He looked at the sky as a gleam of light shone across his ancient eyes. However, he then deeply sighed, “I never thought that someone else would reach Saint Emperor so quickly. I’ve already been stuck at Great Perfection for several hundred years, and I don’t have

much time left, but I still can't break through. I wonder if I'll have the chance to become a Saint Emperor..."

In the blink of an eye, three days passed. The nine-colored clouds remained in the sky, but an odd rippled spread across the land from far away.

Without any hesitation, all the Saint Kings ripped open space to create Space Gates to reach the origin of the ripple. Many of them wanted to know just who had become a Saint Emperor.

At this moment, a white-robed, middle-aged man sat on the tip of a sword-shaped mountain in an ancient mountain range several million kilometers away from Mercenary City. He radiated with an extremely vast presence, and an extremely terrifying energy pulsed from his body in an unstable manner. It would surge out of him from time to time, causing the space around him to violently shake.

Space Gates opened one after another several thousand meters away from him. From them emerged Saint Kings from everywhere. There were experts from Mercenary City, the three great empires, the ancient clans, the protector clans, and even some independent Saint Kings.

As soon as the people arrived there, their gazes landed on the middle-aged man who sat on the mountain peak. Many of them immediately revealed a different expression.

"It's great elder Tian Jian..." A Saint King from Mercenary City immediately cried out.

Chapter 1260: Shocking Changes of Mercenary City

The Saint Kings from Mercenary City immediately became emotional while excitement appeared on their faces, because the person who had become a Saint Emperor this time was their great elder, Jian Chen!

“Fantastic, fantastic. Great elder Tian Jian has finally made a breakthrough in his final moments of his life and has become a Saint Emperor. He now possesses ten thousand years of life. Our Mercenary City finally has a Saint Emperor from now on.”

The Saint Kings from Mercenary City were completely overjoyed when they saw Tian Jian, who radiated with the presence of a Saint Emperor. From how they reacted, it was as if the person who had broken through was not Tian Jian but themselves.

However, the people of the protector clans became anguished. Other than the Saint Kings from the Pure Heart Pavilion and the Tyrant's Blade School as well as Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, and Changyang Zu Xiao, who had hurried over from Gesun Kingdom, the Saint Kings of the seven other protector clans all revealed very ugly expressions.

It was definitely a major matter for Mercenary City now that Tian Jian had become a Saint Emperor, but this was not something most people from the protector clans wished to see. They wanted the Saint Emperor to belong to any of the protector clans other than Mercenary City.

This was because Mercenary City was in possession of a supreme divine hall. This divine hall had been left behind by Mo Tianyun in ancient times, and its toughness completely exceeded any divine hall on the Tian Yuan Continent, having reached an unimaginable level. Even Saint Emperors could not leave a single mark on the divine hall when they used their full strength, and probably only

sovereign-like figures that had surpassed Saint Emperor and stepped into the Origin realm could smash through it.

Not only did the toughness of the divine hall make all Saint Emperors despair, it possessed something else that no other divine hall on the Tian Yuan Continent had, which was offensive capabilities. Not only could it repel any attacks from Saint Emperors, it could automatically attack as well.

Many years ago, a great battle had once erupted between Mercenary City and the ten protector clans. In that battle, all the protector clans worked together to beat Mercenary City into a retreat. In the final stage, a Saint Emperor from Mercenary City used the supreme divine hall and managed to slay over ten Saint Emperors from the protector clans all by himself. This matter shook the entire continent and consolidated Mercenary City's unmovable status on the continent.

In the eyes of the protector clans, the divine hall of Mercenary City was even more terrifying than the barrier spirit. This was because the barrier spirit only guarded Mercenary City. It was a defensive force and would never launch an offensive without reason. However, the divine hall was different. Once Mercenary City possessed a Saint Emperor, they would have the power to move the divine hall to anywhere. Even using it to attack the protector clans was completely possible.

Even during the age when all ten protector clans were glorious and possessed Saint Emperors, Mercenary City was invincible through the divine hall. Yet, the protector clans were just a shell of their former selves now, lacking a single Saint Emperor. Even if they used all the heritage they had gathered over the years, they would not be able to rival the divine hall of Mercenary City with their puny strength.

Although they knew that it was impossible for Mercenary City to act against the protector clans, their balance had been broken now. They needed to take precautions.

At this moment, Tian Jian slowly withdrew his vast presence. Even the energy that rippled in him was erased. He controlled the energy that had suddenly erupted from reaching Saint Emperor earlier. Soon afterward, he slowly opened his eyes. They were extremely nonchalant-looking but also dark and profound, like ink.

“Congratulations on becoming a Saint Emperor, great elder Tian Jian!”

As soon as Tian Jian stood up, all the Saint Kings who watched from afar came up to congratulate him. Their voices were filled with deep admiration. The other Saint Kings had no particular thoughts on Tian Jian becoming a Saint Emperor since a Saint Emperor in Mercenary City did not affect them at all. Only the Saint Kings of the ten protector clans did. Even if Mercenary City did not have a Saint Emperor like before, these Saint Kings were still vast existences that could not be provoked.

The Saint Kings of the protector clans came up to congratulate him as well. Although many of them did not wish to have a Saint Emperor appear for Mercenary City, they still needed to lower their heads.

Several million kilometers away in Mercenary City, the commotion caused by the clouds had completely subsided, but there were still many people who discussed the legends regarding the nine-colored clouds. There were even more people who discussed just who had become a Saint Emperor, what his background was, and so on.

Probably no one among the lowest mercenaries and small clans knew what the nine-colored clouds represented, but it was no secret to most people in Mercenary City. This was because a lot of people who gathered in the city came from hermit or even ancient clans. They had all heard the legend regarding the rainbow clouds that accompanied breakthroughs to Saint Ruler and beyond. As a result, a few people could be heard discussing about how some

great person had reached Saint Emperor in the inns and streets of the city. Some said that this new Saint Emperor came from the ten protector clans, others said they came from an ancient clan, and there were even some others who said that they were independent.

In short, no one had thought that it was the great elder of Mercenary City since they all believed that the breakthrough would have occurred within the city if it was a member of Mercenary City. All the Saint Kings of Mercenary City had basically left the city to learn who had become the Saint Emperor, so clearly, the Saint Emperor was not a part of Mercenary City.

Just as everyone was energetically discussing the new Saint Emperor, the city suddenly began to shake violently, as if a great earthquake was happening. The ground shook a lot and many people had almost tripped from being caught off-guard.

“What’s this? What’s happening...”

“Earthquake! Earthquake! Mercenary City is going through an earthquake...”

“Bullsh*t. What kind of place do you think Mercenary City is? Don’t forget that it’s guarded by the powerful barrier spirit, so how can an earthquake happen here...”

Everyone immediately became greatly shocked by the quaking city. Many of them ran out onto the streets frantically and glanced around in doubt and surprise.

None of the people in Mercenary City were weak. Let alone a mere earthquake, they had even witnessed mountain-collapsing tsunamis that were even more terrifying than any earthquake. The reason why they had all become so frantic over this sudden earthquake was because they were in no ordinary city. They were in Mercenary City.

They all understood that Mercenary City was protected by a powerful barrier. Since ancient times, the barrier had never been

destroyed by anyone, which was why there was no exaggeration in calling Mercenary City the safest place on the continent. In all the years that the city had been guarded by the barrier, everything had been peaceful. No one had ever heard about an earthquake.

Rumble!

At this moment, a heavy sound rang out from the depths of the city. With the sound, the city began to violently tremble even more. The entire city now shook, and the trembling was so great that even a few Earth Saint Masters struggled to maintain their balance. Huge, thick cracks had appeared on the ground and were increasing, growing more and more dense until they became web-like, riddling all the streets and alleyways with fissures. Even quite a few of the structures in the city had been affected by the ripple and tiny cracks appeared in the corners before quickly spreading across the entire structure.

Chapter 1261: The Protective Barrier Disappears

“Everyone leave Mercenary City immediately...” A clear voice rang out from afar. It originated from a Heaven Saint Master who was in the city, and he yelled extremely loudly. His voice basically reached all of the city.

All the people in the city returned to their senses with that. They all looked at the rapidly-expanding cracks in the ground. No one dared to stay any longer in the city, all moving away. All of them moved as quickly as they could.

Ever since the city had been founded, it had always been peaceful, yet such a violent earthquake had actually occurred now. This was far too abnormal. Almost everyone sensed that some great change was about to happen.

Swish! With the whistling of wind, a Heaven Saint Master flew through the air coated by barely visible, azure-colored, wind-attributed Saint Force. He shot through the air as an azure streak of light, quickly flying to the outskirts.

“My god, that guy’s crazy. He’s actually flying in Mercenary City. Isn’t he afraid of the punishment from the barrier...”

“Even if he’s fleeing for his life, there’s no need to do that. Doesn’t he know that flight is forbidden in the city...”

“Flight is an ability that only the upper echelon of Mercenary City can enjoy, and none of them are weaker than Saint Rulers. Not only is this person a Heaven Saint Master, he’s not a member of Mercenary City either. He’s done for...”

“That Heaven Saint Master is going to be in trouble. Let’s see just what punishment he suffers next...”

Many people who fled sneered inside as they watched the Heaven Saint Master fly. Many of them were prepared to see the outcome

of the Heaven Saint Master soon.

Among the people who fled, there were many Heaven Saint Master, but all of them had chosen to run on the ground. There was no one bold enough to fly in the city.

However, the people who were ready for a good show kept waiting, but not only did the flying Heaven Saint Master escape without any of the imagined punishments, he even flew out of the city in an extremely short amount of time.

“What’s this about? This Heaven Saint Master hasn’t suffered any punishment from the barrier. Are the rumors false...”

“No, it’s impossible for the rumors to be false. Ten years ago, I personally witnessed a Heaven Saint Master flying through the city become heavily injured by a bolt created by the barrier’s energy in the sky. Was that Heaven Saint Master some important member of Mercenary City? Is that why there was a special exception?” A black-robed old man asked in doubt. He was also a Heaven Saint Master, but he dared not to fly. He also ran quickly along the ground with everyone else.

“Everyone look, the barrier of the city has vanished.” Suddenly, an alarmed cry rang out from afar. Everyone raised their heads immediately after that, but when they saw the sky, all of their mouths hung agape as disbelief flooded their faces.

This was because the huge barrier that had always enveloped the city was rapidly fading. In less than five seconds, it had actually disappeared without a trace, despite existing for countless years without any accidents.

All the people sank inside when they saw this. This was an extremely horrible omen. Almost all of them could sense that some shocking changes were about to happen to the city, and as soon as they thought about that, everyone sped up a little. Without the threat of the barrier, many Heaven Saint Masters became fearless. They took to the sky as various streams of light.

At the same time, several dozen Saint Rulers hovered high in the air at the center of the city. They were extremely stern as they glanced between the vanished barrier and the trembling ground from time to time.

“What’s happening to our Mercenary City? Why has the protective barrier suddenly vanished, and why has such a great earthquake suddenly occurred?” A Saint Ruler involuntarily questioned. He stared at the huge cracks a palm wide that riddled the city. They all knew that the piece of earth that the city sat on had been protected by the barrier through all ages, causing the ground to become rock-hard. Even Saint Rulers could not leave a mark if they used everything they had, yet the ground had now been reduced to such a sorry state. All of them were left in disbelief.

“Quickly use a secret technique and contact the grand elder and everyone else,” a Saint Ruler commanded in a hurry. Although they were part of the upper echelon of the city, all of them were Saint Rulers. All the Saint Kings had left the city, so they could do nothing about the sudden changes with their mere strength as Saint Rulers.

All the Saint Kings remained gathered in the ancient mountain ranges where Tian Jian had become a Saint Emperor. They all congratulated him and asked for guidance in regards to Tian Jian’s experience of becoming a Saint Emperor.

The several Saint Kings from Mercenary City were all excited and smiled more brightly than anyone else. It was extremely significant for Mercenary City for Tian Jian to become a Saint King.

But at this moment, the grand elder’s face suddenly changed in a drastic way. He had received a message through a secret technique from Mercenary City and learned of the great changes.

The grand elder’s complexion immediately became extremely

horrible. He turned to the Saint Kings beside him and said, "Something bad's happened. Mercenary City has undergone an upheaving change. Elders, immediately head back to the city as soon as possible. We cannot waste any time at all."

"Alright, we'll hurry back immediately." The Saint Kings from Mercenary City could see how severe the situation was from how the grand elder had lost his composure. Without any hesitation, they immediately constructed a Space Gate and hurried back.

The grand elder did not return with them. With a flash, he arrived by Tian Jian's side and said through a communication technique, "Great elder, I've just received a message from Mercenary City. The city is undergoing great changes. The protective barrier has vanished while the entire city is violently trembling. The ground has cracked and the city is in ruins." The grand elder spoke extremely sternly. If he had not been certain that the person who sent him the message would not lie, he would be doubting the reality of the matter right now.

This was because this was an unprecedented event ever since the founding of the city.

Tian Jian's expression changed as well because of what the grand elder had said. He could not help but think back to the matter Jian Chen had mentioned before, about how the tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints had been sealed deep underneath the city and how an earthquake had already occurred back when he was grand elder. However, it had occurred and ended very quickly and did not cause too great of a commotion.

"Has the seal beneath Mercenary City been broken?" Tian Jian suddenly thought of this matter and his heart immediately sank. He heavily replied, "Grand elder, let's return to the city immediately." Before he had even finished speaking, Tian Jian began to construct a Space Gate, quickly stepping through it as he pulled the grand elder along.

“Everyone, please gather in Mercenary City immediately. I have some important matters to discuss with you all.” Just as the Space Gate was about to close, Tian Jian’s voice rang out, landing in all the ears of the Saint Kings present.

All of them looked at each other. They had been stunned by the abnormal actions of the Saint Kings from Mercenary City.

“Tian Jian and the Saint Kings of Mercenary City have left in such a hurry. Has something happened to the city?” A Saint King from an ancient clan asked in doubt.

“Mercenary City has always been guarded by the protective barrier that even Saint Emperors cannot smash through. In terms of defenses, even the protector clans cannot match up against them. It would be slightly reasonable if you said that something had happened to the protector clans, but it’s an absolute joke if you’re talking about Mercenary City,” a dignified old man in golden dragon robes chuckled. He was the ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire and was extremely powerful. He was at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer and about to reach the Ninth.

Quite a few people from the protector clans immediately became displeased by what the ancestral emperor had said, but none of them dared to say anything in response. This was because the ancestral emperor was correct. In terms of defensive measures, the protector clans were not on the same level as Mercenary City.

When they faced the sneak attacks from the experts of the Hundred Races, they were not even able to stop a small group of Saint Kings with just the strength of a single protector clan. On the other hand, Mercenary City had managed to block the attacks from all the invaders with just a barrier. Even the simultaneous attacks from several forbidden artifacts could not even shake the barrier, which was more than enough to see how terrifyingly tough the barrier was.

“Everyone, let’s gather in Mercenary City since great elder Tian

Jian has invited us,” the ancestral emperor added at the end. He left with the two other Saint Kings from the Felicity Empire, heading to Mercenary City.

Chapter 1262: Gathering at Mercenary City

“It’s not like we have anything better to do. Let’s check out Mercenary City and see just what’s happened that’s caused these elders to leave in such a hurry. Plus, this is a personal invitation from great elder Tian Jian. Everyone needs to respect him. Don’t you think so?” A Saint King from the Potian sect of the ten protector clans said aloud as he glanced at the independent Saint Kings around him. Even before they had a Saint Emperor, Mercenary City vaguely stood supreme in regard to the protector clans. Now that they had a Saint Emperor, they were incomparable to the past, so even the protector clans needed to treat Mercenary City politely.

“Haha, sure. Great elder Tian Jian used to be a well-respected person on the Tian Yuan Continent, let alone now. I don’t think any of us present will turn down great elder Tian Jian’s invitation, and since he said he has something important to discuss before he left, it must be something significant. After all, I do trust that he’s not someone who likes to tell lies. You never know, the important matter that great elder Tian Jian might be wanting to speak to us about might just be his experience and knowledge of becoming a Saint Emperor,” a red-faced old man laughed aloud. He was one of the great elders from the Heaven’s Incense School. He also glanced at all the independent cultivators when he said that, clearly directing what he had said at them.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, regardless of the protector clans, ancient clans, or the three great empires, they all would never turn down an invitation from Mercenary City. After all, they were people with large organizations behind them and none of them wanted to offend Mercenary City, which basically reigned supreme. However, this was different for independent cultivators who belonged to no organization and were not bound or restricted by anything. They would hide all year round in desolate regions to

cultivate. Among them, there were quite a few prideful and odd-mannered people who did not fear Mercenary City.

Many people present understood that the two Saint Kings had stepped forward to express their stance on Mercenary City through the words they had just spoken.

Afterward, all the Saint Kings from the ten protector clans, the ancient clans, the three empires, and so on ripped open Space Gates and hurried away. All of them headed to Mercenary City.

Soon afterward, only the several dozen independent Saint Kings were present. They were indeed rather unwilling to follow through with Tian Jian's invitation. They were used to living freely and acting as they wished without participating in the battles between any large organizations. Even if Tian Jian had said he had something important to discuss, many of them still believed that it had nothing to do with them.

However, after what the two Saint Kings from the Potian sect and Heaven's Incense School had said, many of them immediately changed their minds. They were not afraid of offending Mercenary City since it was a famed superpower and would not hold a grudge against them over these small matters. What really changed their minds was what the Saint King from the Heaven's Incense School had said.

Even though many of them understood that Tian Jian would never pass on his experience and knowledge of becoming a Saint Emperor to them, just the temptation of becoming a Saint Emperor was far too difficult to resist. Even though they knew it was impossible, they still grasped at that tiny amount of hope.

As a result, the independent Saint Kings hesitated slightly before all ripping open Space Gates as well, heading to Mercenary City.

Tian Jian and the Saint Kings of Mercenary City had all returned to the city. All of them sternly stared at the trembling ground with extremely ugly expressions.

The protective barrier of the city had vanished, and even the terrifying energy hidden within the ground had disappeared, making the ground become extremely fragile. Now, because of the violent trembling, it had already cracked. From a higher altitude, the ground of the entire city seemed like a huge spider web. The structures built on it were ruined or had collapsed, and the beautiful city had ceased to exist. It was in a disastrous state.

At this moment, the Saint Kings from the protector clans, the three empires, and the ancient clans all arrived in Mercenary City. As soon as they had emerged from their Space Gates, they became stunned by the drastic changes to the city. Disbelief filled all their faces, and they struggled to return to their senses even after quite a while.

Finally, a Saint King from a protector clan managed to snap back to his senses before everyone else. He secretly gasped and arrived beside Tian Jian. With his hands clasped, he asked, “Great elder Tian Jian, w-w- what has happened? Why has Mercenary City suddenly become like this?”

The Saint King had asked the question weighing on everyone’s mind. Immediately, all the people looked at Tian Jian.

Tian Jian said nothing. He stared sternly at the ground beneath him as the light in his eyes flickered.

Boom! At this moment, another heavy sound reverberated from deep beneath Mercenary City. The ground began to shake even more as strands of terrifying energy, enough to make all the Saint Kings shiver, began to leak from the ground. Even though it was just strands of weak energy ripples, they had completely surpassed the level of Saint Emperors.

“What terrifying energy! Just what is beneath the ground?” A Saint King from an ancient clan asked with a sheet-white face. He could feel that he was as insignificant as an ant before a strand of one ripple of this energy, which made him shiver inside.

At this moment, an extremely powerful ripple of energy erupted from beneath the city. A three-meter-wide hole suddenly appeared on the cracked ground, and soon afterward, four figures quickly floated out surrounded by an extremely powerful energy. In the end, they were sent to Tian Jian's side, and the energy around them silently vanished.

The four of them were Ming Dong, Yang Ling, Changyang Zu Yunkong, and Huang Tianba, who had all been cultivating beneath the city.

All the Saint Kings stared at the four of them in surprise, as if they had just seen a ghost. None of them apart from Tian Jian had thought that three Saint Rulers and a Heaven Saint Master would be hiding in the depths of the city.

“W-who are you? Why have you been hiding beneath the city? Speak, what were you doing down there?” A Saint King of Mercenary City returned to his senses and immediately roared at them with a glare.

Tian Jian raised his hand to stop the expert who wanted to capture the four of them. He stared at them and asked, “Do you know what's happened down there?”

Ming Dong, Yang Ling, Changyang Zu Yunkong, and Huang Tianba were all confused as well. They had been cultivating all good and well underground, yet they were suddenly roused by Xiao Ling. Before they could understand what was going on, they were suddenly sent above ground, without any clue as to what had happened.

“Great elder, the four of them have managed to get beneath the city through some unknown method, and who knows what they've done. I'm thinking that the sudden changes of the city are directly connected to them. Please look into this, great elder,” said a Saint King of Mercenary City in a heavy voice as he glared at the four of them with hostility evident in his eyes.

Tian Jian shook his head, “This has nothing to do with them. I may know a little as to why these changes have happened.”

“What? The great elder knows the reason?” Another Saint King stared at Tian Jian in surprise.

At this moment, another several dozen Saint Kings appeared. The independent Saint Kings had all arrived and all became stunned by the ruined city. All of them stared at it blankly with shock plastered across their faces.

Tian Jian gazed at the people of the protector clans and asked in a heavy voice, “Everyone, do you still remember the matter that I had discussed with you when I invited you to Mercenary City several years ago?”

“Of course we remember. Great elder, was that actually true? Is there really a passage to another world sealed beneath the city? And that the other world is so powerful that just the number of people who have surpassed Saint Emperor exceeds ten?” A Saint King from a protector clan asked in a heavy voice. His complexion was horrible. All the people of the protector clans had heard that there was a seal beneath the city. However, the matter just seemed far too unrealistic. They all chose not to believe it before personally witnessing it, treating it as a baseless rumor.

However, they could not help but believe the story a little more now that the most powerful city on the continent had suffered such great changes.

“What? There’s a passage seal beneath Mercenary City...”

“Just the number of people that has surpassed Saint Emperor exceeds ten? How is that possible...”

A few Saint Kings who had not heard of the matter before immediately revealed a different expression. They were all frightened by the power of the World of Forsaken Saints. There was only three Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent right

now. How were they supposed to repel the World of Forsaken Saints if they really were that powerful? Even if the four great races gathered together, all they would be in for was a slaughter.

At this moment, the energy within the black tunnel leading to the foreign world abnormally churned deep beneath the city. It caused the surrounding space to tremble in an extremely unstable manner. The sealing formation had already become visible and every single thread of the formation shone with a dazzling light, radiating with terrifying energy that filled the entire space. It was like a huge net, stretched across the entrance.

Xiao Ling hovered in the center of the formation as her bright eyes flickered. She nervously stared at the formation before her while her young face was filled with fear. She seemed extremely pitiful.

“Oh no, oh no! Master’s seal is about to be broken. What do I do? Just what do I do? I can’t last much longer. Brother, brother where are you? I’m so scared,” Xiao Ling hovered all by herself underground as she sobbed.

“Brother’s too weak, so even if he’s here, he can’t help me. Master, master, where are you? Master, come out quick, I can’t guard this seal much longer. This person is too powerful. Boohoo, master, where are you? Don’t abandon me...” Xiao Ling could not help but burst into tears as soon as her master was mentioned. Her relationship with Mo Tianyun was like a daughter and her father. Mo Tianyun’s disappearance to her was like a three-year-old child losing both her parents.

Chapter 1263: Spiritking

An extremely vast world existed on the other side of the seal beneath Mercenary City. It was so great that even if the Beast God Continent, the sea realm, the Tian Yuan Continent and the Wasteland Continent were combined, they would not even fill half of all the space that existed.

The energy of the world there was extremely abundant as well, far more abundant than on the Tian Yuan Continent, and most importantly, that vast world possessed origin energy that had vanished from this world for countless years. It was also rich in resources, so the entire place seemed perfect. Probably the only downside was that the sun of that world was blood-red. It possessed the scarlet color of human viscera, radiating with endless light. It dyed the entire place blood-red, adding a malevolent feeling to the entire world.

There were not many Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent. Even with the entire world in perspective, including all the Saint Kings who always remained hidden away, there was no more than a thousand at most. As for Saint Emperors, they were even rarer. With the Tian Yuan Continent, the sea realm, and the Beast God Continent combined, there was only nine.

Yet in the blood-red world, Saint Kings could be seen everywhere. The number had reached a stunning level, and even the number of Saint Emperors outnumbered all the Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent.

A huge mountain range that spanned an area of several million square kilometers stood in the center of that blood-red world. It was known as the World Mountains, the greatest mountain range in the world as well as the most terrifying forbidden ground.

Not only were there countless powerful vicious beasts, there were also many unknown dangers of various origins on the World

Mountains. Even Saint Emperors could only move around on the very outskirts since entering the general region would basically lead to death. Without any exaggeration, the general region of the mountains was a grave for Saint Emperors.

The general region was not even the most terrifying place either. The most terrifying place was the center of the mountain range where a huge mountain over ten kilometers tall stood.

The mountain stood like a pillar that was holding up the vast sky of the world. It was shrouded by a faint layer of red mist, obscuring the body of the mountain and making it even more mysterious. The space halfway up the mountain was extremely unstable. It would twist violently and cracks of various sizes would form from time to time. These cracks would come in contact with the cliff-face of the mountain itself from time to time and rocks would often silently vanish, without even leaving behind a pile of dust. It was extremely terrifying.

Approaching the huge mountain would be stepping into the central region of the mountain ranges, which was also known as the depths of the World Mountains. Even those that had surpassed Saint Emperor and reached the Origin realm needed to tread carefully in the depths. If they were sucked away by a spatial crack due to carelessness, even those of the Origin realm could die.

Throughout history, the depths of the mountain range had devoured the lives of many experts at the Origin realm, which was why the mountain range had become a forbidden region where even experts of the Origin realm dared not to set foot without considerable thought.

But at this very moment, a large group of people had gathered on the peak of the greatest mountain in the mountain range. There was over five hundred people, and they all wore the same black clothes. An odd, round symbol was present on all the black clothes, and in the center of the symbol was a huge, majestic hall.

This was an image of the sacred organization that ruled the world, the symbol of the Sacred Spirit Hall!

The Sacred Spirit Hall was like the imperial palace of this blood-red world. It was the symbol of absolute authority.

The group of people there were extremely powerful. They were all Saint Emperors, and there were quite a few peak Saint Emperors among them. Any single one of them would be enough to terrify the ten protector clans if they were on the Tian Yuan Continent. However, all of them currently held their breaths and stood there silently like statues. They did not move at all.

At the very front of the group were over forty experts of various ages who stood in a single line. They also waited silently. The presence that radiated from them casually was even greater than the presence of Saint Emperors. If their auras were equivalent to an elephant, then the presences of the Saint Emperors were like ants, extremely insignificant.

They had all surpassed Saint Emperor and had reached the Origin realm, and eight of them were even at Returnance.

But without any exception, all of the Origin realm experts hid their presences, standing there like statues. They all held their breaths as they stared at the man at the very front. Quite a few of them showed deep admiration and fear through their gazes.

He was a black-robed and tall man. He stood there silently with his back to everyone, giving off a feeling that he was indomitable, as if he was the heavens and he ruled the lives of everyone else. Just looking at him felt like he had fused with the world, yet there was also the illusion that he stood above the world.

By his side hovered a heavy, dark sword made of metal. The metal shone with a dark glimmer and radiated with a bright light. Although it was motionless, the great aura from the weapon actually made the eight Returnance experts behind him shiver inside.

A pitch-black tunnel stood a thousand meters in front of the black-robed man. The space in there pulsed and distorted in violent spasms.

“Spiritking, will we be able to break through the seal to the other side this time?” A Returnance expert asked at this moment.

The man standing at the very front was the supreme ruler of the Sacred Spirit Hall. He was the one who held supreme power over this world, the Spiritking.

The Spiritking was a legendary person within the World of Forsaken Saints. He possessed the greatest talent and greatest comprehension throughout all of history, reaching Reciprocity in just a mere eight centuries. He created powerful moves himself. When he had first set a foot in the Reciprocity realm, he challenged the three other Reciprocity experts of the World of Forsaken Saints.

The first expert was at mid Reciprocity and was defeated in ten moves by the Spiritking, who had just reached Reciprocity. The second and third experts were at mid and late Reciprocity respectively, but after an intense, four hour fight with the early Reciprocity Spiritking, they both died to his blade.

The three Reciprocity experts were originally the rulers of the Sacred Spirit Hall. They were known as the three great Spiritkings, but after they were all slain by the black-robed man, he himself became the Spiritking. He became the Spiritking of a new generation and the only Spiritking of the World of Forsaken Saints.

Although the new Spiritking had only reached Reciprocity recently and was still at early Reciprocity, all the Origin realm experts in the world believed he possessed the power to fight the weakest person who had attained Godhood.

The gap between the Origin realm and Godhood was as large as a chasm. It was not even comparable to the gap between Saint King

and Saint Emperor, but rather the gap between the Origin realm and Sainthood would be more comparable.

The current Spiritking possessed the power to fight an expert who had attained Godhood at early Reciprocity. Even if it was only the weakest expert at Godhood, it was shocking enough.

“The person who came to our world and cast down this seal is indeed very strong. No wonder none of our Origin realm experts were his opponent. The seal he had cast down between the two worlds can only be destroyed by someone at Godhood. I easily destroyed the seal in our world before probably because there was no one controlling it, but there’s an Origin realm expert on the other side supporting the seal right now, so it won’t be destroyed easily,” said the Spiritking. He spoke in an extremely nonchalant tone, but his voice carried a certain femininity. Although he was a man, his voice was extremely pleasant.

“Spiritking, will it fail again this time?” An enchanting woman who seemed to be in her twenties gently asked. Her voice was filled with charm, as if it could suck away the souls of people. She was one of the eight experts at Returnance.

“Although there’s an Origin realm expert supporting the seal on the other side, I am confident I can get through the seal since I’ve come here today. Maintaining the seal will require a vast amount of energy. Let me waste that Origin realm expert’s energy first, and once they’re running low, I’ll use my Seal-breaking and break through the seal,” said the Spiritking nonchalantly. At this moment, the space in the tunnel stabilized again. The space had been disrupted by his full-powered attack from earlier.

A resplendent gleam of light immediately flashed through the Spiritking’s eyes when he saw the space restabilize. The dark sword floating beside him immediately erupted with a dazzling silver light as an extremely powerful sword intent permeated the surroundings. Under the contamination of the powerful sword intent, the violent wind, the air, and even the abundant energy of

the world in the surroundings became strands of invisible sword Qi.

Swish! The dark metal sword was surrounded by a coat of powerful silver light as it vanished into the tunnel in front of them as a white streak of light.

Note: Remember, the Origin realm is made up of three smaller realms. They are Receival, Returnance, and Reciprocity in ascending order in terms of strength. Just remember it like breathing: Receival is inhaling (since you're receiving air), Returnance is exhaling (since you're returning the air back to the surroundings), and Reciprocity as being able to go both ways (you've ascended above inhaling and exhaling because you can now do both at the same time).

Chapter 1264: The Seal Breaks

A resplendent gleam of light immediately flashed through the Spiritking's eyes when he saw the space restabilize. The dark sword floating beside him immediately erupted with a dazzling silver light as an extremely powerful sword intent permeated the surroundings. Under the contamination of the powerful sword intent, the violent wind, the air, and even the abundant energy of the world in the surroundings became strands of invisible sword Qi.

Swish! The dark metal sword was surrounded by a coat of powerful silver light as it vanished into the tunnel in front of them as a white streak of light.

The tunnel between the World of Forsaken Saints and Mercenary City was filled with extremely violent streaks of energy, causing the space in it to become extremely unstable. The entire tunnel would distort from time to time.

At this moment, a dazzling streak of white light flashed through the tunnel, moving extremely quick. This was the Spiritking's dark metal sword.

The sword seemed completely ordinary and was not eye-catching in any particular way, but it possessed great power. The strength of the metal sword greatly surpassed the Emperor Armaments on the Tian Yuan Continent, and even the Emperor Armaments of the ten protector clans could not compare to it.

The rather unstable space would begin to ripple violently wherever the sword passed by, but it was extremely tough, so it did not shatter.

On the other side, the web-like seal covered the entrance of the tunnel. The metal sword passed through the spatial tunnel with an unstoppable force. It was coated by a radiant glow of silver light, striking the seal viciously.

Boom!

With a deafening boom, the sword struck the center of the seal and the great force turned the formation into a conical shape. Then, the sword erupted radiately, producing rain-like droplets of energy that attacked the seal, violently destroying it.

The seal immediately began to violently flicker and the energy that maintained it was consumed at an extremely terrifying rate.

Xiao Ling immediately became extremely nervous. She placed her hands on the seal as origin energy was rapidly channeled into the formation. She tried to maintain the final seal.

However, the seal only managed to block the Spiritking's attack with great difficulty even after being supported by Xiao Ling's own power.

Although the seal was powerful, it was only enough to repel the attacks of experts in the Origin realm. Once it encountered attacks at the level of Godhood, even if it was from the weakest Godhood expert, it would break for sure. Although the Spiritking was only in the Origin realm, he possessed the power to rival the weakest expert who had obtained Godhood, so the seal could not be maintained before his great strength. If it were not for Xiao Ling's support, the seal probably would have been smashed through long ago.

However, Xiao Ling could not last much longer either, because the energy she had accumulated over countless years had almost been consumed.

The metal sword was locked in a stalemate with the seal for several seconds before finally expending all the power it had and returning to the World of Forsaken Saints. Xiao Ling became relieved, but when she discovered that all the energy in the underground space had been consumed, she immediately became terrified. She sobbed, "Oh no, oh no. There's no more energy to keep up the seal. What do I do? Master, where are you? Come back

quick. If you don't return now, your seal will be destroyed by bad people. That bad person is so strong. I can't beat him. Master, come back quick..."

The Spiritking stood unmoving at the highest point of the World Mountains, as if he was all that existed in that world.

At this moment, the metal sword that had dulled emerged from the spatial tunnel. As if the sword was conscious, it flew into the Spiritking's hand without anyone's control.

"It's time." At this moment, the Spiritking spoke in heavy voice. Suddenly, a supreme presence surged from him in all directions. He slowly hovered in the air, reaching an altitude of ten meters as terrifying energy filled the surroundings.

At that moment, he seemed to have become a mighty spirit. He gripped his sword as he stood there, causing the sky to tremble.

The several dozen Origin realm experts all looked at him from behind in fear. All of them could sense the incomparably vast pressure radiating from the Spiritking. Even the eight Returnance experts were not exceptions. All of them felt that the Spiritking was invincible.

"Seal-breaker!" Suddenly, the Spiritking roared out as the pure origin energy without him surged into the metal sword, immediately causing it to erupt with an unprecedented brightness and causing it loudly resonate. Afterward, the Spiritking stabbed out with a flash.

The strike possessed an indescribable profoundness. With that single strike, the world dulled while the air stopped moving. Time seemed to have halted, and even the surrounding space oscillated with a ripple.

The Spiritking stabbed the metal sword at the tunnel with a speed that was difficult to observe with the naked eye, attacking the seal on the other side again.

When the seal came in contact with the metal sword, an extremely profound energy began to spread out. It was like poison; as soon as it came in contact with the seal, the powerful seal began to dissolve at a visible rate.

Xiao Ling was surprised when she saw this. She poured everything she had into the seal, but no matter how hard she tried, she could not slow down the rate at which the seal collapsed.

Boom! A few seconds later, the seal finally shattered with a rumble, causing the entire underground space to violently tremble.

Xiao Ling stared blankly at the broken seal while her face became extremely pale. She was filled with fear as fat tears uncontrollably rolled down her cheeks as she broke into tears. She sobbed, "It's done for! It's all over! The seal's been broken! The seal's been broken! Master, where are you!? Come back, the seal's been broken. The seal's been broken. What do I do..."

The moment the seal shattered, Mercenary City suffered the most powerful jolt as well. Whole regions of earth collapsed as the cracks, which criss-crossed the ground, all expanded to the width of a meter. All the structures in the city had collapsed, including Mo Tianyun's sculpture at the center.

All the experts of Mercenary City, including the ones who had hurried over from various places, watched the tragedy unfold with sunken faces. At this moment, no one was able to lighten up, including the protector clans who were envious of Mercenary City for obtaining a Saint Emperor.

This was because Tian Jian had already told all the Saint Kings present the information he had learned from Jian Chen. If it was any other time, none of them would have believed such an unrealistic matter, but the collapse of Mercenary City was the best evidence without a doubt. It was no longer up to whether they believed it or not.

If the seal to the World of Forsaken Saints really had been destroyed and the experts there launched an invasion, how was the Tian Yuan Continent supposed to repel them with their puny strength. This was definitely a calamity for the Tian Yuan Continent that might even affect the entire world.

The dark, metal sword returned to the Spiritking's side again back in the World of Forsaken Saints. It hovered quietly by his side as the Spiritking stared at the spatial tunnel in front of him. He finally showed a smile of delight.

“Spiritking, may I ask if the seal on the other side has been destroyed?” The alluring, Returnance woman nervously asked.

The Spiritking slowly turned around. He seemed to be roughly in his thirties, and he was not handsome at all. His appearance was extremely ordinary. His eyebrows were sharp, like swords, while his face was weathered, having survived through wind and storms of blood.

“I’ve already destroyed the seal on the other side, but the space in the tunnel has become extremely unstable after several attacks from me. It’s filled with chaotic streams of space, so we can’t pass through it. We can only go after it has stabilized,” answered the Spiritking.

With that, the Origin realm experts immediately beamed in joy. One of the Returnance old men excitedly said, “The Spiritking really is the hope of our world, to have completed the world’s wish from so many years ago all by himself. Over two hundred years ago, our world gave birth to five Reciprocity Spiritkings, but they had failed to smash through the seal even after working together. The current Spiritking possesses the power to rival all five of them all by himself. The Spiritking is the strongest expert of the World of Forsaken Saints in all of history.”

The Spiritking did not react in any particular way to the old man’s compliments. His expression remained as nonchalant as

before. He said, “Origin realm experts will bring very great pressure to the spatial tunnel if they enter, so they can only pass through once the space has completely stabilized and the tunnel has been reinforced. However, experts below the Origin realm are not restricted by this. All we need to do is wait for the streams of space in there to calm down. The weaker the person, the safer they are. One of you stay here and keep guard. We’ll send some people through to investigate the situation on the other side first. Do not forget our intentions.”

“Yes, Spiritking,” all the Origin realm experts replied at the same time.

Afterward, the Spiritking flew down the mountain with his sword on his back. He completely ignored the spatial cracks that could even claim the lives of those in the Origin realm halfway down the mountain.

Chapter 1265: Countermeasures

Several hundred Saint Kings currently hovered above Mercenary City. Every single one of them had their eyebrows furrowed tightly with extremely stern expressions. After they learned that a tunnel to another world was truly sealed beneath the city, they all contacted every Saint King they knew, leading to even more hurrying over. In the end, the Saint Kings gathered at Mercenary City only increased.

This was because all of them could feel that this was something significant, directly tied to the safety of the continent. It was far more severe than the invasion of the Beast God Continent before. Every single one of them was responsible for protecting the continent, even if many of them were independent.

“Great elder, what should we do now? And can that seal block the attacks from the experts of the World of Forsaken Saints or not?” A great elder of a protector clan asked in worry. With so many people, all they could do was gather there. They did not even possess the strength to take any action, let alone know about the situation of the seal.

“I don’t know about the situation underground either. Even if this land has lost the protection of the barrier’s strength, it’s still not a place we can just barge into. We can only ask the spirit of the barrier to gain a detailed understanding,” replied Tian Jian with a heavy voice.

“Does the barrier spirit still exist now that the barrier of the city is gone?” A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King asked in surprise. He was also a great elder of a protector clan.

No one else knew the true identity of the barrier spirit on the present continent other than Jian Chen and the Heavenly Enchantress. Even Tian Jian did not know. All of them believed that the barrier spirit was a spirit that had been born from the

barrier and was dependent on the barrier.

“With so many years, the barrier spirit has always guarded the seal beneath Mercenary City. The barrier is gone now, but I am almost certain that the barrier spirit still exists. I just don’t know how to contact it,” said Tian Jian.

But, just as he finished speaking, a girl’s cries of sorrow suddenly rang out. Her cries were extremely sorrowful, and when all the Saint Kings heard her sobs, their expressions all changed, because they could not find the source despite hearing them clearly. It seemed to have originated from nowhere.

“Have the experts of the World of Forsaken Saints come?” The ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire heavily asked. His expression became extremely horrible. He could sense the person’s strength just from the sobs.

“No. It’s the barrier spirit!” Tian Jian cried out as he beamed.

As expected, a girl who seemed to be twelve or thirteen years old slowly appeared in the air as soon as Tian Jian finished speaking. When she first appeared, she was just a faint image, but her figure started to rapidly consolidate at a visible rate. Within just a few seconds, she had become completely tangible. She seemed fleshy, far more realistic than any time Jian Chen had seen her.

This time, Xiao Ling did not hide her existence. Her figure was completely revealed, allowing everyone to see her clearly as she constantly rubbed away her tears.

Everyone turned their gazes toward her and became filled with curiosity and shock. Including Tian Jian, this was the first time anyone here had seen Xiao Ling. What had taken a lot of them by surprise was that the barrier spirit was actually such a cute girl.

“Barrier spirit, what’s the situation underground? Is the seal still whole?” Tian Jian nervously inquired.

“It’s broken, it’s broken. The seal’s been broken by the bad

people on the other side. Boohoo, master's seal has been destroyed. Oh no, what do I do?" Xiao Ling sobbed. She was filled with a sense of helplessness.

The complexions of all the people present became extremely horrible, and some of them even paled slightly.

"Barrier spirit, what's the strength of the World of Forsaken Saints?" A great elder from a protector clan asked a heavy question.

"I don't know, I don't know, but the person who broke the seal is so strong. He's at least at Reciprocity. I can't beat him." Xiao Ling became terrified as soon as they mentioned the Spiritking.

"Reciprocity? Is that a realm beyond Saint Emperor?" An independent Saint King mumbled. Even the ten protector clans, which had existed for many years, did not have too great of an understanding regarding the cultivation realms beyond Saint Emperor.

"Master said that above Sainthood is the Origin realm. The Origin realm has three smaller levels, which are Receiving, Returnance, and Reciprocity. The person who broke the seal is at Reciprocity at the very least, but I'm only at Returnance, so how can I beat him? Don't look down on the strength between Returnance and Reciprocity. Master said that the difference between the two is like Saint King and Saint Emperor," Xiao Ling explained.

All the people present immediately gasped. All of them understood exactly how vast the difference between Saint King and Saint Emperor was. The difference was as immense as the earth and the sky. They could not be compared.

"What!? How is the World of Forsaken Saints so powerful? If we compare those who have just surpassed Saint Emperor to Saint Rulers, doesn't that mean that Saint Emperors are just Heaven Saint Masters? And we Saint Kings would only be equivalent to

Earth Saint Masters. Using several hundred Earth Saint Masters to fight against a Saint Emperor? What is this joke?” An independent Saint Kings cried out in disbelief. The disparity was just far too great, so great that it was unimaginable.

Xiao Ling worriedly said, “The tunnel has already been opened, and without much longer, there will be people from the other side who will come over. Master once said that he entered that world all by himself and killed a lot of experts. I don’t know if those people hold a grudge for master. If they do, they’ll definitely come to kill us once they come over. We better find something to do quick.”

Everyone was speechless and moaned inside. The World of Forsaken Saints even had experts who stood at the apex of the Origin realm, so no one was certain whether they had others at Receiving and Returnance. Even in ancient times when the Tian Yuan Continent was most prosperous, they would not be their opponents, let alone now.

“The city lord left behind an extremely tough divine hall in Mercenary City back then. I wonder if it’ll be useful,” Tian Jian said with a deep voice. The divine hall’s power was evident. It could even kill Saint Emperors, but Tian Jian was not confident about experts of the Origin realm because the divine hall had never been used against them before, so it was obviously impossible for him to know whether it could block their attacks or not.

Xiao Ling’s eyes immediately lit up. She excitedly responded, “Oh yeah, we still have the divine hall that master left us. The divine hall is very tough. Probably even I can’t break through it. I just don’t know if it can block attacks from experts at Reciprocity, but there’s no other choice now. Quickly move master’s divine hall to guard the entrance.”

“Okay, I’ll go refine the divine hall immediately.” Tian Jian left with that. He knew that time was very tight, and he needed to refine the divine hall in the shortest amount of time possible.

“There’s also fairy Hao Yue’s Bright Moon Divine Hall. The divine hall is extraordinarily tough. Even Saint Emperors cannot destroy it. We can borrow the divine hall to guard the tunnel. Although I don’t know if it can stop them, but it’ll be better than nothing,” said a great elder of a protector clan.

Chapter 1266: Violet Cloud Peaches

As soon as someone mentioned that they wanted to use the Bright Moon Divine Hall to guard the entrance of the tunnel, Changyang Zu Yunxiao's face immediately sank. The divine hall only belonged to You Yue, and You Yue was Jian Chen's fiancée. If they really managed to obtain the divine hall to plug the entrance, getting it back would not be easy.

This was because the Bright Moon Divine Hall was also a structure that even Saint Emperors could not smash through. In order for the people of the protector clans to maintain their authority on the continent, they could not let such a powerful divine hall exist.

The people of the protector clans dared not to touch You Yue before. First, because they would not be able to do anything to her if she hid in the divine hall. Second, Jian Chen was beside her as well as three powerful magical beasts that stood on equal ground with Saint Emperors. As a result, the protector clans could only helplessly watch the powerful divine hall end up with You Yue without being able to do anything.

However, the situation was completely different now. The existence of the World of Forsaken Saints was an extremely great threat to the Tian Yuan Continent. It could even be described as a disaster that could impact the entire world. Using this as an opportunity to take away the divine hall was all in the name of the greater good, so no one could say anything, and if the divine hall was destroyed, the people of the protector clans wouldn't mind that happening. However, the people who would end up losing out would be his side.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao made up his mind to prevent this at all costs, "The Bright Moon Divine Hall is indeed extremely tough and the materials used to construct it are extremely rare, forged from substances of the moon. However, fairy Hao Yue, who crafted it,

was only a peak Saint Emperor at most. She did not reach the Origin realm. Her divine hall probably can block the attacks of Saint Emperors at most, and it'll be useless before those of the Origin realm.”

A great elder of the Yangji sect sneered when he heard that, “We’re currently facing a devastating threat. No matter what it is, we will try it as long as there’s a sliver of hope of stopping the experts from the World of Forsaken Saints. We, the ten protector clans, have quite a few divine halls, but all of them can only block the attacks of Saint Kings. They’re completely useless before Saint Emperors, and with the entire continent in perspective, only the divine hall of Mercenary City and the Bright Moon Divine Hall can perhaps block attacks from experts of the Origin realm.”

“That’s right. We can no longer talk about personal benefits or losses at this moment. The Tian Yuan Continent is facing danger and every single person is responsible for its safety. Brother, I’ll visit Flame City with you and borrow the Bright Moon Divine Hall. If they don’t comply, we can only react correspondingly,” said a great elder of the Yiyun sect righteously. He seemed like he was solemn on the surface, but he sneered inside, “Jian Chen, you killed a great elder of my Yiyuan sect and completely embarrassed us. We might not be able to take revenge on you, but you cannot stop us from taking away your girl’s divine hall.”

The great elder of the Yangji sect immediately beamed now that he obtained the support of a great elder from the Yiyun sect. He looked around and said, “Everyone, may I ask if there is anyone else willing to come with us to Flame City, to borrow the Bright Moon Divine Hall and safeguard the Tian Yuan Continent?”

An independent Saint King stepped forward and sternly said, “I may have secluded myself as a hermit and never took part in any conflicts, but this matter directly relates to the fate of the Tian Yuan Continent, so I obviously cannot stand down. Allow me to accompany you. If the Bright Moon Divine Hall can stop the

invasion of the World of Forsaken Saints, the owner of the divine hall will commit a service of great merit.”

A few other Saint Kings stepped forward after him. Almost all of them were independent cultivators who stayed isolated in desolate regions like hermits.

In the end, the Yangji sect and the Yiyuan sect sent two Saint Kings each to travel to Mercenary City with another five independent Saint Kings, for a total of nine people.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao panicked inside when he saw this. Just when he wanted to say something, he was stopped by Changyang Zu Xiao through a message, “Yunxiao, this is not the time for you to stop them. The people of the Yangji sect and the Yeyuan sect are very biased against Jian Chen, so if you want to stop them, be careful about getting dragged into it as well as becoming a public target of scorn.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao fell silent and sighed inside. He wanted to help You Yue keep the divine hall very much, but he could do nothing.

The grand elder of Mercenary City said, “Everyone, the World of Forsaken Saints doesn’t just pose a threat to our Tian Yuan Continent. Even the Sea race, the magical beasts, and the Hundred Races will face a similar threat. I believe we should send envoys to all three races with a request for reinforcements. Although our strength is extremely insignificant compared to the World of Forsaken Saints, we need to stop them from coming over with everything we have.”

“The grand elder cannot be more correct, but we are not on good terms with the three other races. We’ve even fallen out a little with the magical beasts and the Hundred Races, so I believe we should think through this some more before deciding,” said a great elder of a protector clan.

“Then please come into the miniature world of our Mercenary

City. We can discuss countermeasures there...”

Jian Chen had no clue that the seal beneath Mercenary City had been destroyed since he was in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He was currently traveling with Tie Ta, making their way to the center. He came across a few regions with some vegetation. Every single region with vegetation would contain Springs of Life as well as Xuanhuang beasts.

Jian Chen would take half the spring water from every region as well as the essence that had been nurtured by the Spring of Life. The essence was the true object of value. It was extremely beneficial to the soul, and the sea goddess required this as a material to reconstruct her body.

Along the way, more and more spring water accumulated in Jian Chen’s artifact space. It had exceeded forty thousand liters. Half of it was at the first grade of the Immortal Tier. Over ten thousand liters was of the second while the remaining amount was of the third.

Third grade of the Immortal Tier was the highest-quality spring water Jian Chen had come across so far.

Other than the spring water, Jian Chen had found many various heavenly resources as well. There were ginsengs, ganodermas, knotwood, and so on from the ones he could recognize. Every single one of them had exceeded a hundred thousand years in maturity, and all of them had been tainted with faint Xuanhuang Qi due to growing in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, allowing them to increase in value. Jian Chen had come across over ten Immortal Tier heavenly resources that he had never seen or heard before, but they were of the second grade at most. Jian Chen had also learned that the sword spirits did not care about these heavenly resources at all. The only reason they got him to collect them was because they would be useful to him.

Jian Chen also came across another three Comprehension Tea

Trees and removed all their leaves. Unfortunately, all of them were of the first grade.

Other than that, Jian Chen had slain several dozen Class 7 and 8 Xuanhuang beasts and collected the energy crystals that corresponded to monster cores.

Although Jian Chen had only spent seven days in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, Jian Chen was extremely satisfied with what he had obtained in that time frame. Tie Ta was the same. He had always been smiling in those days and could not even close his mouth since he had also obtained several dozen energy crystals, all of them of the seventh or eighth class.

When Jian Chen crossed several dozen kilometers of barren land and arrived at another region of life, he discovered a three-meter-tall peach tree growing there. It was covered with fist-sized peaches, violet in color. All of them were actually the exact same size.

“Master, these are immortal peaches, the Violet Cloud Peaches. It only bears a single fruit every nine thousand years, and it can only bear a hundred and eight peaches throughout its life. Consuming the peach can directly increase the level of cultivation of the person. The highest-quality peaches are of the ninth grade in the Immortal Tier. They can increase your level of cultivation by four thousand five hundred years’ worth. The peaches in front of you are only of the first grade, and consuming one of them can only increase your cultivation by five hundred years.”

Chapter 1267: The Sword Spirits' World

“A peach can increase my cultivation by five hundred years? Zi Ying, just how much is five hundred years? And how is it calculated?” Jian Chen asked in some doubt. A few Saint Rulers could never reach Saint King within their lifespan while others would only require a few decades. Jian Chen was extremely curious to know the exact amount of five hundred years' worth of cultivation.

Zi Ying pondered silently before responding, “Master, there's quite a few heavenly resources that can directly increase the cultivation of the user like the peaches back in our world, and all of them are measured by the number of years they can increase. This amount is calculated from the amount of cultivation gained by a person with ordinary talent as they absorb immortal energy in the given time frame. A peach that can increase someone's cultivation by five hundred years' contains the amount of energy equivalent to the achievements of a person with ordinary talent after cultivating for five hundred years.

“But some people with impressive or astonishing talent will cultivate extremely quickly. They will only need a hundred years, just a few decades, or a couple years to reach what an ordinary person would achieve in five hundred years.”

Jian Chen finally gained an understanding of the five hundred years of cultivation the peaches could provide him with. He thought, “A single immortal peach can increase my cultivation by five hundred years. It does sound rather terrifying, but it's just the achievements of a person with ordinary talent in a five hundred year timespan. On the other hand, I've attained achievements that some people might not even attain in three thousand years within less than half a century. And the amount of energy my Chaotic Body needs is unimaginably vast. Looks like the effects of the peaches won't be as great on me as I initially imagined.”

“Zi Ying, how many peaches do I have to eat to reach the fourth layer? And if I want to reach the fifth, how many would that be?” Jian Chen asked. He was tempted to immediately ingest the peaches to strengthen his Chaotic Body after learning about the effects.

“Master, a first grade immortal peach is roughly equivalent to two Class 9 Monster Cores. Master’s Chaotic Body may have reached the peak of the third layer, but a single first grade peach won’t be enough to reach the fourth layer. You will require three at the very least. However, the immortal peaches cannot be eaten as master has imagined. After ingesting the first one, you must wait a hundred years before ingesting a second, or it’ll have no effects at all,” Zi Yang explained rather bitterly. This obliterated Jian Chen’s thoughts of eating a whole lot of them at once.

Jian Chen became disappointed with that, but he also learned that he needed to ingest a Violet Cloud Peach that could provide one thousand five hundred years’ worth of cultivation to reach the fourth layer, or six Class 9 Monster Cores.

Although he still had the Class 8 and 9 Monster Cores he had obtained from the Heaven’s Incense School, Jian Chen did not plan on using them right now since he would not necessarily reach the fourth layer with them, and it would waste a lot of time as well. He did not have much time in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He wanted to use the remaining time to find as many heavenly resources as he could to bring out with him.

However, what did shock Jian Chen was that a single first grade peach was equivalent to two Class 9 Monster Cores.

Perhaps because Zi Ying understood what Jian Chen was thinking, he explained, “Master, the stronger the person becomes, the faster they can absorb immortal energy. The people from our world cannot be compared to the Tian Yuan Continent. The accumulated energy of five hundred years from any single one of them with ordinary talent is equivalent to several thousand years

from a person with impressive talent on the Tian Yuan Continent, which is why a first grade peach contains enough energy to rival two Class 9 Monster Cores.

“Also, the energy from our world is at a level greater than the Tian Yuan Continent. If a Saint Emperor from the Tian Yuan Continent goes to our world to cultivate, their rate will increase by several fold at least. Not only is this because the energy of our world is several times more abundant than the Tian Yuan Continent, it also has immortal energy that is on a higher level. The immortal energy is on the same level as the origin energy that master knows about.”

“Is that so?” Jian Chen gained a better understanding. He could not help but asked, “Zi Ying, Qing Suo, just what was the world you two came from like?” This question had weighed on Jian Chen’s heart for many years now. He had once asked this question before, but the sword spirits declined to answer because he was still too weak. Now, he finally could not help but ask again.

Both of them fell silent. After quite a long while, Qing Suo said, “Master, we originally planned on answering this question after you reached Saint Emperor, but you’re not far from that level now. Since master wants to know so much, we’ll tell you.” A sliver of reminiscence appeared in Qing Suo’s eyes as she continued, “Master, the world we came from is called the Immortals’ World. It’s a higher world that’s even greater than the Tian Yuan Continent. Saint Emperors in our world are only people at the lowest level. In our world, they are like newly-born infants, having just stepped upon the path of cultivation.”

Even with mental preparation, Jian Chen was greatly shocked by what they said. Right now, he could not even match up to a Saint Emperor. To him, they were undefeatable existences, yet they were actually insignificant in the world where the sword spirits came from. Jian Chen had been taken aback by this fact.

Qing Suo continued, “Back in master’s former world, Qing Suo

and I were greatly injured due to the destruction of our swords. We were in a slumber and recovered at an extremely slow rate. Afterward, the familiar presence from master's cultivation of the Azulet Swords Law awakened us. Back then, we discovered master in a world with extremely thin energy, yet you were able to attain such accomplishments with the sword at such a young age all by yourself through an incomplete copy of the cultivation method, so we were drawn in by your talent. At that time, we just happened to make it the moment before master died, so Zi Ying and I guarded master's soul and wanted to take master to the Immortals' World. We believed that master would definitely achieve impressive accomplishments when cultivating in the Immortals' World with master's talent in the sword.

“It was just that we had never expected that we had not recovered enough strength. We were unable to break through the barriers of the worlds. Coupled with the fact that we expended our energy extremely quickly as we traveled through space, we could not last much longer, which was why we accidentally brought you to the Tian Yuan Continent.”

Jian Chen could not help but think back to the moment when he had fought Dugu Qiubai in the past. Back then, the two of them had perished together. He had accidentally come to the Tian Yuan Continent with the help of the sword spirits, but he just wondered what Dugu Qiubai's situation was. Did he die back then?

Jian Chen gently sighed inside. He became slightly disconsolate and said, “Zi Ying, Qing Suo, I will be going to the Immortals' World sooner or later.” Jian Chen also understood that it would become more difficult to raise his Chaotic Body to the later layers. The Tian Yuan Continent did not have enough resources to support his growth, so he needed to proceed to the Immortals' World if he wanted his Chaotic Body to keep growing, so he could find even more resources.

Zi Ying opened his mouth. He wanted to say something, but he

held it back in the end. Only he and Qing Suo understood that since they had come here, returning to the Immortals' World would be riddled with obstructions. It would never be that easy.

Two Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King Xuanhuang beasts guarded the immortal peaches. They were finished off by Jian Chen and Tie Ta without any effort at all. Even though the two of them possessed very tough bodies, they were unable to stand up against Jian Chen and Tie Ta who possessed extraordinary battle prowess. In the end, the two of them took an energy crystal each. Jian Chen did not miss the corpses either.

Afterward, Jian Chen began to collect the Violent Cloud Peaches. The tree had a total of one hundred and eight of them, and he picked all of them. He could fit one to around a dozen peaches in each jade box he had, depending on its size.

Jian Chen completely ran out of jade boxes to store heavenly resources after picking the peaches, or more accurately, he had run out of jade boxes he had prepared. He would need to sort through his other Space Rings for more of them.

As Jian Chen worried over the possibility of not enough boxes, the sword spirits suddenly informed him that the wood from the Xuanhuang Microcosm could be used to make boxes, which could also be used to store the heavenly resources. As a result, Jian Chen and Tie Ta worked together, collecting a large amount of wood nearby and sending it into the artifact space. Jian Chen got the elites of the Flame Mercenaries to make the boxes and also urged the artifact spirit to direct all the Class 7 Magical Beasts into human forms to create boxes as well.

Chapter 1268: Fifth Grade Comprehension

Tea Tree

Jian Chen no longer needed to worry about not having enough boxes now that there was such a large number of people and magical beasts creating them for him in the artifact space.

Two days later, Jian Chen came across an even larger region of life. It seemed more like a huge oasis, taking up several tens of thousand square kilometers. The vegetation was lush and grew vigorously as huge trees towered several hundred meters high.

A mountain a thousand meters tall stood at the center of the region. It was extraordinarily steep and slippery, making it extremely difficult to scale. However, an ancient tree, around a person's height, stood at the very top of it like an old man. It was not tall, but it was teeming with life, as if it would never decay away.

"That's a Comprehension Tea Tree!" Jian Chen immediately cried out in joy as he stared at the tree at the very top. Although he was very far away, he could recognize it with his vision, and he felt something vastly different about it compared to the first grade trees he had come across before. It was clearly of a higher grade.

"That's a fifth grade Comprehension Tea Tree," said Zi Ying, having recognized it with a single glance.

"And there's Flamecloud Fruit here. The effects of Flamecloud Fruit are the same as Violet Cloud Peaches. They can directly increase the cultivation of a person, and they possess the effects of refining immortal energy. The only defect is that Flamecloud Fruit is only effective to those who practice fire-attributed cultivation methods. Although master uses Chaotic Force and is not limited by the attributes in terms of power, the effects of the fruit will be greatly reduced for master," Qing Suo said in pity.

Jian Chen glanced over and indeed discovered a small tree covered in red half way up the mountain. It was only ten meters tall and covered in thumb-sized red fruit.

“Is that the Flamecloud Fruit?” Jian Chen mumbled softly. He discovered that the red fruit shone with a red glow, as if there was a ball of flames flickering inside.

“These Flamecloud Fruit possess even great benefits for those who practice fire-attributed cultivation methods. Senior Hong Lian just happens to use fire-attributed energy, so these fruit should be very beneficial to her. Just a single one of them should be enough to elevate senior Hong Lian to a Saint Emperor,” Jian Chen thought. He immediately remembered Hong Lian when he learned the effects of the fruit.

Jian Chen patted Tie Ta on his shoulder before moving. He had already charged off toward the mountain using the Illusory Flash while Tie Ta followed close behind him. He was no slower than Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was extremely cautious along the way. Every single region of life possessed Xuanhuang beasts, and the more valuable the item, the stronger the Xuanhuang beasts would be. Since a fifth grade Comprehension Tea Tree had appeared here, the beast which guarded it would be extremely powerful as well. It was extremely likely that it would be the strongest Xuanhuang beast he would face since he had come into this place.

However, Jian Chen was surprised by the fact that he did not come across a single Xuanhuang beast when he made it to the foot of the mountain. He did not even sense the presence of a Xuanhuang beast.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta looked at each other. They were rather stern. This situation only meant that the Xuanhuang beast's strength had completely exceeded the two of them. Once it hid itself, it would be extremely difficult to find.

“Jian Chen, this might be a Saint Emperor Xuanhuang beast,” Tie Ta said with his heavy, deep voice. He was extremely stern, but he did not show any fear at all.

Jian Chen gave a deep nod in agreement, “Xuanhuang beasts do not have intelligence. They completely rely on their instincts to fight. Even if it’s a Saint Emperor Xuanhuang beast, it will be nowhere near as powerful as a Saint Emperor in all aspects other than its toughness. It will not know any Saint Emperor abilities either, so we still can kill it.” With that, Jian Chen began to climb the mountain. The steepness of the rocks did not trouble Jian Chen. As if it was any flat ground, he easily made his way up, and Tie Ta followed close behind him. If it were not for the fact that flight was restricted in this world, reaching the top would have been even easier.

Before long, Jian Chen and Tie Ta arrived at the peak, but their expressions suddenly changed in the next moment.

Chapter 1269: Class 9 Xuanhuang Beast

Before, when the two of them were below the mountain, their vision had been obscured, so they could not see the top of the mountain from afar. Now that they had scaled the mountain, everything was clear to them.

The peak of the mountain took up a very large expanse of space. It was craggy and filled with ditches, especially in the center. There was a twenty-meter-deep ditch that was over a thousand meters wide, and in the center of it lay two extremely large Xuanhuang beasts.

The two of them were larger than any Xuanhuang beast Jian Chen had ever seen. He had come across many Class 7 and 8 Xuanhuang beasts in the past, but all of them were several dozen meters long at most. Yet, the two alligator-like Xuanhuang beasts in front of him were a thousand meters long. Even though they lay on the floor, they were thirty meters tall and wide. From afar, they looked like huge bridges.

Jian Chen could not sense the presence of the two Xuanhuang beasts at all. This was not because they knew how to hide it, but this was a natural phenomena that would occur once their strength reached a certain level. To be able to do that, the two beasts clearly were much more powerful than Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

“Two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts!” Jian Chen’s heart sank slightly. Even though he had expected the beast that guarded a fifth grade Comprehension Tea Tree to have reached the level of Saint Emperor, he definitely did not think that there would be two of them. If there was just a single one, he and Tie Ta could still confidently deal with it if they worked together, but it would be a whole different story if there were two.

The moment Jian Chen and Tie Ta made it to the top, the two

alligator-like Xuanhuang beasts opened their eyes at the same time. Four large, orange-yellow eyes landed on the two of them. They were bright and filled with a violent thirst for blood.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta immediately felt that they had been locked on by a vast presence, as if a huge mountain sat on top of them. They felt their bodies increase in weight as their movements became dulled as well.

“Let’s go!” Without any hesitation, Jian Chen immediately cried out and leaped off the mountain with Tie Ta. They quickly floated into the distance. Although the mountain peak was spacious, it was not suitable for battle. In order to prevent the ripples of battle from reaching the Comprehension Tea Tree, Jian Chen and Tie Ta could only draw the two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts away.

Almost the moment they had leaped off, the two alligator produced weird ear-piercing cries. They stood up at that moment and became fifty meters tall. They were like mountains.

The entire mountain suddenly shook violently while the two alligators followed Jian Chen and Tie Ta, jumping off in pursuit. This region was their territory, so they clearly would not let the two ant-like existences that had intruded escape.

Although the two alligators were huge, they were also nimble. They were extremely quick as well, actually quite a bit faster than Jian Chen and Tie Ta. In the blink of an eye, they had caught up to them by quite a bit.

Sensing that the alligators were getting closer and closer, Jian Chen immediately used his Illusory Flash and his speed abruptly exploded. He tore away from the alligator once more with a long streak of afterimages behind him.

“Mysteries of War, Celestial Movement!” At the same time, Tie Ta used his Mysteries of War. He suddenly vanished before reappearing several kilometers away in the next moment. Like teleportation, his figure flickered, and he managed to travel over

twenty kilometers away from the alligator. He was much faster than Jian Chen.

At this moment, Jian Chen and Tie Ta had already drawn the two alligators several dozen kilometers away. Afterward, they stopped, as if they understood each other tacitly, and quietly waited for the two beasts to reach them.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta did not stand together, but over ten kilometers away. The two Xuanhuang beasts split up as well, each charging toward one target.

Clearly, one of the Xuanhuang beasts was female while the other was male, but their strength was the same. Suddenly, a bright golden light began to flicker. Tie Ta had drawn his golden axe as he stood there in an awe-inspiring manner. He bathed in the golden light, erect like a war god as powerful battle intent revolved around him. He gave off a feeling that made him seem like he was invincible.

Jian Chen also stood with his Emperor Armament. He stood dead-straight as a powerful sword intent radiated from him, surging straight into the sky. He seemed to have become a sword that hovered in the surroundings.

Jian Chen dared not to show any carelessness against two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts. He was already ready to use everything he had. At that moment, his consciousness completely fused with his sword intent, as if he had combined with the Emperor Armament in his hand. Suddenly, he seemed to sense something, but he was unable to grasp it no matter what. It felt like it was concealed by layers of mist, making it hazy and extremely blurry.

“This is the Way of the Sword!” Jian Chen’s heart twitched. He could feel once again that he had touched the first realm of the Way of the Sword, but to his disappointment, he had never been able to grasp it, perhaps due to the fact that he did not have his fated sword. He always felt like he was lacking something.

Jian Chen did not have the time to comprehend the mysteries of the Way of the Sword in detail. The Class 9 Xuanhuang beast had already arrived before him. It opened its mouth and bit at Jian Chen. At the same time, a powerful suction force emerged from its mouth, attempting to suck Jian Chen in.

Jian Chen immediately felt his movements slow down in an abnormal way now because of the suction force. However, he was not flustered at all. Chaotic Force surged out of him and wrapped around him to resist the suction force. He used the Illusory Flash to avoid the alligator's mouth and stabbed out as hard as he could at the alligator's head along the way.

Ding! With a crisp sound, like the collision of metal, Jian Chen's full-powered attack failed to harm the alligator at all. He even failed to break through the alligator's skin, only leaving behind a faint, white mark.

"What a tough body. Looks like I can only attack its weakest point," Jian Chen was secretly shocked. The Class 9 Xuanhuang beast's flesh had reached an unbelievable level of toughness. His full-powered attack, equal to a Saint King at Seventh Heavenly Layer, could not harm it at all. By the looks of things, probably even a Saint King at Great Perfection using all his strength could not break through the alligator's skin.

Chapter 1270: Scarlet Gold Ore (One)

At the same time, the huge, golden axe in Tie Ta's hand landed on his Class 9 Xuanhuang beast. The outcome was the same as Jian Chen's. His powerful strike failed to harm the Xuanhuang beast at all, not even puncturing its skin. All that was left was a faint mark.

Tie Ta immediately frowned at this. The toughness of the Xuanhuang beast had also exceeded his imaginations, but he did not become dejected at all. He now gripped the axe with two hands as he lifted it high above his head. It shone with a bright golden light as a powerful battle intent coiled around him, fusing with the axe head.

"Mysteries of War, Mortality-breaker!" Tie Ta called out as the axe was swung down covered in a coating of golden light.

This time, Tie Ta used the Mysteries of War, so it was far more powerful than his attack earlier.

Boom! The golden axe landed on the Xuanhuang beast and actually produced a heavy boom. Violent streams of energy shot out in all directions as storms of energy, kicking dust and stones into the air. The dust obscured most of Tie Ta and the Xuanhuang beast.

Tie Ta's strength had increased a lot after he had cultivated for three months in the whirlpool of energy. He was far more powerful than he had been in the battle against the Tao family. The power of his Mysteries of War had even reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King, now even stronger than Jian Chen.

However, his attack still failed to break through the Xuanhuang beast's skin, only leaving behind a white mark that was slightly bigger than before.

Roar! The Xuanhuang beast was angered and produced a deafening roar. It raised one of its limbs and pressed it against Tie

Ta. It clearly could not allow such an insignificant, ant-like existence to attack it time and time again. Although it did not possess any intelligence, it felt supremacy due to its strength, unable to tolerate contact from those weaker than it.

Due to being overly large, the Xuanhuang beast's limb was extremely huge as well. It was twenty to thirty meters wide, larger than a regular house.

The Xuanhuang beast quickly slammed down its foot. Like a huge stamp descending from the sky, it engulfed an entire region. Tie Ta immediately felt a vast pressure appear beneath him since he was below the foot. Although the Class 9 Xuanhuang beast did not know any special abilities, it was still a powerful existence on par with Saint Emperors after all. Just any old attack from it possessed an extremely large amount of force and the pressure created could trap any prey that was weaker than it.

Tie Ta felt his body become heavier and heavier. His feet had already sunk into the ground and continued to sink. The Xuanhuang beast's huge foot rapidly came crashing down from above him. With every inch it fell, the pressure Tie Ta felt became greater.

"Mysteries of War, Celestial Movement!" Tie Ta cried out before using a Mystery of War again. Bathing in golden light, he suddenly vanished with a flash and reappeared on the back of the Xuanhuang beast like he had teleported.

"Mysteries of War, Destruction!" Tie Ta roared out and was covered by golden light. Supreme battle intent permeated his surroundings once again. It combined with his axe as invisible energy and strengthened it. A destructive energy erupted from the axe that seemed like it could destroy everything in the surroundings.

Just from the presence, Destruction was far more powerful than Mortality-breaker. One of them was just a simple but powerful

attack, while the other possessed an aura of destruction. It could annihilate anything.

When the golden axe struck the back of the Xuanhuang beast with its destructive aura, it actually left behind a thin, two-meter-long gash. Tie Ta's Destruction could actually puncture the skin of the Xuanhuang beast. Although the wound was only an inch deep, not even a tenth of the beast's hide, it was still shocking.

The Xuanhuang beast violently shook in an attempt to throw Tie Ta off its back. Tie Ta held onto a protrusion on its back, securing himself firmly to the beast's back. He swung his axe with one hand and continued to use Destruction on the two-meter-long gash, causing it to rapidly widen. Once he got through the thick hide of the Xuanhuang beast, he would be able to harm the it.

The Xuanhuang beast immediately began to growl angrily and stomp the ground when it saw how it could not shake off the insignificant existence on its back. It created huge ditches one after another in the tough soul as it used its thick and powerful tail to whip at Tie Ta. However, Tie Ta would avoid it using his Celestial Movement before returning to the same spot to continue deepening the wound.

One swing...

Two swings...

Three swings...

The force of Destruction was greatly reduced since he was using it with one hand, but the Xuanhuang beast could not endure his consecutive attacks. The gash became deeper and deeper on its back, but there was still no blood. The Xuanhuang beast's hide was extremely thick. Tie Ta had not even cut through half of it.

Tie Ta was like a piece of gum stuck to the beast's back, unable to be removed no matter what. Although the beast posed no harm to Tie Ta for now, it was still very difficult for him to slay the beast

since he had yet to even get through its hide.

On the other side, Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to avoid the attacks of the beast. After a period of weaving and dodging, Jian Chen had completely grasped the way the beast attacked. It did not use any tricks and only used the most primitive methods of attack as a beast. Although it possessed the great strength of a Saint Emperor, it was not even as threatening as a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King besides its thick skin.

Jian Chen hid himself from the beast's vision. With his presence fully erased, he silently made his way below the beast and stabbed as hard as he could at its snow-white belly.

However, the attack failed to harm the Xuanhuang beast at all. Jian Chen felt his sword strike something soft, preventing him from using any force.

The belly was the weakest point of many magical beasts, and it was a crucial region that was directly connected to its various organs. Unfortunately, even this weak point of many magical beasts had been greatly strengthened on this Xuanhuang beast.

"Looks like I can only attack its eyes, mouth, ears, and nostrils," Jian Chen sighed inside. In all his years of fighting, this was a battle he felt most helpless about. It was not because his opponent was far too powerful but because their hide was just too thick.

Jian Chen emerged from beneath the Xuanhuang beast with a flash, standing right in front of the beast's head without hiding himself at all. He swung his Emperor Armament at the ground and immediately, a black, crescent sword Qi vanished into the soil. It moved through the ground, heading quickly toward the Xuanhuang beast.

Soil was kicked into the air wherever the sword Qi passed, launching large swathes of sand and dust into the air. The sky became a hazy mess. Both Jian Chen and the Xuanhuang beast had their vision obscured in such circumstances, unable to see each

other at all.

Jian Chen closed his eyes and charged into the cloud of dust. At this moment, he no longer bothered with the fact that his soul would be consumed at an extremely rapid rate. He expanded the senses of his soul to a thousand meters and used it to observe his surroundings as he rapidly approached the beast. At the same time, he carefully erased his presence to prevent the Xuanhuang beast from discovering where he was.

Jian Chen arrived twenty meters away from the Xuanhuang beast's head very quickly. Suddenly, his speed exploded, and he traversed the distance with the Illusory Flash, arriving before the beast's eye. He radiated with a powerful sword intent as the Emperor Armament shone with a black streak of light that was several meters long. The violent and destructive presence entered the Xuanhuang beast's eye, causing it to feel a piercing pain.

Before the beast could close its eyes, the Emperor Armament had transformed into an obscure streak of black light as it stabbed into one of the Xuanhuang beast's eye that was half a man wide. The Chaotic Force hidden within the weapon wildly erupted, blinding the Xuanhuang beast's eye at that moment. The residual energy used the eye as an entry and spread toward the brain of the Xuanhuang beast in attempt to destroy its central nervous system.

The Xuanhuang beast produced a painful cry as it writhed on the ground, kicking up even more dust and sand. It became so obscured that it was impossible for Jian Chen to see right in front of him.

Jian Chen originally planned on using this opportunity to blind the beast's other eye as well, but seeing how it writhed in an unpredictable manner, all he could do was give up with no other choice and retreat.

Not only did the Xuanhuang beast's pain come from its blinded eye, it was also caused by the small amount of Chaotic Force Jian

Chen had deposited. Wherever the energy went, the surrounding blood and flesh would vanish. The Chaotic Force quickly made its way toward the beast's head.

The Xuanhuang beast also seemed to be able to sense the threat traveling toward its brain. Energy immediately surged out like water from a broken dam, quickly reaching its head. Afterward, it surrounded the small amount of Chaotic Force and slowly nullified it.

Jian Chen could sense the Chaotic Force vanish. He thought, "The Xuanhuang beast has grown up in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, so it must've absorbed some Xuanhuang Qi. Xuanhuang Qi is a powerful energy on par with Chaotic Force, so it possesses enough power to repel it. The threat of my Chaotic Force toward the beast has been greatly reduced. Greater effects will only appear when I use it on beasts that are weaker than me."

"My Chaotic Force will be wiped out before it can reach the beast's central nervous system. Looks like with my current strength, it's very difficult for me to slay Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts even when using its weak points to my advantage." Jian Chen emotionlessly stared at the writhing Xuanhuang beast in front of him. The light in his eyes flickered, but as if he had thought of something, a firmer gleam of light flashed through his eyes. The next moment, the saint artifact flew out from the center of his eyebrows and with a wave of his hand, he removed something from the artifact space.

At that moment, an extremely terrifying ripple of energy pervaded the surroundings. The energy ripple was so powerful that even the two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts paused.

Chapter 1271: Scarlet Gold Ore (Two)

A pinky-sized ball of pure energy hovered in Jian Chen's hand. It was the strand of emperor's power he had obtained from Thysnich back in the Octoterra Divine Hall. It had personally been left in Thysnich's body by the hall master of the Serpent God Hall.

Jian Chen had stored the power in the artifact space since he had obtained it. The artifact spirit had personally watched over it. Jian Chen had only taken it out to use it once against Kaiser. After so much time, he had almost forgotten about it, and only now did he remember it.

All energies besides Jian Chen's Chaotic Force and Tie Ta's powers suffered restrictions in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. As soon as it appeared, the strand of emperor's power quickly began to dissipate.

Jian Chen knew that he could not leave the emperor's power out for too long. He looked at the region of dust caused by the writhing alligator and charged in without any hesitation. Using the senses of his soul to observe the surroundings, he immediately headed toward the alligator's head.

The alligator seemed to sense that Jian Chen now possessed a power great enough to threaten it. It temporarily forgot about the excruciating pain of its eye and began to slowly retreat. At the same time, a clear crack rang through the air as its thick and agile tail quickly whipped toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's senses had locked onto the tail's trajectory, allowing him to agilely dodge it. With a flash, he arrived in front of the alligator's head and struck it with the strand of emperor's power as quickly as he could. In order to prevent the power from being wasted, Jian Chen attached a sliver of his soul to the power, so that he could control it in crucial moments.

The emperor power shot out extremely quick, targeting the

blinded eye of the alligator. The beast wanted to flee, but it was unable to dodge the incoming power due to it being too slow. In the end, the valuable strand of energy struck the eye of the beast with utmost precision.

Boom!

With a heavy sound, the emperor's power exploded in the beast's head. The great force caused its head to jolt as bright red and white substances sprayed out from its ears, mouth, nostrils, and eyes.

If the emperor's power had struck the body of the beast, it probably would only have left behind some shallow wounds, just like what had happened to Kaiser. However, since it hit the alligator's weakest point, its head exploded, and it suffered fatal damage. Even with its tough body, it could not endure it.

The beast's body froze. One of its eyes had been destroyed by the explosion of energy and its huge body seemed to have become powerless, collapsing on the ground, dead.

Jian Chen exhaled as he stood beside the alligator's corpse. He had finally slain a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast, but Jian Chen understood extremely well that if it were not for the emperor's power, it would have been extremely difficult to kill it even if he ended up blinding both its eyes.

At this moment, a great roar sounded out from afar. Seeing how its companion had died, the alligator fighting Tie Ta immediately charged at Jian Chen with reddened eyes. It did not even pay any attention to Tie Ta on its back.

At this moment, Tie Ta managed to get through its hide as well. He immediately hacked his axe at the flesh of the beast. Although its body was very tough, it was nowhere near as strong as its hide. Blood sprayed all over Tie Ta as soon as the axe struck the wound.

However, Tie Ta's attack on the wound was no different than scratching an itch to the beast with its thousand-meter-long body.

Tie Ta did not become dejected at all. He had finally broken through the Xuanhuang beast's hide after much difficulty. He immediately used the wound to his advantage as his axe shone with a golden glow. He hacked at the wound time and time again, without showing any exhaustion.

Jian Chen was the only person present in the beast's eyes right now. It completely ignored Tie Ta, who was constantly hacking away at it on its back, as his attacks were no different from a mosquito's sting.

The Xuanhuang beast quickly ran toward Jian Chen as a vast presence radiated from it unknowingly. It locked onto Jian Chen, making him face a mountainous pressure.

Jian Chen stood where he was, unmoving. He stared at the alligator sternly as he pondered how exactly he should deal with it. He was without the emperor's power now, so the method he had used to deal with the first one would not work. Even if he stabbed its eye and injected Chaotic Force, it would not achieve the expected outcome.

This was because Chaotic Force became very weak against Xuanhuang beasts. Xuanhuang beasts possessed Xuanhuang Qi inside. Even if it was not particularly pure and extremely thin, it was still an energy that stood on equal level with Chaotic Force.

The Xuanhuang beast quickly arrived before Jian Chen and opened its gaping mouth to bite him. The two rows of sharp teeth shone with an icy-cold light. Just looking at them was enough to cause people to shiver.

Seeing how the Xuanhuang beast wanted to eat him, a gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen's eyes. This time, he did not dodge. Instead, he shot into the alligator's mouth, like an arrow, before it could bite him, carefully avoiding its sharp teeth. Before the tongue could get to him, he slid down the Xuanhuang beast's gullet and entered its stomach.

It was pitch-black in the stomach. Jian Chen used his soul to sense the surroundings, understanding the environment he was in. He was covered in stomach acid, which made him feel a burning pain even with his body. However, his third layer Chaotic Body was enough to resist the corrosion.

Jian Chen did not hesitate as soon as he made it into the stomach. He wielded the Emperor Armament and swung it at the surroundings, using all he had to destroy the Xuanhuang beast from inside out.

This time, the Class 9 Xuanhuang beast could not just endure the attacks. It was in excruciating pain from the great wounds, which caused it to constantly wailed out. Its body writhed violently as well, almost rolling over Tie Ta who was on its back.

Jian Chen's Emperor Armament shone brightly. With a single stroke, he could destroy all the organs within a range of four meters. He advanced through the Xuanhuang beast's body, approaching its head. He would chop through all the walls of flesh that blocked his path.

But at this moment, Jian Chen felt an invisible force wrap around him. Just when he was about to react, he was bound by the power. It was extremely powerful, such that Jian Chen could not even struggle for the time being. He felt his vision brighten as he was vomited out by the alligator.

After learning from what had happened earlier, the Xuanhuang beast clearly was not bold enough to open its mouth again. After spitting out Jian Chen, it kept its mouth tightly.

Jian Chen quickly stabilized himself and used the same trick as before. With a sword Qi thrown at the ground, large swathes of dust were kicked into the air, which blocked the Xuanhuang beast's vision. He erased his presence as he silently made his way in front of the Xuanhuang beast, stabbing one of its eyes with lightning-like speed.

The Xuanhuang beast could not help but wail from the pain. It opened its mouth, and Jian Chen used the opportunity to enter the beast's body again. Without stopping at all, he continued to use the Emperor Armament to carve out a path by removing all the obstacles in his way, quickly approaching the beast's brain.

At this moment, Jian Chen could feel the invisible force wrap around him once again. He had already arrived in the head of the beast, so he shot a sword Qi ahead of him without any second thought, targeting central nervous system.

Immediately, a small portion of the beast's central nervous system was destroyed by Jian Chen's sword Qi. Although it did not die, it suffered fatal damage. Painfully tearing at the sky, it swayed and almost collapsed on the ground. It had lost control over the force it had condensed in its head to deal with Jian Chen, causing it to disperse.

Jian Chen knew this was a rare opportunity, so he abruptly increased his speed. He arrived before the central nervous system as fast as he could and quickly swung out with his Emperor Armament. He created a densely-packed net of attacks from this stroke, completely and utterly destroying the beast's central nervous system.

Boom! With its destruction, the Xuanhuang beast could not resist death no matter how vigorous its life force was. It finally collapsed on the ground heavily.

Sensing the life drain away from the Xuanhuang beast, Tie Ta stopped his pointless hacking. He stared at the huge corpse on the ground and was clearly stunned. He then leaped off its body. He chuckled, "Jian Chen's still the powerful one. Just when I got through its hide, you already killed it."

Spurt! The Xuanhuang beast's eye suddenly exploded, and Jian Chen charged out of the socket, covered in various liquids and appearing to be in a horrible shape. He threw the bloody energy

crystal in his hand at Tie Ta and said, “Tie Ta, that’s yours. It’s equivalent to a Class 9 Monster Core, so it should be able to increase your strength by quite a bit.”

Tie Ta caught the thumb-sized crystal and seriously replied, “Jian Chen, you killed both of these Xuanhuang beasts, so this should belong to you. I don’t want it.” With that, he was about to throw the crystal back at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen raised his hand to stop Tie Ta. He said, “The Xuanhuang beasts we’ll be coming across will become stronger and stronger. There will definitely be even more Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts waiting for us later on, and possibly even those that have surpassed Class 9, ones that have surpassed Saint Emperor. We won’t be able to get very far with just our current strength, so we need to become stronger as fast as possible. Only when we are stronger can we slay more Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts.”

Jian Chen made up his mind then and there. After he collected the fifth grade Comprehension Tea Leaves and the Flamecloud Fruit, he would immediately enter seclusion to break through to the fourth layer. He did not mind even if it did take up some of the precious remaining time.

He understood that there would be even more valuable heavenly resources of higher grades later on and that probably all of the beasts that guarded them would be Class 9 or peak existences among Class 9. With just his current strength, he could not make it far at all. Only by increasing his strength could he travel further and collect even more things.

Tie Ta found what Jian Chen had said to be reasonable. He did not continue to insist after realizing that, accepting the Class 9 energy crystal.

Afterward, Jian Chen removed an energy crystal of similar size from the other Xuanhuang beast and stored it in his Space Ring. He also moved the two corpses into the artifact before using some first

grade spring water to wash his body. He changed into a new set of clothes before returning to the region where the two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts had lived.

“Scarlet Gold Ore, that’s Scarlet Gold Ore. Master, we’ve found another material for forging the Azulet swords.” Before Jian Chen could collect the tea leaves, the Azulet sword spirits called out in joy right when he made it to the top of the mountain.

Jian Chen glanced over. In the pit where the two alligators had dwelled stood a golden piece of rock half a man tall, glistening like gold.

Jian Chen beamed in joy. He immediately ignored the Comprehension Tea Tree and ran toward the rock. Although the tea leaves were valuable, they were not more valuable than a material to forge the Azulet swords in Jian Chen’s eyes.

This was because he yearned for a sword that truly suited him from the bottom of his heart. At the same time, he needed to have a fated sword to comprehend the five realms of the Way of the Sword, when he would truly begin his cultivation of the sword.

Chapter 1272: Secluded Cultivation

Jian Chen stored the Scarlet Gold Ore away in his Space Ring like it was a supreme treasure before sucking in a deep breath, slowly calming himself down. He was getting closer and closer to the day he could forge the swords. All he lacked now was the Yin Hellstone, which was among the most valuable materials to forge the swords.

Afterward, Jian Chen made his way to the Comprehension Tea Tree. The tree was the same size as the ones he had come across before, but each leaf possessed an even heavier presence of ways. This fifth grade of the Immortal Tier Comprehension Tea Tree was more valuable than the three first grade trees he had come across before.

Jian Chen pulled out a crude wooden box from the artifact space before carefully snapping off two twigs from the tree. He used them as chopsticks as began to collect every single leaf.

After collecting all eighty one tea leaves, Jian Chen arrived by the cliff. He carefully made his way down along the slippery cliff face before finally arriving beside the Flamecloud Fruit Tree. He pulled out another wooden box from the artifact space, slightly bigger than the one before, and began collecting the fruit.

The each Flamecloud Fruit was completely red and the size of a thumb. They were the smallest heavenly resources Jian Chen had come across so far. Although they were extremely small, the amount of energy hidden inside could not be underestimated. As soon as he touched one of them, he could clearly feel the energetic fire-attributed energy within. It was extremely pure and vast. Even a hundred-thousand-year heavenly resource would not be able to match up to a single one of them.

There was a total of ninety-nine Flamecloud Fruits and Jian Chen picked every single one of them. He then made his way to the

Spring of Life which supported the entire region.

The Spring of Life was also the largest one he had come across since he had arrived in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He saw was a thirty-meter-wide lake, filled with green springwater. It radiated with a vast presence of life.

“This is a fifth grade Spring of Life,” Zi Ying recognized the quality of the spring water with a single glance and immediately informed Jian Chen.

Jian Chen beamed inside with that. The highest grade of spring water in his artifact space was only of the third. Not only was the water right before him of the fifth grade, there was so much of it as well. He ravished in joy.

Jian Chen did not hesitate at all, immediately pulling out a container to collect the water. In the end, he collected half of all the water just like before and found a head-sized ball of essence in the center. It was also of the fifth grade.

Afterward, Jian Chen looked around the top of the mountain before leaving after not finding anything else. He then looked around the area around the mountain, searching the entire place. He found over ten heavenly resources that were also of the Immortal Tier with the sword spirits' help.

“It’s time for me to increase my strength. I can finally reach the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body,” Jian Chen brought his hands together as he mumbled to himself. Afterward, he let out the saint artifact, and after calling to Tie Ta, they entered the artifact space together. The saint artifact did not stay revealed outside either. It turned into a golden streak of light as it burrowed into the soil and hide itself deep underground to prevent any sudden encounters with Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts. After all, the saint artifact could only resist attacks from Saint Kings with its defense. Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts possessed enough strength to smash it into pieces.

Jian Chen threw some Immortal Tier heavenly resources to the white tiger for it to devour in the artifact space, causing it to enter another slumber, which had not occurred for quite some time. After that, he and Tie Ta chose places to enter seclusion.

Jian Chen tidied his cultivation resources in a cold and gloomy room. The resources he had to reach the fourth layer were the Violet Cloud Peaches that were equivalent to two Class 9 Monster Cores, one energy crystal from a Class 9 Xuanhuang Beast, three of the five Class 9 Monster Cores he had obtained from the Heaven's Incense School, and many more Class 7 and 8 Monster Cores.

"I require a third grade Violet Cloud Peach to reach the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body. I don't have it, but I do have a few at the first grade. It's just enough combined with the four Class 9 Monster Cores I have on me. However, the Violet Cloud Peach can only be consumed once every century, so if I eat it now, I have to wait a hundred years before I can eat a second one. I might end up coming across Violet Cloud Peaches of higher grades within the next few days, so I can't just waste this opportunity that arises once every hundred years. Whatever, I won't eat the Violet Cloud Peach this time. I'll use the Class 7 and 8 Monster Cores to replace it," Jian Chen thought before pulling out all his high class monster cores and the Class 7 and 8 energy crystals he had obtained from killing Xuanhuang beasts. He placed them all on the ground and began to cultivate.

Jian Chen first began to absorb the energy crystals he had obtained from the Xuanhuang beasts. He discovered that they were far greater than monster cores of the same class. Not only was the energy inside them much purer, they also lacked the violent factor that was in the energy of monster cores, which made absorption even easier.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, no one dared to easily absorb the energy of monster cores to cultivate, mainly because of the violent factor hidden within both low and high class monster cores. Not

only would it wreak havoc on the body if it managed to hide itself, it would also bring great problems to one's cultivation in the future, which might even result in death by implosion if they were severe.

As a result, all the people of the Tian Yuan Continent needed to consolidate their strength after absorbing a certain amount of energy from the monster cores as well as purge the violent factors within them. This process would take quite some time.

The reason why Jian Chen could ignore this violent factor in monster cores was all because of the Azulet sword spirits. They allowed Jian Chen to absorb the energy without any worry whatsoever.

Yet, the energy crystals from the Xuanhuang beasts lacked this violence that monster cores had, so even if the people of the Tian Yuan Continent continuously absorbed the energy, it would not leave any future problems.

Jian Chen immediately rejoiced after understanding this. He thought of his friends and family. All he needed was to bring back plenty of these energy crystals, and they could rapidly strengthen themselves.

“Once I break through to the fourth layer, I’ll definitely hunt more Xuanhuang beasts and collect even more energy crystals,” Jian Chen secretly made up his mind. When he had entered the Xuanhuang Microcosm before, he had originally planned to leave immediately after he had collected the materials for the sea goddess. But now that he discovered the benefits of the Xuanhuang Microcosm, he was tempted to stay in there for a few years or possibly never leave.

Other than this, Jian Chen could sense extremely thin traces of Xuanhuang Qi within the energy crystals. However, he could not absorb the energy at all. All he could do was let it dissipate in the air, as even the sword spirits could do nothing about it.

“Master, there’s no point in trying to absorb the Xuanhuang Qi. Qing Suo and I have existed for countless years and we’ve never heard of someone who can absorb it. Although it’s on the same level as the Chaotic Force, no one can control it in all of history. There are a few practitioners of the Chaotic Body in the Immortals’ World, but they are all the same as master, where they cultivate their Chaotic Body after birth. Innate Chaotic Bodies are even rarer. Several hundreds of thousands or even millions of years can pass without the birth of a single Innate Chaotic Body,” said Zi Ying.

Chapter 1273: Hao Yue's Might (One)

Jian Chen could only give up on the thought of absorbing Xuanhuang Qi with the sword spirit's explanation and, thus, began to focus on cultivation.

A hundred thousand kilometers away from the Gesun Kingdom stood a city completely constructed out of a valuable tungsten alloy. The city was not one of the seven capital cities, but it was great enough to stand on equal ground with them on the Tian Yuan Continent. From certain aspects, the city was countless times more valuable than any single capital of the continent.

This was because the city walls were completely created from tungsten alloy. Tungsten alloy was an extremely valuable metal on the continent. It was extremely tough and was equivalent to ten times its weight in purple coins. Probably no one could calculate just how much of the metal went into building the city, so just the city walls had reached an astonishing price.

When it was first being built, many large organizations on the continent had indeed cast their greedy eyes upon such a valuable city and even interested a few ancient clans. However, since the owner of the city was just far too reputed, all of them gave up on the thought of taking the city for themselves in the end.

The city was Flame City which belonged to the Flame Mercenaries. As the people who possessed the most authority and were responsible for every single matter in the mercenaries, Bi Lian and You Yue currently conversed casually in the luxurious city lord's estate standing in the center of the city like an imperial palace. They would laugh pleasantly from time to time.

In order to prevent the escaped Saint Kings of the Underworld sect from taking revenge on the Flame Mercenaries, You Yue watched over the city with the Bright Moon Divine Hall. The silver-white divine hall had shrunk to the size of a regular palace

and stood silently in the city lord's estate. Contained inside it was fairy Hao Yue's soul. She would discover any Saint King who entered the estate as soon as they set foot in it.

Originally, fairy Hao Yue would have never watched over a mercenary group that had nothing to do with her because of her status and her pride, but she only ended up agreeing after considering the fact that the request originated from Jian Chen and that she would need his help in the future. Hence, she would temporarily watch over the city.

The divine hall was very eye-catching in between the estate's dark bricks and red tiles. Even during the day, the clear moonlight from the divine hall could still be seen. A thousand meters around the divine hall had also become a forbidden zone, where both the patrolling guards and the upper echelon of the mercenaries could not set foot.

At this moment, the space above Flame City violently began to distort. A while later, a Space Gate quickly formed and many Saint Kings emerged from it. They stared at the city beneath them.

They were the nine Saint Kings that had hurried over from Mercenary City. They were lead by four Saint Kings from the Yiyuan sect and Yangji sect while the five independent Saint Kings followed along to borrow the divine hall.

As soon as the nine Saint Kings arrived above the city, their vast presences surged out of them, engulfing the entire city. A few weaker mercenaries immediately vomited blood from the presences and instantly paled.

At that moment, the orderly city turned into a huge mess from the presences of the nine Saint Kings. The streets became strewn with people. Although they were not dead, all of them had become heavily injured from the vast presences. Their organs had all ruptured while a few structures in the city had collapsed.

Bi Hai hurriedly flew from the city lord's estate with the other

Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries. They became extremely stern when they saw the nine Saint Kings hovering in the air.

Bi Lian stood as well while talking to You Yue. She looked outside and asked in a heavy voice, “What’s happening?”

You Yue grabbed her arm and comforted her, “Sister Bi Lian, don’t worry. I’ll support you with everything.”

“Yep. You Yue, have a look. People who can give off such great presences are probably Saint Kings. I’m afraid that great-grandfather Bi Hai and the others will be in danger,” Bi Lian said in a rather flustered manner. She worried for Bi Hai’s safety very much.

You Yue nodded and walked outside as she pulled Bi Lian with her. She had the Bright Moon Divine Hall as a safety measure, so she did not show any fear even when she faced Saint Kings.

Fairy Hao Yue sensed the nine Saint Kings the moment they had reached the city, but she did not do anything. She remained in the divine hall and secretly observed the situation outside.

Bi Hai flew into the air with the other Saint Rulers and stopped at the same altitude as the nine Saint Kings. He clasped his hands at them and asked in an extremely hostile manner, “May I ask who you are and why you have come to my Flame Mercenaries to make trouble? Do you think that there are no Saint Kings in the city?”

The gazes of the nine Saint Kings grew cold with what Bi Hai had said, but the four Saint Kings from the protector clans said nothing. They understood the Flame Mercenaries extremely well. Although it was not powerful overall, they possessed a captain who even protector clans did not dare to offend.

They could put the Saint Rulers in their place, but they dared not to harm them easily. Not to mention, the person right before them was Jian Chen’s great-grandfather. They could not guarantee that Jian Chen would not go to their protector clans and cause trouble

with the three magical beasts in his wrath if they touched him.

However, just because the Saint Kings from the Yiyuan and Yangji sects dared not to touch Bi Hai did not mean that the five other independent Saint Kings would not do the same. They did not understand the Flame Mercenaries, so with their prideful nature, they were very displeased by how a mere Saint Ruler had not only failed to greet them politely and had even questioned them in hostility.

Immediately, a short, Fourth Heavenly Layer old man took a step and immediately used his presence to press onto Bi Hai. He sneered, "So what if you have Saint Kings? You're just a mere Saint Ruler and you dare to speak so rudely to the nine of us? I can kill you and even if you have a Saint King present, they'll need to apologize to the nine of us." With that, the short old man hurled his palm at Bi Hai. He had used his abilities as a Saint King with his palm strike. With a surge of energy, the space in front froze and forcibly immobilized Bi Hai.

However, what he failed to notice was that Bi Hai was clenching a rock in his right hand when he had arrived. The rock was one of the three Flaming Jadeites the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union had gifted Jian Chen, and it had already been fully charged with energy by Rui Jin. It could deal an attack from a Saint King at Great Perfection.

Bi Hai knew that the people had not come with good intentions and that there were nine Saint Kings in total, so he had secretly prepared a Flaming Jadeite in his hand just in case.

The moment the short old man attacked Bi Hai, Bi Hai used a sliver of Saint Force within him to activate the rock. Immediately, an extremely violent ripple of energy emerged from the Flaming Jadeite, instantaneously breaking through the frozen space. Bi Hai regained his freedom, so with a wave of his hand, he threw the Flaming Jadeite.

Chapter 1274: Hao Yue's Might (Two)

The Flaming Jadeite shone with a piercing light as it shot toward the short old man with an extremely great energy. Wherever it passed, the surrounding space shook violently, forming pitch-black cracks from the terrifying amount of energy spewing from the rock.

The short old man paled in fright. He shivered because of how powerful the energy from the stone was. It was equivalent to a strike from a Saint King at Great Perfection, so how could it be possible for him to resist it with his strength as a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint King? Even if he did manage to resist it, he would end up heavily injured.

“What is this? Has a Saint King at Great Perfection deposited a sliver of his power in this Saint Ruler? Impossible, a Saint King’s power stored in another person’s body would never produce such a terrifying disturbance.” The short old man was no longer able to remain as composed as before. He abruptly shot back and pleaded for help from the eight other Saint Kings in worry, “Everyone, let’s block this attack together, or all of us will be in for more than what we bargained for.”

The other eight Saint Kings became stern as well. None of them had thought that Bi Hai would possess such a great item, where it could erupt suddenly and produce such a great strike. Any single one of them would become heavily injured if they took on the strike all by themselves.

Before the short old man had even asked for help, the eight Saint Kings already planned on working together and blocking the strike of the Flaming Jadeite because the short old man stood right in front of them. The rock shot toward the short old man as well as them, so trying to remain uninvolved in this matter was impossible.

Vast amounts of energy surged from the eight Saint Kings. The nine of them all produced a palm strike that was sent at the Flaming Jadeite at the same time. The energies collided with the rock as it shook up the surrounding space.

Boom! With a deafening explosion, it seemed like brilliant fireworks had been set off above the city from how dazzling it was. Violent energy ripples rocked the surroundings and surged out. A portion of the energy traveled toward Flame City.

Bi Hai and the Saint Rulers's expressions all drastically changed. The ripples of energy erupted from a clash between Saint Kings, so they were extremely powerful. All they could do before the ripples was protect themselves. They could not prevent them from reaching the city. If it hit the city below, all the weaker people would become heavily injured or end up dead.

You Yue clearly understood this as well while witnessing everything unfold. Her eyes shone with an icy-cold gaze as the Moon God Scepter appeared silently in her hand. The fist-sized jewel embedded in the sceptre shone with hazy moonlight. You Yue swung the sceptre and an extremely pure strand of Moonlight Force immediately began to radiate from the crystal, forming a weak-looking barrier over the city.

The barrier immediately began to violently shake when the energy ripples struck it, but fortunately, the barrier only received some energy ripples and not the direct attacks of the Saint Kings. The barrier successfully blocked the energy.

When the rampaging energy in the sky finally settling down, the barrier of Moonlight Force silently disappeared as well. You Yue looked at the exquisite sceptre with a pained look. She could clearly feel that there was not much energy left in the sceptre.

“The energy deposited in the sceptre by master is becoming less and less,” You Yue sighed inside, but flames of fury quickly ignited. She stared at the nine Saint Kings in a very hostile manner. If she

did not make it in time just then, Flame City would have suffered heavy casualties because of the nine of them

The nine Saint Kings hovered in the air with sunken faces. Every single one of the had emerged unscathed. Half of them were beyond the Fifth Heavenly Layer and two of the were of the Seventh Heavenly Layer, so the attack from the Flaming Jadeite had failed to harm them with their teamwork.

Heavy killing intent filled the eyes of the short old man that Bi Hai had targeted. He was a mighty Saint King, yet he had almost been injured by a mere Saint Ruler. Even though he had no idea what the Saint Ruler had used to deal such a shocking and terrifying attack, he still found it to be a permanent disgrace to his name.

“Very good. I never thought that after spending over a thousand years as a hermit, there would actually be a few more people who aren’t afraid of dying on the Tian Yuan Continent. You’re a mere Saint Ruler, yet you dare to look down on Saint Kings? Just this will result in irreconcilable consequences. Kid, I don’t care who’s behind you. I’m killing you for sure today,” said the short old man with a heavy tone. He had thought that Bi Hai would definitely have quite a powerful Saint King supporting him since he could produce something as terrifying as the Flaming Jadeite, but he had come this time in the glorious name of saving the continent. The protector clans and Mercenary City were not the only ones who stood on his side, all the Saint Kings of the Tian Yuan Continent did. He obviously felt no fear at all.

“Don’t you dare! If you even touch great-grandfather Bi Hai, none of the nine of you will be leaving Flame City today.” A cold voice rang out from below as soon as the short old man finished speaking. You Yue was enveloped by a layer of clear Moonlight Force as she quickly flew over from the city lord’s estate. At the same time, the Bright Moon Divine Hall rose up and hovered above her.

You Yue's threat immediately caused the nine Saint Kings' gazes to grow cold. They all became utterly furious. The nine of them had come with such a powerful party to borrow the Bright Moon Divine Hall, yet before they could even speak of the request, their dignity had been trampled over by a Saint Ruler, almost reducing them to a mess. Now, a woman who was not even a Saint Ruler threatened them, which completely shamed all of them.

A red-robed independent Saint King coldly snorted. Just as he was about to step forward, he was stopped by a great elder of the Yangji sect. He said through a communication technique, "Brother Ha Lu, we've come to borrow the Bright Moon Divine Hall this time, not to cause trouble. Let's not waste too much time. Leave the matter to me." The great elder was initially extremely willing for the five independent Saint Kings to teach the Flame Mercenaries a lesson, but he worried that he would be dragged into it, so he could only give up on that thought. Meanwhile, the matter of borrowing the Bright Moon Divine Hall was for guarding the seal beneath Mercenary City. It was something done in thought for the entire world, so it was irrefutable. As a result, the great elder could take it without any worry. Even if Jian Chen came looking for him later on, he would have the support of all the experts across the entire continent. He was obviously not afraid.

"Hmph. Jian Chen, our Yangji sect indeed does not have the power to deal with you, but we can destroy the Bright Moon Divine Hall when the World of Forsaken Saints invades the Tian Yuan Continent. As long as we can weaken you slightly, it's nothing even if we have to endure some pressure. If you really dare to use this to make trouble for us, we won't even need to act personally. The entire continent will become your enemy," he sneered inside.

He was tempted to take the Bright Moon Divine Hall and leave immediately when he thought up to there. He no longer hesitated. Suppressing his anger for You Yue, he coldly and emotionlessly said, "You must be You Yue. Our Tian Yuan Continent is currently

facing a danger that directly affects its fate. There is a tunnel to another world sealed beneath Mercenary City, and the seal has been destroyed now. The experts of the other world can invade us at any moment. The nine of us have come to borrow your divine hall in order to save the world by blocking the tunnel beneath the city. Time is tight right now, so please hand over the divine hall immediately so we can take it back to Mercenary City with us.”

You Yue sneered, “The Bright Moon Divine Hall isn’t mine. It’s my masters. If you want to borrow it, you should ask my master instead.”

The great elder from the Yangji sect immediately became speechless. In reality, he had considered that You Yue would decline and, thus, had thought up of many reasons and excuses to combat this. He had even made up his mind to use force, but he had never thought that You Yue would respond like that, to have him directly ask fairy Hao Yue for the divine hall.

The four Saint Kings from the protector clans knew that fairy Hao Yue was not dead, that her soul had always existed, and that it remained within the divine hall. Other than the great prestige she had left behind in the past, she was just a paper tiger to them, relying on the toughness of the Bright Moon Divine Hall to guard her soul.

However, the five independent Saint Kings did not know anything about fairy Hao Yue’s soul. The short old man snickered, “Fairy Hao Yue has already been dead for several tens of thousand years. You actually want us to go find the dead fairy Hao Yue to borrow the divine hall? This is a huge joke. Everyone, guarding the tunnel is an extremely pressing matter. We cannot waste anymore time. Let’s directly take the divine hall and leave.”

As soon as the old man finished talking, the divine hall above You Yue suddenly began to shine with an intense, silver-white moonlight. It rapidly expanded, becoming a huge, majestic palace in a single moment, looming over their heads like a dark cloud.

“Hmph. Who said I was dead?” An icy-cold voice rang from the divine hall as a huge, illusionary projection of a person appeared above it. Her clothes fluttered in the breeze with her otherworldly disposition. It was fairy Hao Yue, but her face was blurry and indistinct.

The old man who had said that she was dead just before revealed a different expression. He could clearly feel the extremely powerful soul of fairy Hao Yue, such that his soul was suppressed to the point where he could not move it.

“A-a- are you fairy Hao Yue...” The short old man was utterly astounded as disbelief flooded his face.

“This fairy You Yue’s soul is so powerful. No wonder she can survive until now without her soul dissipating.” The Saint Kings from the two protector clans were all shocked inside, but they felt no fear. With just her powerful soul, fairy Hao Yue was not enough to pose any threat to them. They had even guessed that she probably could not let her soul leave the divine hall.

Fairy Hao Yue coldly stared at the nine of them and heavily said, “I’ve already sensed the shocking changes in Mercenary City. The earthen spirit of Mercenary City has already reached Returnance in strength, so even if she can’t repel them, it won’t change anything even if you take my divine hall away.”

A great elder from the Yiyuan sect said, “The Bright Moon Divine Hall is the only divine hall that can resist attacks from Saint Emperors other than the one in Mercenary City. It doesn’t matter if the divine hall can actually block the seal. We need to give it a try. Fairy Hao Yue, please allow us to borrow it.” With that, a powerful presence radiated from his body. It surged toward the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

Chapter 1275: Hao Yue's Might (Three)

Fairy Hao Yue's face grew colder. The actions of the great elder from the Yiyuan sect had infuriated her. She coldly said, "You sure are bold to disrespect me as a mere Saint King. Are you trying to take my divine hall forcefully? Even if Saint Emperors come personally, they'd have to return with nothing, let alone you Saint Kings. I will give you one last opportunity. Leave immediately, or don't blame me for not treating you courteously."

The great elder could not help but laugh aloud at fairy Hao Yue's threat. He said, "Fairy Hao Yue, I would obviously be as weak as an ant in your eyes if you had your former strength, but it's a pity that you're just a soul now. Can I ask what you can do as just a soul? Your soul might be very strong, but I think you can't leave the divine hall, or it'll quickly disperse into the surroundings."

Fairy Hao Yue's cold eyes shone with heavy killing intent. To think that someone with her prideful nature would be looked down upon by a Saint King who was not even equal to an ant in her eyes, the flames of fury began to rage inside her. Her killing intent rapidly increased.

Seeing how fairy Hao Yue had reacted, the great elder confirmed his suspicions. He could not help but laugh freely even more, "I know you've cast down quite a few formations in the divine hall, which can even trap Saint Emperors, but as long as we don't enter the divine hall, these formations won't be able to pose any threat to us. We've come this time in consideration for all the lives on the continent. I hope you can understand." After saying that, he looked at the eight people behind him and said, "Everyone, time is tight right now. We can't waste too much time in regards to the matter of the seal, so for the sake of all the lives on the continent, we cannot think of so many matters. Let's immediately work together to trap the divine hall and forcefully take it to Mercenary City."

Without any hesitation, the eight Saint Kings behind him all flew toward the divine hall. At the same time, they froze the space around Bi Hai and the other Saint Rulers once more, trapping them there.

Below, Bi Lian watched as the nine Saint Kings flew toward the divine hall with an ugly expression. The light in her eyes flickered as she hesitated. She also possessed a Flaming Jadeite that could deal an attack from a Saint King at Great Perfection in her Space Ring as well as quite a few quaking thunders that Jian Chen had left with her. The quaking thunders were not of the same quality as the Flaming Jadeite, but they could also deal a Saint King's attack. She was currently hesitating over whether to use them or not.

When Jian Chen had first handed the items to Bi Lian, he had said to not use them so easily unless they faced complete danger. However, Bi Lian also understood that in the current situation, even if she used her Flaming Jadeite and all her quaking thunders, it would not necessarily be enough to deal with the nine Saint Kings. The Flaming Jadeite was no longer enough to pose a threat to them if they worked together.

The nine Saint Kings had already arrived in front of the Bright Moon Divine Hall. Every single one of them pulsed with energy since they were planning to trap the divine hall and forcefully take it away with them.

But at this moment, the sky began to change. A huge, round moon slowly rose up from the divine hall and glowed with gentle and clear moonlight.

This was not the real moon but a projection created through Moonlight Force and a technique.

“Since you all want to die, allow me to assist you. I might just be a soul now, but I’m still not someone that a few ants can trample over,” fairy Hao Yue’s voice rang out from the divine hall. Her

figure vanished, having completely disappeared into the divine hall.

The nine Saint Kings revealed different expressions. They discovered that they had been trapped by an invisible force when the moon rose from the divine hall. It was not through the abilities of a Saint King nor through the abilities of a Saint Emperor. It used a method that they did not understand. They had even lost control over the vast energy within them.

“What’s this? God dammit, she’s clearly just a soul now, so how can she trap us? Even if she was once a peak Saint Emperor, it’s impossible for her to do something like this,” the four great elders were greatly shocked inside. Only now did they realize that fairy Hao Yue was not as simple as they had thought.

Peak Saint Emperors had appeared in the protector clans before, but according to ancient records, they would not be able to use such powerful abilities after they lost their bodies and has been reduced to a soul.

“Fairy Hao Yue, w-what did you do to us!?” An independent Saint King bellowed at the Bright Moon Divine Hall. His voice was forceful, but it clearly lacked confidence. He was unable to determine what the force was even with his knowledge and experience.

“Don’t get flustered everyone. She’s probably used some ancient secret technique, but using this must be extremely exhaustive for her. She definitely can’t last for long,” said a great elder of the Yangji sect. He tried to control all his energy within him to break free from the mysterious force that trapped him, but he was unable to utilize anything no matter how hard he tried.

At this moment, their expressions took a drastic turn for the worse. They paled in that instant as shock filled their eyes. They could actually feel their energy uncontrollably drift out of their bodies before being absorbed by the divine hall.

“Oh no, fairy Hao Yue’s currently absorbing our energy,” an independent Saint King cried out while strewn between shock and anger.

The eight other Saint Kings were completely shocked as well. They had discovered that they could only watch helplessly as their energy was siphoned away by the divine hall. Let alone stopping the process, they did not even have the ability to flee.

This was an extremely terrifying matter to them, because once all their energy was drained away, their strength would become severely limited.

“Fairy Hao Yue, stop! Stop...”

“Fairy Hao Yue, stop! You’re becoming an enemy of the continent by doing this...”

“Fairy Hao Yue, please show mercy! The Tian Yuan Continent is about to face a huge disaster, so we should all work together and use everything we have to fend off the World of Forsaken Saints. We shouldn’t be going at each other’s lives here...”

At that moment, all nine of them had become absolutely frantic. They no longer possessed their haughtiness as they all pleaded. Their voices became much gentler.

“Hmph, didn’t you just say before that I can’t do anything to you as a soul? Do you really think that you can act as you wish on the Tian Yuan Continent with your strength as Saint Kings and that no one will stop you? I’ll show you that I can kill you easily even if I’m just a soul now,” fairy Hao Yue’s icy-cold voice rang from the divine hall. It was filled with killing intent.

“Fairy Hao Yue, please stay your hand. Our protector Yiyuan sect will show immense gratitude,” a great elder from the Yiyun sect pleaded, but he failed to sense that the wrinkles on his face were rapidly increasing. He was currently aging at an unbelievable rate.

“You want to deter me just by using the name of a protector clan?

Hmph, what a joke! What do you think the protector clans are on the Tian Yuan Continent are? If I had my body, I could wipe you out with a flick of my finger. I already gave you a chance before, but you were seeking death yourselves. It's no longer my fault. The nine of you will be the first group of people who die from the formations of the divine hall after it's been created. This formation is called Lunar Years!" Fairy Hao Yue coldly replied.

"Lunar Years." The Saint Kings became a little confused after learning the name. They understood what a lunar year was extremely well. From certain aspects, it was time, a label for time. However, they did not understand why she had named the formation Lunar Years.

"Argh! No... no! Impossible-impossible..." Suddenly, an independent Saint King cried out. He stared at the eight other Saint Kings in disbelief as shock filled his eyes. He had just witnessed something too unrealistic to be true.

The eight Saint Kings all looked at him and all of their eyes narrowed. They became filled with disbelief as well, because they had all discovered that the other Saint Kings had become extraordinarily old in just such a short amount of time, and their age was increasing at a visible rate.

"Our life force is rapidly being drained away. Impossible, this is impossible. This isn't an ability that a Saint Emperor can possess. Even Origin realm experts can't do something so great," a Saint King cried out in shock. His face became sheet-white and completely drained of blood.

"Lunar Years. Lunar Years. This is the passage of lunar years, the passage of time. No wonder this formation has this name," a Saint King mumbled in dejection. He was ashen and understood that he probably could not escape from this disaster today. None of them possessed the power to stop the formation from leeching away their life force.

At this moment, a Seventh Heavenly Layer independent Saint King's eyes became glassy. His entire body shriveled up, having been reduced to a bag of bones. His soul had already been extinguished. He was the oldest member in the ground and did not have much time left anyway. It had all been drained away in that short moment, becoming the first Saint King to die to fairy Hao Yue's formation.

The hair of the eight other people grayed as their wrinkles bundled up. Their bodies shriveled at a visible rate. Just earlier, some of them were young men who seemed to be in their prime, yet they had become old now, having been eroded away by time.

All the people in Flame City watched from below, as if the most wondrous thing had happened in the world. The glorious Saint Kings just before had actually all become crippled by age. The disparity between before and now was so great that many of them had failed to return to their senses. Even You Yue, Bi Hai, and the other Saint Rulers were the same.

Bang! Suddenly, a muffled sound rang through the air as one of the Saint Kings from the Yangji sect exploded into a mist of blood. He paid a self-cannibalizing price to use a secret technique in order to flee, turning into a red streak of light that rapidly ran away.

Virtually at the same time, the three other Saint Kings from protector clans had used the same secret techniques as well. They paid an extremely heavy price, leaving behind the four independent Saint Kings in the end.

It was not because the independent Saint Kings did not have any abilities to flee, but the abilities they possessed could not compare to what the protector clans possessed. What they knew was not enough to break free from the formation.

“Hmm? I never thought you would know this secret technique. It's one of the more commonly-seen escape techniques in the Saints' World. I didn't think that you'd actually flee while I was

slightly negligent. However, you underestimate the formation far too much. Do you really think that you can escape death just by fleeing like that?” Fairy Hao Yue mumbled to herself in the Bright Moon Divine Hall as scorn flickered through her eyes.

Chapter 1276: The Borrowing of Emperor Armaments

Other than the four great elders from the protector clans who knew fleeing secret techniques, the other five independent Saint Kings died in Flame City after their life force had been drained away.

Hao Yue was not a merciful person. Even after the Saint Kings plead time and time again, she still killed them.

Everyone in the city had become shocked by what had happened above. The Flame Mercenaries had demonstrated great strength once again, causing all the members of the mercenaries to become extremely excited after witnessing such a scene. Their blood started to boil.

Originally, they had thought that their captain was extraordinary enough, but now, fairy Hao Yue seemed to become even more extraordinary than him. She had managed to kill off these glorious Saint Kings in just a short moment.

After ending the lives of the independent Saint Kings, the Bright Moon Divine Hall returned to how it had been before. The huge moon hovering above slowly disappeared, and even the structure itself shrank back to the size of an ordinary palace. It descended into the city lord's estate once again, standing silently like a novel princess.

You Yue worried about fairy Hao Yue's current condition, so she entered the divine hall as soon as possible. Bi Lian became busy as well as she passed down various orders. The vast presences from the nine Saint Kings had reduced the city into a mess, resulting in countless injured people. There were many things she needed to do to cope with the aftermath.

Meanwhile, the Space Rings of the five independent Saint Kings

ended up with Bi Lian.

“Vice city lord, we might as well hang the corpses of the five Saint Kings on the city walls to demonstrate the might of our Flame Mercenaries. At the same time, we can send out a warning to all the various forces on the Tian Yuan Continent to tell them that even when our captain is not present, we’re still not to be trifled with,” a middle-aged man said to Bi Lian. He spoke extremely politely. He was also one of the people who managed the mercenaries.

Bi Lian shook her head, “They’re still Saint Kings. We should get people to bury them instead to help them retain some dignity.”

“Yes, vice city lord,” the middle-aged man replied politely before immediately ordering a group of people to carry the five corpses out of the city to find a suitable place to be buried.

Fairy Hao Yue’s illusionary figure sat on a piece of jade in the divine hall. The piece of jade gave off pure and clear Moonlight Force. It was no simple piece of jade since it had originated from the moon.

You Yue asked about her in concern from right in front, “Master, are you fine?”

Fairy Hao Yue faintly smiled and said, “My dear disciple, you don’t need to worry about your master. I may just be a soul now, but I’m not as weak as you’ve imagined. I’ve cast down many formations both inside and outside the divine hall. These formations are far more powerful than what the people of the Tian Yuan Continent can even imagine. Their strength may be restricted by the limited materials, but they can easily block attacks from Saint Emperors. The Lunar Years is one of them.

“It’s just that using these formations takes up quite a lot of energy. Although this can be replenished by absorbing the energies of others, it still can’t make up for when whole formations get used up. As a result, you can’t rely on your master for everything in the

future. Working hard to increase your own strength is the most important.”

“Yes, master. I will definitely work even harder on cultivating.” You Yue firmly answered.

All the Saint Kings from various parts of the continent were gathered in a majestic hall within the miniature world of Mercenary City. They all sat in a circle as they discussed how to stop the World of Forsaken Saints.

The number of people gathered there had already reached into the four hundreds. They were all the Saint Kings of the continent.

“Although the divine hall of Mercenary City is extremely tough, we still don’t know whether it can stop the Reciprocity experts from the World of Forsaken Saints, and on the continent, the Emperor Armaments of the ten protector clans are extremely powerful. They are difficult to control even when several Saint Kings work together, so I suggest that the protector clans bring all their Emperor Armaments here and pass them on to elder Tian Jian, who’s a Saint Emperor, to control. The great elder must be able to display even greater strength. May I ask what you think of this?” The grand elder of Mercenary City slowly inquired as he looked at the people of the ten protector clans.

“We, the Heaven’s Incense School, do not mind. We are willing to temporarily hand over our Emperor Armament to the great elder...” The school master of the Heaven’s Incense School was the first one to agree to the grand elder’s suggestion.

The pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion pondered slightly before saying, “Great elder Tian Jian has already reached Saint Emperor and his strength is now incomparable to any one of us. We obviously do not mind handing over the Emperor Armament of the Pure Heart Pavilion, except our Emperor Armament is rather special. It’s slightly different than the nine other clans

It can only be controlled by those who practice the cultivation

method of the Pure Heart Pavilion. As a result, we may have to disappoint the grand elder.”

A great elder from the Moyuan clan said, “Grand elder, the power of the Emperor Armaments have reached an extremely terrifying level. Even if several Saint Kings control it together, they will suffer a backlash, so probably only Saint Emperors can use them at will. However, can great elder Tian Jian use so many Emperor Armament all by himself? Even if the great elder has become a Saint Emperor, he shouldn’t be able to control so many Emperor Armaments simultaneously.”

The great elder had spoken the doubts of many people present, in particular the people from the protector clans. They all wondered whether or not Tian Jian could control so many Emperor Armaments all by himself. After all, they were no ordinary objects.

The grand elder chuckled, “The power of the Emperor Armaments from the protector clans have already reached a level that’s enough to terrify all of us. Although the great elder has become a Saint Emperor, controlling so many Emperor Armaments simultaneously is indeed extremely difficult. However, I am asking to use them for another reason.”

“May I ask what this reason is? Do the Emperor Armaments have other uses?” A great elder from the Heartless School asked.

The grand elder thought a little before speaking, “We have quite a few abilities and secret techniques left behind by the city lord. These abilities and techniques all possess unpredictable power, and some of them can only be practiced by Saint Emperors. Now that great elder Tian Jian has become a Saint Emperor, he’s already grasped some of the techniques and abilities that only Saint Emperors can learn, and one of them just happens to allow him to use the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans to cast down an extremely powerful ancient killing formation. The formation can activate the potential power within the Emperor Armaments to deal terrifying attacks. Everyone, think about it. If we can cast

down this killing formation at the entrance of the tunnel, it will have a shocking effect.”

With that, the eyes of many people present lit up. At the same time, they were secretly shocked. The heritage of Mercenary City was actually no weaker than the ten protector clans. They actually possessed such great abilities and techniques that only Saint Emperors could learn them.

“Protecting the Tian Yuan Continent was the original responsibility of us protector clans. Since the World of Forsaken Saints is so powerful, that is more than enough of a reason for us all to work together. We can’t forsake the continent for our personal needs. Our Shenxiao sect is willing to lend our Emperor Armament...”

“Our Potian sect is also willing to lend our Emperor Armament...”

“Our Moyuan clan is also willing to lend our Emperor Armament...”

“Our Yangji sect is willing to lend our Emperor Armament...”

“The Yiyuan sect is willing to lend out their Emperor Armament...”

The various clans all expressed their thoughts. In the blink of an eye, eight clans agreed to lend out their Emperor Armaments, with only the Tyrant’s Blade School and Changyang clan left.

The grand elder immediately looked at the Saint Kings of the Tyrant’s Blade School and Changyang Zu Xiao.

The Saint Kings from the Tyrant’s Blade School hesitated before one of them reluctantly said, “Our founding ancestor, Guihai Yidao, has already returned. The Emperor Armament is currently in his control, so we have to decline lending it out. However, we believe that the Emperor Armament will be able to demonstrate even greater power in our founding ancestor’s hands.”

The Tyrant's Blade School originally wanted to hide the return of their founding ancestor, but now that such a great matter had happened on the continent, there was no point in keeping it hidden anymore. At the same time, they had personally witnessed their founding ancestor's strength when the Hundred Races had invaded. They were confident that even if their ancestor's identity was revealed, no one on the continent could threaten him. This included Saint Emperors.

However, the piece of news was like a bolt from the blue to everyone else. They all became stunned and stared at the Saint Kings in disbelief. None of them believed what they said to be real.

“What did you say? Your founding ancestor has returned? Xing Feng, what're you blabbering about,” a Saint King who was on good terms with the Tyrant's Blade School replied in shock. He looked at Xing Feng weirdly.

Xing Feng also knew that it was very difficult for everyone to believe what he had said. However, he did not explain any further. He nonchalantly answered with, “It doesn't matter if you believe me or not, but we're not going to be lending out our Emperor Armament.”

Many people became confused as soon as they heard what he said. None of them believed that Xing Feng was telling the truth and that this was just an excuse to avoid lending out the Emperor Armament. Even though the excuse was extremely exaggerated, exaggerated to such a level that it was unbelievable, no one delved on the matter.

After all, the Emperor Armament belonged to the Tyrant's Blade School. If they were unwilling, the rest of them could not force them.

The grand elder then looked at Changyang Zu Xiao. Among the ten protector clans, there was only the Changyang clan left to express their thoughts.

Chapter 1277: The Changyang Clan Breaks Free

Changyang Zu Xiao raised an eyebrow and nonchalantly said, “Our Zu branch has broken away from the protector clan. We no longer have anything to do with the protector clan. Yunxiao and I obviously haven’t come as representatives of the Changyang protector clan. There’s no need for the grand elder to ask us members of the Zu branch about borrowing the Emperor Armament.”

Everyone present was greatly surprised by what Changyang Zu Xiao had said. Many of them showed disbelief.

Many of the Saint Kings had a certain understanding of the Changyang clan of the ten protector clans. It was divided into the Zu, Yuan, and Qing branches, and in the countless years it had existed, the three branches had always been on good terms. Even if a few disagreements arose every now and then, it would not threaten the stability of the clan.

Yet now, Changyang Zu Xiao had actually said that the Zu branch had left the protector clan and that they no longer had anything to do with the protector clan. Many found this difficult to believe.

“Changyang Zu Xiao, is that true? Has your Zu branch really left the protector clan?” The grand elder asked sternly. This was something significant.

“Changyang Zu Xiao, you can’t be joking right? The three branches have been on good terms for over a million years. Since ancient times, all three branches have acted in unison, so why have you completely fallen out now all of a sudden?” A ruddy old man sitting beside Changyang Zu Xiao asked. He was a great elder from the Moyuan clan and was on rather good terms with Changyang Zu Xiao.

At this moment, everyone present turned their gazes to Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao. The Saint Kings from the Yiyuan sect and Yangji sect were particularly eager to hear the whole story as they rejoiced inside. They were extremely willing to see the Changyang clan be ripped apart, resulting in a great decrease in strength.

Changyang Zu Xiao remained expressionless. This matter had hurt him very much, so he heavily replied, "How can I be joking about something so significant? I am obviously telling the truth. Our Zu branch no longer has any connection with the Changyang protector clan."

The room immediately fell silent, but all the people had already begun to accept the reality of the Zu branch's departure. Although this was a shocking piece of news on the Tian Yuan Continent, it was not enough to affect them. However, many people realized that the Changyang clan's strength had greatly decreased with the changes. They would definitely fall off the throne as the strongest protector clan and might even end up as the weakest protector clan out of all of them. Many people from the other clans celebrated inside.

"Since the Zu branch had broken away from the Changyang clan, may I ask why there is no one from the Qing and Yuan branch present representing the Changyang clan?" A Saint King from a protector clan asked out of curiosity.

The grand elder looked around, and indeed, he failed to find the people of the protector Changyang clan. As a result, he said to a Saint King beside him, "Sixth elder, I will trouble you to visit the Changyang clan. Please invite them to our city so we can discuss the countermeasures against the World of Forsaken Saints."

The sixth elder of Mercenary City immediately stood up and clasped his fist at everyone. He clearly said, "Everyone, I shall be dismissing myself temporarily." Afterward, he directly left the miniature world.

Although the protector Changyang clan was extremely far away from Mercenary City, it would only take a Saint King a few seconds to traverse the distance. The sixth elder returned in less than five minutes and sternly informed everyone, “Grand elder, I’ve visited the Changyang clan and discovered that it’s been sealed. Not only is it impossible to enter, the people inside cannot come out either. All methods of communication are useless as well.”

“What!” The grand elder’s expression changed as he immediately stood up. Even all the Saint Kings there were greatly shocked. A mighty protector clan had been sealed, locked up in their miniature world. This was just far too astounding to everyone present.

“Sixth elder, is that true? The Changyang clan has actually been sealed up in their miniature world? They’re a protector clan for goodness sake. Just who on the current continent has such abilities? Even the path lord of carnal desires can’t do something like this,” said an independent Saint King.

The grand elder did not probe into the matter further. He stared deeply at Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao, “Changyang Zu Xiao, our Tian Yuan Continent is currently facing a great danger. Although I don’t know just what’s happened to your Changyang clan, we just happen to be in need of people. We want to break through the seal. Do the two of you have any objections?”

At this moment, a minute change occurred in the gazes toward Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao. There was admiration and disdain. Many of them had connected the matter to the Zu branch since they had broken away.

Changyang Zu Xiao gently sighed. He knew that there was probably quite a few people who misunderstood the Zu branch, so he needed to explain, “It’s all because of the Saints’ Fruit. When Jian Chen obtained the Saints’ Fruit back then, Changyang Qing Yun wanted to take it for himself, resulting in never-before-seen

internal strife. Completely angered, Jian Chen worked with the three magical beasts to seal up the Changyang clan. This matter has always pained me the most. If you want to break the seal and free the people from the two branches, our Zu branch obviously has no objections.”

Everyone immediately understood what had happened with Changyang Zu Xiao’s explanation, but they were once again shocked by Jian Chen and the three magical beasts’ extraordinary methods of doing things. They could actually seal up a protector clan. It would be difficult for even Saint Emperors to achieve something so extraordinary.

This was because every single protector clan possessed methods to deal with Saint Emperors.

“That was exactly what I thought. Changyang Qing Yun is just far too greedy. When the fight over the Saints’ Fruit occurred, he did not contribute much at all, so just why does Jian Chen have to hand over the Saints’ Fruit? In my opinion, the Yuan and Qing branches completely deserve it. It’s all their own fault,” said the Saint King from the Moyuan clan righteously.

At this moment, four bloodied and messy Saint Kings staggered into the room. Every single one of them was horrendously old. Their life forces were extremely weak.

“Oh my god!” One of the great elders from the Yangji sect recognized one of the four and immediately paled in fright. He arrived before the four of them with a flash and stared at one of them in disbelief. He cried out, “Ji Tian, how have you become like this?”

“It’s fairy Hao Yue. Fairy Hao Yue’s used a formation to siphon away our life force...” he weakly replied. Right after he finished speaking, he seemed to have lost all his energy, directly falling to the ground. He shriveled at a visible rate, becoming a dry corpse very soon.

Afterward, the three other Saint Kings all collapsed as well, suffering the same outcome as the great elder from the Yangji sect.

The great elders from the Yangji sect and Yiyuan sect all revealed extremely ugly expressions. They had already recognized the three other people. They were the Saint Kings they had sent to Flame City to retrieve the Bright Moon Divine Hall. They had never thought that they would fail their mission and lose their lives.

Losing two Saint Kings all of a sudden was an extremely heavy loss to both the Yangji sect and Yiyuan sect.

“This fairy Hao Yue has gone too far. It’s fine if she doesn’t want to lend her divine hall, but why did she have to kill our great elders? We cannot let the matter slide,” said a Saint King from the Yiyuan sect painfully.

“We will definitely come back with an explanation for this matter.” All the great elders of the Yangji sect were brimming with killing intent. Losing two Saint Kings weakened their strength by thirty percent.

The grand elder of Mercenary City stood up and said in a heavy voice, “Please stay yourselves. The matter at hand is to find a way to deal with the problem of the World of Forsaken Saints. We can look for fairy Hao Yue for an explanation after we remove the threat of the other world.”

“Correct. We need to get our priorities straight. The World of Forsaken Saints is a huge threat, so please dismiss your enmity with fairy Hao Yue for now. At the same time, fairy Hao Yue won’t be easy to deal with since she can handle nine Saint Kings so easily, and she’s protected by extraordinary formations. We cannot complicate matters at this time,” said the pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion. Right now, she was the one who possessed the most prestige aside from the grand elder of Mercenary City.

The great elders of the two sects silently mulled over the matter before finally choosing to listen to the grand elder and pavilion

master's suggestions.

They now understood fairy Hao Yue's strength with the outcome of the Saint Kings. Even though she was just a soul, she was not as weak as they had imagined. They needed to group together if they wanted to take revenge.

Afterward, the grand elder and over twenty Saint Kings from various organizations visited the Changyang clan. At the same time, they sent envoys with valuable gifts to the Hundred Races, magical beasts, and Sea race, to inform them of the World of Forsaken Saints.

In the miniature world of the protector Changyang clan, the five great elders hovered in the air with sunken faces. They stared in the direction of the World Gate.

In the several months they had been trapped there, they had used all they had to attack the seal for every single moment that passed. They had even activated the Emperor Armament several times, but they still failed to get through the seal. The seal's strength had completely exceeded their expectations.

"Even Saint Emperor would struggle to get through this seal. Are we going to be trapped until we pass away?" Changyang Qing Jueri said with a sunken face.

"No, there needs to be an extremely great amount of energy to maintain this seal. For every day the seal exists, a portion of its power will be consumed. Once it runs out completely, we'll be able to break through, but we still need to attack the seal continuously for the time being, so we can speed up the consumption and get out earlier," Changyang Qing Yun also said with a sunken face. It was an eternal disgrace for them, a mighty protector clan, to be sealed in their own miniature world.

"Once I break out, I will use everything and anything I have to deal with Jian Chen," Changyang Qing Yunfeng also said with a darkened expression. Heavily killing intent filled his eyes.

Changyang Qing Yun's eyes were also filled with hatred. He said through clenched teeth, "Once the seal breaks, we'll control the Emperor Armament and visit Lore City. We will not let a single member of the Zu branch go." Changyang Qing Yun thought back to when Changyang Zu Xiao did everything he could to stop him and killing intent immediately surged frhim. If it were not for Changyang Zu Xiao, he probably would have obtained the Saints' Fruit long ago.

Chapter 1278: Friend or Foe?

In a desolate mountain range several tens of thousand kilometers from Mercenary City, Changyang Zu Yunkong and Huang Tianba had both carved out a cave. They currently cultivated in there.

They did not pay much attention to the shocking changes of Mercenary City. At that time, several hundred Saint Kings had gathered, and even the great elder Tian Jian, who had become a Saint Emperor, was present. If the matter could not even be dealt with by all these experts, it was impossible for the two of them, mere Saint Rulers, to be of help.

Their strength increased rapidly with Xiao Ling's assistance beneath Mercenary City. It had improved at a tremendous pace. Although they were still Saint Rulers, they were both at the peak of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, only a single step away from Saint King.

The disparity between Saint Ruler and Saint King was extremely large. They had both secretly made up their minds to get through the tough barrier in a single stroke and become Saint Kings.

Changyang Zu Yunkong's talent was far greater than Huang Tianba's talent. The seal that had been planted in his head before forced him to remain as a Heaven Saint Master, so he could not become a Saint Ruler. Now that the seal was gone, his strength increased at an astonishing rate with Xiao Ling's assistance. He had already caught up to Huang Tianba, and with the talent he had displayed, he might even end up reaching Saint King before Huang Tianba.

Other than the two of them, even the loyal bodyguard Jian Chen had brought over from the Radiant Saint Master Union, Yang Ling, was in the mountain range as well. He was a thousand kilometers from the two of them. Compared to Huang Tianba and Changyang Zu Yunkong, Yang Ling's talent was far more ordinary. When Jian Chen had brought him over, he was a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint

Master, and one who had been like that for many years. However, he was still the same after the period of cultivation in Mercenary City.

The difference between Heaven Saint Master and Saint Ruler was so great that it was comparable to a chasm. It was the difference of two major realms of cultivation. A corresponding amount of talent and ability of comprehension was required to become a Saint Ruler. It was not all about cultivating arduously.

After leaving the underground of Mercenary City, Ming Dong did not go with them. Instead, he returned to Mercenary City all by himself to check on the current situation there. At the same time, he learned that Jian Chen was in the sea realm.

Afterward, Ming Dong remained in the city. He continued to cultivate in seclusion in a chamber deep beneath the city. At the same time, Bi Hai and Bi Lian delivered a large pile of high class monster cores to him. A portion of them came from Jian Chen while the others came from the five independent Saint Kings who had recently passed away.

The five great elders hovered beside one another in the sealed miniature space of the Changyang clan. They silently stared at the World Gate as both resentment and anger burned within them, coupled with some helplessness.

Bang!

Suddenly, a heavy sound rang from the World Gate's direction. A stream of ripples appeared in the space around the World Gate, causing the surrounding energy of the world to surge. It shocked all the Saint Rulers within the Changyang clan.

The sudden changes of the World Gate attracted the attention of the five great elders as soon as it had happened. All of their eyes immediately lit up as they stared in the direction of the World Gate with interest.

Bang!

A second sound rang from the direction of the World Gate. Not only was it much louder than before, even the space rippled more violently. Powerful pulses of energy wrapped around the World Gate and shook it up.

Many Saint Rulers flew over from all directions, gathering behind the five great elders. All of them were dejected and bitter. A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler old man politely asked, “Great elders, may I ask what is happening?”

The five great elders all remained silent. They stared fixedly in the direction of the World Gate with stern expressions. Only until the third bang did their faces finally change. They became extremely excited.

“There’s people outside attacking the seal. Fantastic, there’s someone who’s finally discovered that we’ve been sealed, and they’re currently assisting us in breaking through the seal,” Changyang Qing Jueri immediately beamed in happiness. In the time that they had been stuck in the miniature world, they had attempted countless methods to contact people outside, but all of them had failed in the end. The seal that plugged the world gate was extremely powerful and profound. It could stop all methods of communications, and even ancient secret techniques were not strong enough to penetrate the seal.

Changyang Qing Yun, Changyang Qing Yunfeng, Changyang Yuan Wuji, and Changyang Yuan Zhenghua became extremely delighted as well. They had waited far too long for this day. Although being trapped here did not threaten their lives, none of them wished to be locked up by someone else.

“Let’s move immediately and attack the seal from the inside. We’ll work with the people outside, so it’ll be even easier to get through this seal,” Changyang Qing Yun immediately called out.

The four others nodded simultaneously and all began to attack

the seal with all they had. Immediately, a vast pressure descended from the sky, permeating the entire miniature world. The air seemed to have froze while all the energy of the world had stopped.

The five Saint Kings were extremely eager to smash through the seal. They used Saint Tier Battle Skills right from the start.

They could use Saint Tier Battle Skills at will as Saint Kings, completely charging them up in a single moment. An extremely powerful sword Qi erupted from the sword in Changyang Qing Yun's hand, striking the seal as sword a hundred meters long.

Changyang Qing Jueri did not use his Saint Weapon. He cleanly struck out with his palm, condensing a palm of several dozen meters in length as it struck the World Gate.

Extremely powerful wind-attributed Saint Force permeated Changyang Qing Yunfeng's surroundings before turning into a whirlwind that wrapped around him. The whirlwind rapidly spun as it reached for the sky, connecting to the very top of the miniature world. It caused the frozen energy of the world to wildly churn. Afterward, he swung out with both arms as the whirlwind immediately surged toward the World Gate, causing the surrounding space to distort violently.

A three-meter-wide fireball hovered above Changyang Yuan Wuji. It shone brightly like the sun as its terrifying heat pervaded the miniature world, causing the temperature to rapidly skyrocket. Afterward, it immediately shot out as a red streak of light when Changyang Yuan Wuji's hand waved his hand toward the World Gate.

Changyang Yuan Zhenghua also produced an extremely powerful sword Qi that he sent at the World Gate. Wherever it passed by, ripples would cascade through space.

Five Saint Kings had used Saint Tier Battle Skills in unison. The disturbance was so great that it was enough to destroy the surroundings. Even the space of the miniature world, which was

much tougher than outside, found it rather difficult to endure. The figures of eighteen divine halls had already appeared in the sky, stabilizing the space.

Outside the World Gate, over twenty Saint Kings hovered sternly in the sky with the grand elder of Mercenary City at the front. All of them gazed at the invisible seal before them.

“Those three magical beasts sure are skillful. The seal they’ve cast here is actually so powerful. It hasn’t broken after three combined attacks from us,” the grand elder could not help but praise them. He felt much admiration for Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu. Afterward, he glanced at the surroundings Saint Kings and loudly said, “Everyone, the seal is far stronger than any one of us have imagined. Everyone use has to use our full strength to smash through the seal together.”

“Alright! Let’s all prepare before attacking together on the grand elder’s signal,” a Saint King from a protector clan called out. Great elder Tian Jian of Mercenary City had now become a Saint Emperor, and they also had the protection of the barrier spirit which was a Returnance expert. They were so powerful that all the protector clans were now left in the dust. This also made Mercenary City the leaders of the entire continent in some certain sense, the evident representatives.

Within the miniature world, the Saint Tier Battle Skills collided with the seal almost at the same time, which immediately caused it to violently shake. However, it was still not enough to smash through it.

At this moment, the experts outside the World Gate used their powerful attacks as well. The strike was clearly much more powerful than the five Saint Tier Battle Skills. Rui Jin’s seal finally caved in after resisting so many powerful attacks, collapsing instantly. The Changyang clan, which had been sealed up for several months, was finally free.

As soon as the seal was broken, the five great elders eagerly charged out without even waiting for the rampaging energy to settle. As soon as they arrived outside, they discovered all the Saint Kings floating in the air.

They obviously knew that the reason they could have been freed was because of all these Saint Kings. They did not hesitate at all and immediately clasped their hands in gratitude.

The grand elder raised his hand and said, “The protector clans and Mercenary City are just one big family. We all protect the Tian Yuan Continent silently. It’s nothing, so there’s no need to thank us.”

At this moment, Changyang Qing Yun seemed to think of something. His gaze immediately grew cold. He clasped his hands at them all and said, “Since so many authoritative members of various organizations have gathered here today, allow me to announce a significant matter to everyone. This matter is so great that it can affect the safety of the entire continent.”

Chapter 1279: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength (One)

Everyone present wavered when they heard that, including the grand elder of Mercenary City. All of them could not help but think of the World of Forsaken Saints.

“Did Changyang Qing Yun learn about the World of Forsaken Saints before us?” An independent Saint King thought.

Changyang Qing Yun paused slightly. He became extremely stern and said, “I believe everyone still remembers the war god who invaded our continent and slaid many of our experts in ancient times, right? Now, the war god of the Hundred Races has reappeared. If he successfully matures, it will definitely lead to a bloody storm on the Tian Yuan Continent. The war god is currently with Jian Chen. We need to kill the war god before he fully matures, or we’ll be in for another disaster.”

Everyone became shocked by this information other than the grand elder. The war god of the Hundred Races was one of the four existences that had surpassed Saint Emperor in ancient times. He had once been a terrifying nightmare for the humans, and the ten protector clans could not stop him even after using everything they had. If Mo Tianyun had not appeared out of nowhere in that final moment and repelled him, the Tian Yuan Continent probably would have ended up in the hands of the Hundred Races.

The reappearance of the war god was just far too astounding to everyone.

Only the grand elder remained as usual. He chuckled like it was nothing, “Fantastic, utterly fantastic. The war god of the Hundred Races sure has come at the right time. Now that our continent is facing devastating danger and are in need of power, the war god reappears. That’s like giving us exactly what we need.”

“The grand elder is extremely correct. Not only has the war god reappeared, even the Winged Tiger God has been born again. If they both mature successfully, they will become Origin realm experts. They’ll be the peak powers of our world,” said the ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire.

The great elders became stunned when they processed what the ancestral emperor had said. They were completely at a loss. They glanced past the Saint Kings that had saved them with an odd expression. Not only did they fail to discover any grimness, quite a few of them were even rejoicing.

In ancient times, the war god Aergyns created an irreconcilable hatred between him and the humans and magical beasts. The Tian Yuan Continent had almost fallen into the hands of the Hundred Races. Now that the war god had reappeared, he would soon surpass the level of Saint Emperor. Not only did these Saint Kings do nothing after learning about the war god, they celebrated instead. This immediately made the five great elders wonder whether they were still on the Tian Yuan Continent or not and if the Saint Kings before them were humans or not.

This was because the only people who would celebrate after hearing that the war god had returned would be the Hundred Races to the five of them.

“Changyang Qing Yun, since you’ve been freed, please come to Mercenary City with us. Something significant has happened on the continent. Mercenary City has already invited the other protector clans and Saint Kings scattered across the continent to gather there. Even a few overseas human experts have been invited to come as well,” the grand elder said sternly.

“Something significant has happened? Have you all learned that the war god has reappeared long ago and that we’re gathering all the experts to deal with him?” Changyang Qing Yun asked in doubt. To him, nothing was more important than the reappearance of the war god. However, what he did not

understand was why the Saint Kings rejoiced when he mentioned the war god before? He could not understand no matter how hard he thought.

The grand elder's stern expression immediately melted away because of what Changyang Qing Yun had said. He shook his head with a forced smile, "If it was before, the reappearance of the war god would obviously have been an extremely great matter, but it's different now. The seal beneath Mercenary City has been destroyed. The experts of the World of Forsaken Saints can invade the Tian Yuan Continent at any moment. We just happen to be in need of power and the war god has suddenly appeared in these times of need. It's obviously something fantastic to all of us."

"What? The World of Forsaken Saints? Was grand elder Tian Jian telling the truth all those years ago?" Changyang Yuan Wuji immediately became surprised and asked in disbelief.

The four other great elders revealed different expressions because of this news as well. They looked at each other as shock filled the depths of their eyes.

They had once heard about the seal beneath Mercenary City from Tian Jian, but they thought it was a story that was exaggerated and unrealistic, so none of them believed it.

"Was that matter true?" They all thought inside. They could already sense a vague answer to that question after seeing how the Saint Kings present all beamed when they announced that the war god had returned.

"Everyone, time is tight. Please come to Mercenary City right now, and then we can discuss the important matters," the grand elder invited them once again. Without saying anything more, he ripped open a Space Gate and left.

The Saint Kings that had come with him all ripped open Space Gates as well and left through them.

Seeing how everyone had left, the five great elders pondered a little before hurriedly passing over some matters to their clansmen. They then closed the World Gate and ripped open Space Gates, hurrying to Mercenary City together.

When they arrived in Mercenary City, they discovered with a glance that the city had been reduced to rubble. Their hearts immediately sank inside. They had never thought that such great changes would have occurred on the Tian Yuan Continent in the few months they had been trapped in the miniature world.

The five great elders were all invited into the miniature world of Mercenary City. The Saint Kings gathered there had increased. Mercenary City had already invited the Saint Kings of the ten protector clans, three great empires, and various ancient clans. Even the overseas human Saint Kings had hurried over.

All the Saint Kings there were rather heavy-hearted, causing the atmosphere of the room to become rather heavy as well. The matter of the World of Forsaken Saints pressed against their chests like a boulder, making breathing difficult.

The five great elders from the protector Changyang clan discovered Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao on the ground, and they became absolutely furious. However, they understood that the circumstances were not suitable to resolve the conflicts of their clan right now. At the sametime, their disagreements with the Zu branch over the Saints' Fruit was not a pretty matter. Changyang Qing Yun obviously did not wish for the matter to be spread beyond the clan, so he just ended up closing his eyes, treating the two of them as if they did not exist.

At this moment, a gentle, pleasant, and almost divine note suddenly rang out from outside. The zither note seemed to possess endless amounts of charm with a mysterious power. All the heavy-hearted Saint Kings relaxed after hearing the music. The note had removed all the worries and negative emotions from the minds of the Saint Kings, allowing them to return to their usual mood.

In the blink of an eye, the heavy atmosphere of the room vanished. It had been replaced by a light, enthusiastic atmosphere.

All the Saint Kings present were greatly shocked when they sensed the changes in their emotions. They turned their eyes to the entrance of the room and saw an elegant, veiled woman in a purple dress walking in gently and carrying a zither.

The woman did not give off any presence, as if she had never cultivated before. However, the presence she gave off was divine, noble, and otherworldly, as if she was a goddess.

Her eyes were bright and bewitching. Although her appearance was obscured, her beauty was rather evident from her limpid eyes.

“What a beauty. Why have I never heard of this woman?” At this moment, many Saint Kings sighed inside. At the same time, they thought of the same thing. There were actually barely any of them who knew about this woman.

“Weird. She obviously didn’t touch the strings, but I can feel that the note clearly originated from her. Just where did it come from? How did she produce a note without using her hands or touching the strings of the zither?” A Saint King was filled with curiosity. He could not think of an explanation no matter what. Even with his experiences and knowledge, he could not explain what had just happened.

“It’s actually Hao Wu’s daughter, known as the Heavenly Enchantress. I never thought that her way of the zither would have reached such a profound level, where it can actually affect the minds of Saint Kings. This is unbelievable,” an old man in luxurious robes thought. However, he then secretly sighed as gloominess filled his face.

The old man was the ancestor of the Zaar family in the City of God as well as Zaar Caiyun’s great grandfather, Zaar Veimos.

The Heavenly Enchantress walked into the room steadily as she

carried her zither. She did not look at the surrounding Saint Kings at all, only fixing her gaze on the elders of Mercenary City. She lowered her head slightly and gently said, "I've come to participate in the gathering from the invitation. I greet the elders of Mercenary City." It was not difficult to hear that her voice carried some respect for the elders of Mercenary City.

"Haha, I never thought that Shangguan Mu'er would come to Mercenary City so quickly. I had thought that it would take you a few days. What's surprised me even more is that your comprehension of the way of the zither has reached an unfathomable level after a few decades of not seeing you, which has deeply shocked all of us," the grand elder smiled.

"It's you!" As soon as the grand elder finished speaking, a high-pitched voice rang out. With Changyang Qing Yun at the front, all five great elders stood up as they glared at the Heavenly Enchantress. They were furious.

"Yes, it's her. She was the one who secretly used her music to make the clansmen fall into a slumber, preventing us from using the Origin Formation successfully. Otherwise, how could we have been sealed up by those magical beasts?" Changyang Qing Jueri furiously cried out.

"Hmph, although you hid yourself and we never saw your appearance, your zither music has given you away. On the entire continent, there is no one else who has achieved such accomplishments in music other than you," Changyang Yuan Zhenhua said through gritted teeth. When they had been sealed, it was all because of the Heavenly Enchantress. If she had not secretly interfered, Rui Jin and Hong Lian would not have been enough to seal the Changyang clan.

Chapter 1280: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength (Two)

All the Saint Kings were secretly shocked by what the great elders from the Changyang clan had said. Drastic changes occurred to their opinions of the Heavenly Enchantress, and some of them even felt extremely fearful of her.

Although they did not know her exact strength right now, she was actually bold enough to even provoke a protector clan. At the same time, they could tell from what the great elders had said that she was directly connected to the sealing of the Changyang clan. That was not something an ordinary person would or could do.

The few authoritative Saint Kings of Mercenary Cities all became doubtful. Some of them knew the Heavenly Enchantress extremely well, but she never would have been able to do something like that with their prior understanding, to influence a powerful protector clan.

“Changyang Qing Yun, what has exactly happened? Were there some misunderstandings between you and Shangguan Mu’er?” The grand elder asked in doubt. He refused to believe that the Heavenly Enchantress possessed the power to shake an entire protector clan. Perhaps due to the fact that the Heavenly Enchantress walked a unique path of cultivation, none of them could see through her strength. She kept her presence erased as well, which made it even more impossible. This was why the elders still believed that the Heavenly Enchantress was a Saint Ruler.

Changyang Qing Yun stared at her with a darkened expression and said through gritted teeth, “So your name is Shangguan Mu’er.” He then turned to the grand elder and said with a apel face, “The traitor Jian Chen and the two magical beasts attacked our Changyang clan back then and used a secret technique in an attempt to seal our World Gate. They wanted to trap us all in the

miniature world, but we're still a protector clan that has existed for over a million years. Our heritage is so powerful that even when the two of them possessed strength equal to Saint Emperors, sealing our clan was just wishful thinking."

Many Saint Kings secretly nodded. All these people understood just how powerful the protector clans on the continent were. Although they did not possess any Saint Emperors in this current age, their heritage still existed. Even Saint Emperors could not abuse them. Sealing a protector clan probably could only be achieved when several Saint Emperors worked together, so just two Great Perfection Saint King magical beasts with origin weapons and armor obviously would not have been enough.

Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and the other protector clans that had gathered here listened with all their attention. All of them knew that the heritage of all ten protector clans was basically the same. They all had an extraordinary Emperor Armament, eighteen divine halls, and all had an Origin Formation that could claim the lives of Saint Emperors. With such a great heritage, even if the protector clan could not go on the offensive against two Saint Emperors, they could still defend. Sealing them was virtually impossible because sealing a protector clan was far more difficult than attack one. As a result, they were all extremely curious as to how the magical beasts managed to seal up the Changyang clan.

Changyang Qing Yun continued, "Afterward, our clan used our Origin Formation. It's powerful, but it needs to be charged up. Just as all the experts of the clan were charging it up, a zither note suddenly appeared that could attack the souls of people. It knocked all the people in the clan unconscious other than us Saint Kings in a short moment. The activation of the formation failed, and coupled with the fact that the five of us were exhausted, the magical beasts used this opportunity to seal us up."

"What did you say? That zither note knocked everyone

unconscious, including Saint Rulers?” A Saint King from another protector clan asked in doubt.

Changyang Qing Yun sternly nodded, “Correct. The zither note possessed an extremely powerful soul attack, such that only Saint Kings could resist it.”

Everyone gasped. This was definitely unmatched, music possessing such wondrous effects.

The grand elder asked the Heavenly Enchantress, “Shangguan Mu’er, is that all true? Did you really interfere secretly?” The Saint Kings of Mercenary City still found it difficult to believe because the Heavenly Enchantress never had such an ability from what they remembered. Her achievements in the zither were indeed extremely great, but they could not believe that she powerful enough that Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers could not resist.

The Heavenly Enchantress nodded slightly and admitted to what she had done. She looked at the five great elders and said, “Are only protector clans allowed to abuse people on the continent and no one else is allowed to do the same back? If you want revenge, come at me.”

“Hmph, what an ignorant girl. Do you really think that you are invincible on the continent just because you know some soul attacks? Allow me to witness your way of the zither today,” Changyang Qing Yun immediately bellowed in fury.

“Changyang Qing Yun, Shangguan Mu’er, our continent is currently facing an even greater threat. It’s not time for us to fight with each other. It’ll only weaken our own strength,” the grand elder of Mercenary City tried to persuade them. He wanted to stop this battle. Changyang Qing Yun was already a Saint King at Great Perfection. He did not believe that the Heavenly Enchantress was his opponent.

Changyang Qing Yun smiled hideously. He had already made up his mind to teach the Heavenly Enchantress a proper lesson. He

opened his mouth, and just as he was about to tell the grand elder that he would not threaten the Heavenly Enchantress' life, he was cut off by her.

“Don't worry, grand elder. I know how far to go. I will not threaten his life.” Although the Heavenly Enchantress' voice was cold, it was filled with confidence.

Changyang Qing Yun's face hardened as his pale face immediately became filled with fury. That was what he wanted to say originally, but he had never thought that the Heavenly Enchantress would speak such bold words instead. Changyang Qing Yun immediately became utterly furious when he thought about the fact that he, a mighty Saint King at Great Perfection, was being looked down upon by a young girl.

All the Saint Kings present hardened their faces as well. They looked at the Heavenly Enchantress with strange gazes as many of them thought, “Does she think she is a Saint Emperor to take a Saint King at Great Perfection so lightly? Even if her achievements in the way of the zither are so great that she can easily incapacitate Saint Rulers, the souls of Saint Kings at Great Perfection are not comparable.”

The Heavenly Enchantress and Changyang Qing Yun immediately left the miniature world. After what had happened, all the Saint Kings who had gathered to talk about the World of Forsaken Saints paused the meeting and went out to watch. This would be an extremely unique battle since it involved the Heavenly Enchantress, who was skilled with soul attacks and was fighting against a Saint King at Great Perfection. Everyone was interested.

There was rarely anyone on the continent who could use soul attacks. Among the peak experts, there was only the path lord of carnal desires, but what he was skilled in was very different from the Heavenly Enchantress' way of the zither. As a result, the people of the continent did not know a lot about this avenue of attack, so they wanted to take advantage of the battle to increase

their knowledge.

A hundred kilometers from Mercenary City, the Heavenly Enchantress hovered in the air with her zither. None of her energy leaked from her body, so she seemed just like an ordinary person. However, the space around her would ripple in an undetectable fashion.

In front of her hovered Changyang Qing Yun. He held a thin sword, which shone with cold light. Energy surged from him and caused the space around him to distort slightly.

Several hundred Saint Kings gathered around them to watch. All of them hovered ten kilometers away and watched with great attention.

“Today, I’ll make you pay the price for your arrogance,” Changyang Qing Yun coldly said before a tremor passed through his sword. With a crisp resonance, he produced a ten-meter-long sword Qi that shot toward the Heavenly Enchantress.

The sword Qi moved as a streak of light. Wherever it passed, an evident black crack would be left behind.

The Heavenly Enchantress stood unmoving like a mountain. She gently rested her fingers on the zither strings and casually struck a note.

Ding! With a crisp sound, a visible sound wave shot out from the zither, headed toward the powerful sword Qi that Changyang Qing Yun had produced.

With a boom, the simple-looking sound wave struck the ten-meter-wide sword Qi. It actually dispersed the shocking sword Qi before continuing toward Changyang Qing Yun without weakening at all.

Changyang Qing Yun suddenly narrowed his eyes, but the sword wave moved just far too quickly. It arrived before him in the blink of an eye. Changyang Qing Yun stabbed out without thinking. He

used eighty percent of his strength in the attack.

The sword struck the sound wave, and with a bang, the violent energy ripped open the surrounding space, reducing it to darkness. The sound wave was dispersed by Changyang Qing Yun's attack, but Changyang Qing Yun did not lighten up either. A single sound wave had forced him to use eighty percent of his strength. The Heavenly Enchantress' strength had completely exceeded anything he had imagined.

"Let's see if you can block my Saint Tier Battle Skill!" Changyang Qing Yun called out and immediately decided to use a Saint Tier Battle Skill. He wanted to finish the battle as soon as possible.

"Unfortunately, you've run out of time to cast it," replied the Heavenly Enchantress coldly before striking a string again, producing a clear note.

The music seemed divine to spectating Saint Kings. Even though it was a single note, it was still enough to enchant them. However, the note seemed like thunder had just exploded in Changyang Qing Yun's head, causing him to quiver and almost fall out of the sky. The casting time of the Saint Tier Battle Skill was also disrupted.

Changyang Qing Yun felt like the note was a huge hammer that heavily struck his soul. It caused his head to lighten as his consciousness blurred, as if his soul was about to shatter.

The Heavenly Enchantress struck another string and another visible sound wave shot out. Before Changyang Qing Yun could recover, it passed through the left side of his chest and instantly shattered his heart.

Changyang Qing Yun grunted and spat out a mouthful of blood. His blurring consciousness gradually returned to him, and he immediately discovered that his heart had been destroyed. He paled instantly.

"If I wanted to kill you, you've be dead already." The Heavenly

Enchantress returned her zither to her hands as she coldly stared at Changyang Qing Yun.

Changyang Qing Yun became stunned and gloomy. He knew that the Heavenly Enchantress was right. If she really wanted to kill him, the sound wave only needed to target his soul instead of his heart and he would definitely be dead.

What made it difficult for him to accept was that he, a mighty Saint King at Great Perfection, had actually been defeated so easily. He did not even have the power to counterattack the Heavenly Enchantress. There was no out time to cast his Saint Tier Battle Skills or any secret techniques.

“Impossible, this is impossible...” Changyang Qing Yun mumbled. He refused to accept this as reality.

The several hundred Saint Kings looked at each other in the distance. Disbelief was plastered across all their faces. The outcome was just far too surprising. A great elder of a protector clan, a Saint King at Great Perfection, was actually this weak before the Heavenly Enchantress.

“What is her strength? Is she a Saint King at Great Perfection? Or is she a Saint Emperor?” Changyang Zu Xiao stared blankly as shock filled his eyes.

Zaar Veimos also became tongue-tied at what had just happened, unable to return to his senses after quite some time. Only after quite a long time did he sigh at the sky. He thought, “Hao Wu’s powerful enough. I never thought that his daughter would be even more terrifying than him, to be able to defeat a Saint King at Great Perfection so easily. Has his daughter already become a Saint Emperor?”

“Is this really Shangguan Mu’er? After a few decades, how has she become so powerful? If it were me instead, I would not be anywhere close to her opponent.” The grand elder was also shocked by this. Even the elders beside him were the same. They

all stared blankly at the Heavenly Enchantress, remaining speechless for quite a long while.

If Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu were present at this moment, they would definitely discover that the Heavenly Enchantress had become much more powerful compared to when she had assisted them with sealing the protector Changyang clan.

Chapter 1281: Movements of the World of Forsaken Saints

Changyang Qing Yun's defeat was an extremely great hit to the morale of the Changyang clan. Changyang Qing Yunfeng, Changyang Qing Jueri, Changyang Yuan Wuji, and Changyang Yuan Zhenghua all paled as they spectated from afar. At that moment, they felt the world spin, as if the sky was about to collapse.

“Changyang Qing Yun is the strongest person in the Changyang clan, and even he's not the Heavenly Enchantress' opponent. He couldn't even last three attacks. This Heavenly Enchantress is just far too terrifying. She can't be a Saint Ruler,” Changyang Qing Yunfeng thought in shock. The strength the Heavenly Enchantress had displayed was so great that they felt despair.

The dead silence was finally broken after a while. The grand elder of Mercenary City breathed heavily and said “Why don't we end the enmity between Shangguan Mu'er and the Changyang clan here? Everyone, the battle has ended. Please return to the miniature world so that we can continue our meeting.”

With that, all the Saint Kings gathered there returned. Meanwhile, the Heavenly Enchantress said no more and returned with everyone else with her zither. All that was left in the end were the five great elders of the Changyang protector clan. They all stood around in gloom.

“Sigh, let's go as well,” only after quite a long time did Changyang Yuan Zhenghua sigh at the sky before turning to leave. What had happened today was undoubtedly a slap to their faces in the eyes of the other protector clans. Not only did they lose all their dignity, they were, more importantly, heavily disgraced.

At this moment, Changyang Qing Yun returned to his senses as well. When he thought about how he had announced that he

wanted to teach the ignorant Heavenly Enchantress a lesson, he felt his face burn. He was tempted to just find a hole and hide in it. He had lost all his dignity with what had happened today. He was too ashamed to see people again.

At that moment, Changyang Qing Yun seemed to have aged a lot. In just a few short months, their protector clan had been disgraced twice. This had never happened throughout history.

The Spiritking stood in front of the tunnel to the Tian Yuan Continent in the World of Forsaken Saints. He emotionlessly stared at the tunnel of distorted space. Behind him, over forty Origin realm experts stood silently in a single line with a group of Saint Emperors gathered behind them.

“This tunnel is rapidly stabilizing. Saint Kings can pass through it now, and probably in around a dozen days, Saint Emperors will be able to pass through,” said the Spiritking.

“Spiritking, why don’t we send a group of Saint Kings through the tunnel to investigate the circumstances of the other side, so we can gain an understanding as to the exact power of the other world?” A young man at Receiving young inquired courteously from behind the Spiritking.

The Spiritking sank into his thoughts before nodding slightly. He said without even looking back, “Eight hall elders, immediately return to the hall and choose some Saint Kings of Great Perfection. Bring them here. They can do the investigating.”

“Yes sir!” The eight Returnance experts from behind the Spiritking replied at the same time before leaving the peak of the mountain together.

The central mountain in the World Mountains was extremely dangerous. Even Receiving experts would face danger there, so the only way to bring Saint Kings up was for Returnance experts to move them personally.

The several hundred Saint Emperors had only managed to reach the top safely due to the protection from the Spiritking and the eight Returnance experts. Even though that was the case, several of them had passed away due to the horrible environment as they scaled the mountain.

Soon after that, the eight Returnance experts all returned. They had brought several Saint Kings with them, fifty total. It was not because they did not want to bring more people, but that Saint Kings at Great Perfection were not as powerful as Saint Emperors. It was difficult for them to survive at the top of the mountain, so they could only bring them with their strength.

“We greet the Spiritking,” the fifty Saint Kings at Great Perfection all dropped to the ground. They were extremely polite.

With his back to everyone, the Spiritking said, “This is a tunnel to another world. Pass through it and enter the other world to investigate the situation there. That world’s strength is unknown, so you must be careful. If it’s possible, you can attempt to negotiate with them.”

“Spiritking, if the people of the other world attack, what should they do?” A Returnance expert asked.

“If they attack, you can obviously counterattack. I do know that you’ll probably end up dead after you pass through, so leave a fragment of your souls in this souljade before you pass through. Even if you die there, we can revive you using a secret technique. However, the price will be that your strength will decrease drastically after you leave behind a fragment of your soul. After you are revived, you must cultivate again.” The Spiritking paused slightly and then continued, “Of course, you don’t need to worry. Once you revive, the Sacred Spirit Hall will supply you with resources to help you become Saint Emperors in the shortest time possible as compensation.”

The Spiritking produced a pile of jade rocks from his Space Ring.

After splitting them among the fifty Saint Kings at Great Perfection, he said, “There should be experts guarding the entrance to the other world once you get there. If you can’t defeat them, crush this piece of jade. The spatial energy inside will teleport you to a random place in that world. However, you have to remember to not attack them unless they’ve launched an offensive at you. Understood?”

“Yes sir!” The fifty Saint Kings at Great Perfection replied together.

A Returnance expert stood forward and pulled out fifty ink-black pieces of jade. He said, “These are souljades. They can store your souls. Leave a small portion of your souls in them before passing through.”

The Saint Kings all took a piece of the rock and left behind a fragment of their souls. They all became rather pale and weak after depositing a portion of their souls, but they still entered the tunnel to the Tian Yuan Continent.

The Spiritking and the Origin realm experts watched the group of Saint Kings disappear into the tunnel. All of them remained there. They did not wish the group they had sent through to fight. They wanted it to investigate the other world so they could have some understanding. As a result, all of them knew that probably all the Saint Kings would die. They would then revive them using the souls deposited in the souljades and learn of the other world.

Not only could the souljades be used to revive them, it possessed another ability, which allowed them to fully retain their memories. This included everything that would happen in the other world as well as everything they would experience.

Chapter 1282: Fourth Layer of the Chaotic Body

Jian Chen sat like a statue within the artifact space. He held onto his last two Class 9 Monster Cores as the sword spirits hovered above him, assisting him refine the energy of the monster cores and allowing him to reach the fourth layer in the shortest amount of time possible.

The two Class 9 Monster Cores in Jian Chen's hands shone with a hazy glow. The vast and powerful energy within them was rapidly absorbed by Jian Chen, before being refined into Chaotic Force and fusing into his chaotic neidan.

His chaotic neidan had already reached the size of an adult's fist in his dantian. This was the limits of the third layer.

The two Class 9 Monster Cores shrunk at a visible rate. With the assistance of the sword spirits, the energy within them flowed away at an astonishing rate. After a few days of cultivation, Jian Chen had used up all the energy crystals he had obtained from Xuanhuang beasts as well as his Class 7 and 8 Monster Cores. The two Class 9 Monster Cores were the only ones left.

When he absorbed a third of the energy in the monster cores, Jian Chen's chaotic neidan finally ruptured with a rumble. At that moment, strands of Chaotic Force surged out like a flood, violently leaking from his shattered chaotic neidan. Like wild horses, they rampaged through Jian Chen's body.

Jian Chen shuddered. At that moment, he began to expand at a visible rate, expanding to become over half of his regular size. He seemed like a blown up balloon.

This was not the first time Jian Chen had experienced something like this. He immediately dismissed his thoughts and focused his attention, using the cultivation method recorded in the Azulet

Swords Law to control and circulate the Chaotic Force the best he could.

Under Jian Chen's experienced circulation, the Chaotic Force slowly came under his control. It began to be compressed and purified, condensing ten strands into five and five into a single strand.

Gradually, the Chaotic Force in Jian Chen's dantian became stronger and stronger and more and more pure. As his Chaotic Force evolved, his body began to struggle to endure the energy. The fourth layer Chaotic Force had wreaked havoc within him. His organs, flesh, and blood had all experienced the violent rampaging of the fourth layer Chaotic Force.

Jian Chen's body quickly began to leak with blood. In just a short moment, he became covered in blood with his clothes dyed red as well. Every single drop of blood possessed extremely powerful pulses of energy. Without any doubt, a single drop of his blood was enough to kill a Saint Ruler.

Jian Chen's body underwent the process of continuously being destroyed by the Chaotic Force before recovering. Every time his body was ruined, strands of fourth layer Chaotic Force would fuse into his flesh as it recovered, making it even more powerful.

His body would strengthen over time as he resisted the rampaging of the fourth layer Chaotic Force.

Chaotic Force and the Chaotic Body increased together. Every time the Chaotic Force reached a new layer, his Chaotic Body would need to follow up as well. His body would always be on the same level of strength as the energy he used, or he would not be able to store the Chaotic Force that had suddenly grown stronger.

Right now, Jian Chen's Chaotic Body was progressing to the fourth layer as it withstood the violent frenzy of the Chaotic Force.

The process last for an entire day before coming to an end. Jian

Chen's Chaotic Force and Body had reached the fourth layer. Both his Chaotic Body and Chaotic Force had strengthened rapidly, but the price was that his fist-sized chaotic neidan had been compressed into the size of a soybean again. There was not a lot of Chaotic Force in it anymore.

The blood on Jian Chen did not coagulate. All of it re-entered his body through his pores, only leaving behind a bloodied set of clothes.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. He silently felt his new Chaotic Body and Chaotic Force as joy filled his face. He mumbled, "The Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King. The fourth layer of the Chaotic Body gives me the strength of an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King, and it's at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer, infinitesimally close to the Ninth."

"The third layer gives me the battle prowess of a Saint King at the Third Heavenly Layer. With the Emperor Armament, that becomes the Seventh Heavenly Layer. I wonder what strength I can display if I use the Emperor Armament now," Jian Chen mumbled. Not only did his battle prowess increase after reaching the new layer, his defensive capabilities became extremely great as well. The fourth layer of the Chaotic Body could receive attacks from Eight Heavenly Layer Saint Kings and emerge unscathed as long as they did not use a Saint Tier Battle Skill.

This was because the power of the Chaotic Body and Chaotic Force were equivalent. Since the Chaotic Body could store such powerful Chaotic Force, just his body would not be something an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings could injure. They would not even be able to scratch him. Only at the Ninth Heavenly Layer could someone break through his defenses and cause him an injury.

However, this injury would only be miniscule!

"The current toughness of my body is probably far beyond the

bodies of Class 9 Magical Beasts,” Jian Chen thought. At the same time, a thought suddenly crossed his mind. If he reached the fifth layer, then even regular Saint Emperors would not be able to scratch him.

“I’ve already wasted quite a few days by breaking through to the fourth layer. The upcoming period of time will be extremely valuable. I need to gather a few heavenly resources in the shortest time possible. I can’t stick around here any longer,” Jian Chen thought. He quickly suppressed his joy, changed into a clean set of clothes, and went to visit the white tiger and Tie Ta.

The white tiger was still in a slumber right now. It had not completely digested the the Immortal Tier heavenly resources it had ingested a few days ago, but Jian Chen could clearly sense that the white tiger’s strength was rapidly increasing. It was already quite close to the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler.

“Once I leave the Xuanhuang Microcosm, the white tiger will probably become a Class 8 Magical Beast as well,” Jian Chen murmured softly. The white tiger was a Winged Tiger Beast and possessed a well-endowed advantage. It could devour heavenly resources without any worry to rapidly increase its own strength. If it were any other beast of antiquity or human Saint Ruler, they would have imploded long ago, and even if they could avoid that fate, it would lead to incurable after effects.

Jian Chen then visited Tie Ta. He was still absorbing the energy crystals he had obtained from the Xuanhuang beasts, now roughly a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Even Nubis was cultivating. However, he did not increase his own strength, and instead, he was wolfing down the spring water and essence from the Springs of Life. He was refining his own soul.

The several dozen elites of the Flame Mercenaries did not sit around doing nothing either. They worked with the Class 7 Magical Beasts, who lived in the saint artifact, to craft crude

wooden boxes for Jian Chen with the wood he had supplied them with.

Jian Chen left the artifact space and returned to the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He advanced through the boundless world by himself, searching for a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast to test his strength.

Chapter 1283: Encountering a Class 9 Xuanhuang Beast Again

On the way, Jian Chen constantly searched for Reconstruction Gel. He had already gathered a massive pile of it in the artifact space. The larger ones had reached the size of a person while the smaller ones were only the size of a fist.

Jian Chen had already completed the sea goddess' request and had already collected a lot of both the Reconstruction Gel and the essence from the Springs of Life.

Before Jian Chen had entered the microcosm, he had wished to find what the sea goddess needed a little earlier so he could leave right away. Then, he could continue absorbing the energy of the worldly ebb to cultivate. But now, he was not hurried at all. He wished he could stay a little longer in fact.

Half a day later, Jian Chen came across another large region of life. This time, he did not search for the heavenly resources in a hurry. He stood beside the Spring of Life and radiated a powerful presence and made it churn. It engulfed the entire region and was filled with provocation.

As soon as Jian Chen's provocative presence radiated out, a deafening beast roar reverberated from the center of the region. With a gentle swish, a black shadow shot toward Jian Chen with lightning-like speed.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed as he stared at the black shadow that rapidly approached him. He thought, "I just happened to be looking for a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast to test my strength. I never thought I'd come across one so quickly." Kicking off the ground gently, he began to float away like a fallen leaf. However, he moved extremely quick.

In just a few seconds, Jian Chen had retreated to a spot twenty

kilometers away with lightning-like speed. The Emperor Armament had silently appeared in his right hand as Chaotic Force surged endlessly into it. It was covered in a dark hazy glow, and the destructive and violent presence it gave off was even heavier than before.

However, Jian Chen frowned slightly. He glanced at the Emperor Armament in his hand. He could clearly feel that when he injected Chaotic Force into the Emperor Armament, it no longer gave him the feeling like before. When he was still at the third layer, the Emperor Armament could easily endure the Chaotic Force he injected, but it now became rather difficult for the Emperor Armament since he had reached the fourth layer. Not only would he encounter some obstruction as he sent his Chaotic Force into the Emperor Armament, he would even destroy the interior slightly.

Although the damage was not severe so far, it would deepen with every use, thus, influencing the amount of strength he could use.

“Looks like the Emperor Armament is no longer suitable for me. I need to forge the Azulet swords as soon as possible. Only they can withstand Chaotic Force,” Jian Chen sighed inside. The Emperor Armament he had used for quite some time already was becoming obsolete.

With a furious growl from up ahead, the Xuanhuang beast from the region tailed Jian Chen. Although it lacked intelligence, it could still tell that Jian Chen was provoking it. To it, being provoked by an insignificant existence that was not as strong as itself could not be tolerated.

Seeing how Jian Chen stopped, the Xuanhuang beast did not lunge at Jian Chen in a hurry. It stopped a hundred meters away and glared at him.

At this moment, Jian Chen saw the Xuanhuang beast for the first time. It was a pitch-black, four-meter-long, panther-like

Xuanhuang beast that possessed a small horn on its head with a pair of small black wings on its back.

Jian Chen became rather stern. Even with his increased strength, he still could not remain careless before a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast. Although the one in front of him was not comparable in size to the two alligators, it was quite stronger than the alligators.

Suddenly, Jian Chen vanished from where he was with a sway. He aggressively charged at the horned panther to deal the first blow.

The panther produced a hearty growl. It sank down before suddenly kicking off the ground, pounding over like an arrow. It opened its wings slightly and became a little faster, charging toward Jian Chen at a speed much greater than the speed he was moving.

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. The panther's speed had caught him off-guard, but he did not become flustered at all since he was experienced. Just as he was about to collide with the panther, he made an odd maneuver and avoided the panther's frontal attack. As he brushed past the panther, he stabbed at the cat's belly.

At the same time, there was a black flash in front of him. With a crisp crack, his chest had been whipped by the panther's tail. His clothes there turned into fragments instantly, and he was blown away.

Jian Chen flew for fifty meters before hitting the ground. He felt a burning pain from his chest. There was already a red mark there.

Jian Chen lowered his head to look at his chest. He was shocked inside, "If I hadn't reached the fourth layer, just that attack would have punctured my chest and injured me. This Xuanhuang beast is very strong, reacts quickly, and can counterattack with its tail. Is it experienced in battle as well?"

Jian Chen glanced at the panther and saw a meter-long wound on

its belly from his attack. It was bleeding.

“Looks like my full-powered stab can only reach the levels of Saint Kings at Great Perfection or maybe just at the level of Saint Emperors. The effect of the Emperor Armament on my battle prowess is no longer as great as when I was at the third layer,” Jian Chen sighed inside. The Emperor Armament had already become rather unsuitable for him.

Growl! The panther produced a throaty sound before turning into a black shadow, charging at Jian Chen again. It opened its huge mouth to bite at Jian Chen’s head. It seemed even more vicious after becoming injured.

Jian Chen showed no fear. Strands of Chaotic Force churned from his soybean-sized chaotic neidan, filling every corner of his body. He pushed the defenses of the fourth layer to the max. This time, he did not choose to dodge. Instead, he engaged in a head-on battle with the panther.

The Emperor Armament shone brightly as he blanketed the panther with a flurry of strikes. The afterimages of the sword stacked together and filled up an entire region of space. It was difficult to distinguish between the attacks that were real and the attacks that were fake.

The panther became slightly confused. It was unable to tell what was real and fake between the flurry of stabs. Sometimes it felt like all of them were fake, but sometimes it also felt like all of them were real.

Chapter 1284: Comprehending the Way of the Sword (One)

The panther became slightly confused. It was unable to tell what was real and fake between the flurry of stabs. Sometimes it felt like all of them were fake, but sometimes it also felt like all of them were real.

Since it could not tell between what was real or fake, it produced a wild flurry with both its claws. With sharp gusts of wind, violent streams of energy shot out, kicking dust into the air.

Jian Chen controlled the Emperor Armament with all his focus. The Emperor Armament weaved through the panther's claws as it stabbed toward its eyes.

However, just when the Emperor Armament drew close, the panther suddenly twisted its head to one side as if it had sensed it. It avoided the strike on its eyes, but the Emperor Armament still managed to leave behind a deep gash on its neck. Blood immediately poured out like a fountain.

The panther became even more furious after it was injured a second time. It immediately roared at the sky as energy gathered in its mouth. It quickly condensed a head-sized ball of earthen-yellow energy and shot it at Jian Chen. At the same time, the short horn on its head began to glow with faint yellow light as well.

When Jian Chen wanted to avoid the ball of energy, the horn on the panther's head suddenly shot out a streak of yellow light that engulfed him. Suddenly, Jian Chen felt his limbs tighten, having been immobilized by a mysterious force.

Jian Chen was shocked. In the past few days he had spent in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, he had come across quite a few Xuanhuang beasts, but none of them possessed such special abilities. This one could actually immobilize him.

Jian Chen circulated his Chaotic Force furiously. His body jolted as hard as he could, and only then did he shake away the mysterious force around him. However, the ball of energy had struck his chest while he had been momentarily stuck.

Bang! With a heavy sound, Jian Chen was blown far away, landing on the hard earth several kilometers away. His chest was reduced to a bloody mess and several of his ribs were broken.

Jian Chen stood up with a flip. Even though his wound looked horrible, it did not affect his battle prowess much. Coupled with his circulation of Chaotic Force, his broken ribs and wounds healed at a visible rate. The power of Chaotic Force was on full display at that moment.

Up ahead, the panther clearly became stunned when it saw Jian Chen easily standing, as if he was completely fine after taking on its attack. However, it recovered very soon before charging at Jian Chen once more. Its horn began to shine with yellow light again.

Jian Chen stood steadily as he used the precious amount of time to heal as quickly as possible. His gaze was fixed on the small horn on the panther's head as his expression became extremely stern.

Although the energy from the horn could only immobilize him for an extremely short amount of time, that was enough to change the outcome of the battle. He could endure it a few times, but once it happened too many times, he would find it difficult to continue even with his Chaotic Force. After all, he was not taking on attacks from a Saint King but a Saint Emperor.

“Be careful, master. That's the innate ability of some Xuanhuang beasts. There are not many beasts that possess innate abilities in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, but every single one that does is virtually invincible among its level of cultivation. Master only needs to dodge the innate ability the moment it is fired,” Zi Ying's voice rang out in his head.

Jian Chen was secretly surprised. He said, “I never thought that

Xuanhuang beasts would have innate abilities as well. I just wonder how many times it can use it.” He had already sensed that the panther would become rather exhausted after using its innate ability.

With the assistance of the sword spirits, Jian Chen noticed some minute signs the Xuanhuang beast would exhibit the moment it used its innate ability, so he managed to avoid it the second time. At the same time, he increased the number of injuries on the panther with his sword.

The bodies of Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts were just far too tough. With Jian Chen’s current strength, he could not impale them. He could only deal a three-inch-deep wound at most. At the same time, the Xuanhuang beast possessed residual strands of Xuanhuang Qi. Even if Jian Chen injected his Chaotic Force into its body, the damage caused was extremely limited.

The panther used its innate ability three times in a row. It missed with the last two tries and realized that it might as well stop using its innate ability. It engaged in an intense battle with Jian Chen and relied on the toughness of its body. The powerful ripples of energy turned the surroundings into a mess.

Gradually, the wounds on both the beast and Jian Chen increased. They both became bloodied. Jian Chen had attempted to stab the panther’s eyes several times as they fought, but not only was the panther much stronger than the alligators he had encountered before, but its reaction speed and agility was also incomparable to the alligators. At the same time, it was well-versed in battle. There was an extremely low number of Xuanhuang beasts that were experienced in battle, but this beast managed to narrowly dodge Jian Chen’s attacks every time he stabbed out.

The vitality of Xuanhuang beasts was plentiful. Although Jian Chen could not kill the panther in a short amount of time, it was only a matter of time before it died.

Suddenly, a thought flashed through Jian Chen's head. His gaze immediately became rather hazy as his movements slowed. At that moment, he seemed to have grasped something, but he also felt that everything was blurry and hazy, like he could not see reality at all.

A sudden slip in attention during battle was fatal to all experts. The panther immediately arrived in front of Jian Chen as it opened its large mouth to bite him.

Jian Chen did not seem to realize. His eyes remained distant and confused, but they soon cleared up a little. He then grasped at the emptiness in front of him, and immediately, an extremely bright streak of light appeared in his hand. The light was as thin as a chopstick and as long as an arm. It concealed extremely powerful and sharp sword Qi, enough to make people shiver inside.

Chapter 1285: Comprehending the Way of the Sword (Two)

Jian Chen did not return to his senses yet. Unconsciously, he stabbed at the panther's head with the streak of white light.

With a spurt, the white light actually punctured the panther's head. Entering through the area between its eyebrows, it almost managed to cleave its head in half.

Roar! The panther produced a cry of pain. It immediately lost all its vigor. However, its body still struck Jian Chen since it could not stop.

Jian Chen staggered a few steps back. He was roused from the wondrous mental state after being hit by the panther. His eyes were confused, but they sharpened very quickly.

Bang! A heavy sound rang out from beneath his foot as the panther collapsed on the ground and painfully squirmed. The huge wound on its head was horrendous. Its nerves had been heavily damaged. Although it was still not dead, it was on the brink of death.

Jian Chen did not hesitate when he saw this. He immediately stabbed at the panther's head with his Emperor Armament. Using the wound as an entry point, he stabbed into the head and completely severed the panther's central nervous system.

The panther froze before slowly softening. It lay on the ground without moving as if it had lost all its strength.

Jian Chen removed an energy crystal from the panther's body before throwing the corpse into the artifact space. He then sank into his thoughts.

“Master, I never thought that you'd touch the boundary of Sword Origin and at an even greater level than the times before. I've begun to wonder if master will comprehend Sword Origin the very

moment you get a hold of your fated swords,” Zi Ying’s voice rang out in praise. It was filled with much excitement.

“This only means that master is extremely suited to walk the Way of the Sword. If others want to comprehend the first realm of the sword, it’s extremely difficult. There is rarely anyone who can comprehend the first realm as a Golden Immortal. Most of them have to become a Daluo Golden Immortal or even a Xuan Immortal before they can reach Sword Origin. Once master forges the Azulet swords, you’ll definitely comprehend the Way of the Sword before you become a Heavenly Immortal, and with master’s current talent, you’ll definitely reach the fifth realm and become a new Sword God,” exclaimed Qing Suo excitedly. She was hopeful of Jian Chen’s future.

Jian Chen roused from his thoughts after listening to what the sword spirits had said. He knew that he had touched the first realm of the Way of the Sword, which was the same as what had happened outside the City of God before. It had all happened suddenly and unknowingly. However, he failed to grasp the Sword Origin when he had touched on them before, perhaps due to the absence of his fated swords. All he could use the touch for was a single attack, and once he was roused from that state of mind, he could no longer re-enter it.

To him, there was still a lot of haziness obstructing him from reaching that realm.

“Zi Ying, can you explain how strength is divided in the Immortals’ World? The Heavenly Immortals, Golden Immortals, and Daluo Golden Immortals have all made me confused,” Jian Chen said rather gloomily.

The sword spirits thought a little. Qing Suo then said, “Master, strength in our Immortals’ World is divided into Human Immortals, Earthen Immortals, Heavenly Immortals, Golden Immortals, Daluo Golden Immortals, Xuan Immortals, Nine-heavenly Xuan Immortals, Immortal Monarchs, Immortal

Emperors, and Immortal Exalts. The Human Immortals and Earthen Immortals aren't actual immortals. Human Immortals are equivalent to the Saints and Heaven Saint Masters on the Tian Yuan Continent while Earthen Immortals are equivalent to Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors. Only the Heavenly Immortals, who have surpassed the level of Earthen Immortals, are true immortals."

Jian Chen became confused by what was said. He murmured, "Earthen Immortals are equivalent to Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors while only those that have surpassed Saint Emperor are Heavenly Immortals. Then what's the Origin realm all about?"

"Master, what we just mentioned was how strength was divided in the Immortals' World. The Origin realm is a realm of cultivation from the Saints' World. The Saints' World is a world on the same level as the Immortals' World, but we're enemies. In the Saints' World, there are five major realms of cultivation: the Mortal realm, Sainthood, the Origin realm, Godhood, and the Primordial realm."

"The Mortal realm is equivalent to the Human Immortals of the Immortals' realm, which ranges from Saints to Heaven Saint Masters. Sainthood would be the Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors while the Origin realm is also divided into three: Receival, Returnance, and Reciprocity. Godhood is divided into Deities, Gods, Overgods, and Godkings while the final Primordial realm is divided into Infinite Primes, Chaotic Primes, and Grand Primes. The Immortal Exalts of our Immortals' World are equivalent to the Grand Primes of the Saints' World, Immortal Emperors are equivalent to Chaotic Primes, and Immortal Monarchs are equivalent to Infinite Primes."

"Master, do you still remember the Empyrean Demon Orb you had obtained from the Octoterra Divine Hall back then? It was the famed treasure of the Empyrean Demon Monarch from the

Demons' World. She had garnered the attention of various large organizations both in the Demons' World and the Immortals' World. Not only was it because of her exceptional talent, being one of the few geniuses within the two worlds, her strength was so great that she managed to fight with an Immortal Emperor for four whole hours as a peak Immortal Monarch. Even though she died in the end, the matter shook up both worlds. This was because the disparity between Immortal Monarch and Immortal Emperor is extremely vast and even a high god artifact cannot make up the disparity. Very few people can fight an Immortal Emperor as a Immortal Monarch, but she managed to do it."

Qing Suo sighed deeply when she spoke up to there. She became rather gloomy and said, "Back then, even former master paid some attention to her. Master had even said in the past that she would become a Demon Emperor without long, which was equivalent to an Immortal Emperor of the Immortals' World. He had even said that she had the chance of becoming a Demon Exalt, but unfortunately, she had already passed away the next time we saw her. Her famed treasure, the Empyrean Demon Orb had even vanished with its artifact spirit intact."

"So the Empyrean Demon Monarch actually comes from such great origins!" Jian Chen was secretly shocked. The strength of the Empyrean Demon Monarch had far exceeded what he had initially thought.

At the same time, Jian Chen understood that he had become one of the few, great experts on the Tian Yuan Continent with his current strength, but it was nothing in the Immortals' World or the Saints' World.

"Zi Ying, Qing Suo, has there ever been someone who has surpassed Grand Prime and Immortal Exalt?" Jian Chen suddenly asked out of curiosity.

This time, both sword spirits shook their heads without any hesitation. Zi Ying firmly said, "There has never been a person

who has surpassed Immortal Exalt. However, if you are asking about someone who has made it the furthest as a Immortal Exalt, then there is one person, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt.

“The Nirvanic Immortal Exalt reached the limits back then. His strength could be described as surpassing the limits of Immortal Exalt, but he still remained in that realm of cultivation. He just belonged to the very peak of it. Coupled with his four swords, he was the strongest in the Immortals’ World without any doubt. Although former master was also one of the five Grand Exalts of the Immortals’ World along with the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt, even he was a little weaker in terms of strength.”

“The Nirvanic Immortals Exalt was actually this powerful!” Jian Chen was greatly shocked. He could not help but think of the four brothers he had encountered in the divine realm because the four of them practiced the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s cultivation method, but it seemed incomplete.

“But unfortunately, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt was not the opponent of the warring god. He passed away in the great battle against the Grand Prime of the warring gods, having been cleaved to death by a blow from his axe. Sigh...” Zi Ying sighed. He was rather sorrowful. As the strongest expert of the Immortal World, he actually suffered such a miserable outcome.

“Is the Grand Prime of the warring gods really that powerful, where even the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt isn’t his opponent?” Jian Chen immediately asked. He could not help but think of Tie Ta. He was also a warring god, except he had not fully matured right now. He was still nowhere near becoming a Grand Prime.

“Master, the warring gods are given birth to by the world. They are blessed by the world and possess extremely great battle prowess. They are invincible among the same realm of cultivation. Not only was the warring god who had reached the peak of Grand Prime invincible in the Saints’ World, it was the same in the Immortals’ World and Demons’ World. Probably only the Chaotic

Body could rival him in the world, but the Chaotic Body has never managed to reach Immortal Exalt. As for the Grand Prime of the warring gods, he had been heavily injured in the battle against the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt and was finally slain by former master,” Zi Ying’s voice contained some helplessness.

With a thought, Jian Chen asked, “Zi Ying, I remember that you told me before that the Chaotic Body is divided into four levels within the Immortals’ World: Minor Achievement, Partial Achievement, Major Achievement, and Great Perfection. The first six layers are Minor Achievement, the next six are Partial Achievement, while the thirteenth layer to the eighteenth are Major Achievement. Is Great Perfection equivalent to Immortal Exalts?”

“Correct. The Great Perfection of the Chaotic Body is equivalent to the Immortal Exalts of the Immortals’ World, but it’s never appeared before. There has never been anyone who’s reached Great Perfection. However, reaching the peak of Major Achievement would provide them with the strength to fight against Immortal Exalts, but that’s only regular Immortal Exalts. It’s still extremely far away from the five Grand Exalts,” Zi Ying said.

Jian Chen’s head sank when he heard that. He thought, “No one has managed to reach the Great Perfection of the Chaotic Body. Will I stop there as well?”

After thinking to himself, Jian Chen asked a few more questions before concluding his conversation with the sword spirits. He returned back to the region of life that had been guarded by the panther and collected quite a few Immortal Tier heavenly resources. To his utter surprise, he actually found another Violet Cloud Peach Tree. It had reached the second grade, where its peaches could give a thousand years of cultivation.

After collecting all the valuable items, Jian Chen immediately re-entered the artifact space. He got the artifact spirit to find a hidden

place for him. He dug out a fire pit there and used a metal container to hold some spring water before he put it above the fire to boil it. He then rummaged through his Space Ring and finally found an exquisite tea set.

He had found the tea set in the Space Ring of some Saint King he had killed in the past.

“Master, what are you doing?” Zi Ying stared at Jian Chen’s actions, perplexed and asked.

Jian Chen sat down before the fire pit as he attentively boiled the water. He seriously replied, “I am making tea, to comprehend the Sword Origin realm through the Comprehension Tea Leaves.”

“Master, you still don’t have your fated swords yet, so you can’t comprehend the first realm of the Way of the Sword. There’s no need for you to rush so much. Once you forge the Azulet swords, you will comprehend the first realm very quickly,” Qing Suo said heavily. The two sword spirits had existed for countless years, and they had never heard of a single person who had managed to comprehend the Sword Origin realm without their fated swords. Even though Jian Chen had already come in contact with that realm twice, they still did not believe that Jian Chen could comprehend it right now.

“I don’t think that’s definitely the case. I’ve already entered the Sword Origin realm twice. I’ve failed to grasp it, but I’ve gained a blurry understanding of it. My Chaotic Body has reached the fourth layer, and I’ve gained a great increase in strength, but it’s still rather difficult for me to deal with some stronger Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts. I can only kill them easily by borrowing the power of the Way of the Sword. In order to be able to travel even further in this microcosm, I need to try it whether I succeed or not,” Jian Chen firmly answered. He had already made up his mind.

Chapter 1286: Comprehending the Way of the Sword (Three)

Comprehension Tea Leaves were Immortal Tier heavenly resources, so they obviously could not be boiled with regular water. Not only would normal water decrease the effects of the tea leaves, their quality would also drop by a lot. It was more suitable for Jian Chen to use the spring water from the Springs of Life to make the tea. Not only would it allow the tea to exhibit all of its effects, it could even amplify the effects to a certain level.

The spring water in the kettle became bubbling water very quickly. Jian Chen grabbed it and placed a whole tea leaf inside. He began to make the tea with all his concentration.

The tea leaf slowly began to dissolve in the boiling water before completely vanishing in the end. It had completely dissolved into the water, making the color of the water grow brighter than before. The steam that it gave off possessed the profound presence of the ways.

Jian Chen took a deep breath through his nose and his head become empty. His mind had become extremely clear. If it were not for the fact that the Xuanhuang Microcosm was different from the outside world, where it lacked the mysteries of the world, Jian Chen suspected that he would have uncontrollably broken through to the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler and become a Saint King, gaining the ability to make Space Gates.

Jian Chen knew that the tea could not be set aside for too long. Before it had even cooled, he drank the whole cup.

The moment he drank it, he could feel a sense of clarity rise up from his chest. It headed into his head and fused with his soul.

Immediately, Jian Chen felt like he had entered an illusion, as if all the laws of the world were presented right before him at that

moment. He seemed to be able to see the veins of the world and understand all the mysteries present. Jian Chen knew that this was not true, so he quickly gathered his attention and devoted all he had to comprehend the Way of the Sword.

Jian Chen began to meditate as he closed off all his senses, no longer paying any attention to the outside world. However, the sword spirits nervously stared at his face. Qing Suo asked in worry, “Zi Ying, do you think that master will really succeed in comprehending the Way of the Sword? In the lengthy past, no one has managed to comprehend the Way of the Sword below the realm of a Heavenly Immortal and without their fated swords.”

Zi Ying shook his head, “Although we don’t believe that master can comprehend the Way of the Sword and reach Sword Origin before he’s forged the Azulet swords, we can’t forget that master is extremely suited for the Way of the Sword. He touched the boundary of Sword Origin as an Earthen Immortal already, and the second time was even deeper than the first. He even used eighty percent of the Sword Origin’s power. With the Comprehension Tea Leaves, even if master does not reach Sword Origin, he will benefit greatly. There might even be the tiniest possibility that he really does reach Sword Origin.”

“If master really does reach Sword Origin this time, becoming a Sword God will be no problem in the future. He might even become a Sword God much earlier than we have anticipated,” Qing Suo said.

Zi Ying nodded, “Chaos gave birth to Yin and Yang while the fusion of Yin and Yang produces chaos. We were born from strands of Yin and Yang Qi, so the Azulet swords are the only weapons suitable for Chaotic Force. Once master forges the Azulet swords, he’ll be invincible in his cultivation realm when coupled with his Way of the Sword. He might even be able to easily kill those of greater cultivation levels. If master becomes a Sword God in the future, he might even be able to rival Grand Exalts with his

Chaotic Body at the peak of Major Achievement.”

In the blink of an eye, three days passed and Jian Chen roused from his meditation. His eyes shone brightly as joy was plastered across his face. After the three days of comprehension, he had failed to reach the first realm of the Way of the Sword, but his comprehension of Sword Origin was becoming deeper and deeper. His understanding rapidly increased. He had really benefited from this tea.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen immediately began to boil water again. He made tea with a second leaf as he continued to comprehend the Way of the Sword.

Jian Chen used three days more for this second period of comprehension. He roused again and immediately began to make tea a third time.

On the third day after Jian Chen had drunk his third pot of tea, his presence suddenly changed just when the sword spirits thought he was about to rouse. His presence sharpened, as if countless sharp blades slowly revolved around him. Although his presence remained invisible, anyone could feel its sharpness.

The next moment, streaks of finger-long, white light, as thin as string, began to condense in the air. They slowly revolved around him. Every single one of them was pure and concentrated sword Qi.

This sword Qi was completely different than regular sword Qi. Regular sword Qi was condensed from energy, but these were not composed of energy at all. They seemed unique.

“T-this is the Sword Origin realm! Master’s actually succeeded!” The sword spirits continued to watch, stunned. Disbelief filled their faces.

“The rumor that you cannot reach Sword Origin without your fated swords has been disproven today, and so has the rumor that

you can't reach it without being a Heavenly Immortal. If this piece of news made it to the Immortals' World, it's enough to shake up the everything," Qing Suo mumbled as she stared at Jian Chen in a daze. Fascination, excitement, joy, ecstasy, disbelief, and so on were all present on her face right now.

At this moment, the thin, bright sword Qi revolving around him slowly began to gather, becoming a single strand in the end. The strand was condensed into a small, sixty-centimeter-long sword that shone even more resplendently. The sword Qi was sharper as well.

Jian Chen's eyes remained closed, but he slowly raised his right hand. He gently held the sword completely condensed from sword Qi and his entire body seemed to fuse with it. The small sword seemed to have become his limb, becoming a part of him.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. There was only peace in them. He stared at the sword Qi attentively. He showed no joy or sadness, only clarity. After quite a long time did he murmur to himself, "So it's like this. This is the Way of the Sword. I've finally understood the Way of the Sword and reached Sword Origin." As he spoke, he slowly loosened his hand and the pure sword Qi dispersed into the surroundings, transforming into nothingness.

"Congratulations, master! You've actually managed to comprehend the Way of the Sword and reach the first realm, Sword Origin!" The sword spirits congratulated him as joy filled both their faces. They felt happy for him from the bottom of their hearts.

Jian Chen stood up and smiled from the bottom of his heart as well. He said, "The Way of the Sword is a rule. The sword Qi condensed from my comprehension of the Way of the Sword is the power of a rule. It is extremely powerful, incomparable to any sword Qi I can condense right now. Using the Way of the Sword to fight people is equivalent to using rules to fight people."

“Master, rules are also laws, which are what they’re called in the Saints’ World. They are known as ways in our Immortals’ World,” Zi Ying corrected. He was born on the Immortals’ World, so he obviously preferred the Immortals’ World’s method of reference.

Jian Chen chuckled. He did not delve on the matter with the sword spirits and said, “I’ve used nine days to comprehend the Way of the Sword. There is less and less time remaining. I need to go out. I believe that killing Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts with my current strength shouldn’t be too difficult now.

Jian Chen knew that his battle prowess had drastically increased now that he had reached Sword Origin, but he was uncertain as to just how much it had increased by. He did not dare to test his strength in the artifact space since the artifact space could only withstand attacks from those below Saint Emperors. Saint Emperors were enough to shatter the space. He did not wish to destroy the artifact space with his own hands after it had helped him so much.

Chapter 1287: Easy Kills

Tie Ta remained in cultivation, but since it was much easier to absorb the energy crystals from the Xuanhuang beasts than monster cores, his strength had increased extremely quickly. Jian Chen could basically sense that Tie Ta's strength was increasing at every moment of the day.

Jian Chen did not disturb Tie Ta. He left the artifact space by himself and advanced through the boundless plains of desolation. Since the sword spirits guided him, he did not become lost. He maintained a straight path throughout his journey.

A day later, a great mountain range appeared in Jian Chen's vision. From afar, it seemed like a huge, slumbering dragon. The mountain range weaved about and was extraordinarily steep. Even from afar, Jian Chen could clearly sense a vast presence radiating from the mountain range.

The mountain range seemed very close, but it was extremely far away from him. After traveling several hundred kilometers, he finally arrived at the foot of them mountain. Immediately, Jian Chen felt like he was facing an entire world.

Jian Chen felt like he was standing before a vast world as he stood before the mountain range. It was teeming with a vast, boundless presence, and he felt as insignificant as an ant when he stood there. Not only was it due to a difference in size, it was also due to a difference in presence.

The height and size of the mountain range was unknown. It reached as far as the eye could see, while the mountain peaks were obscured by a layer of hazy yellow clouds.

The mountain range was red in color since it was filled with various fire-red vegetation. It was teeming with fire-attributed energy of the world. Jian Chen had never sensed energy so vast, and it even possessed faint strands of Xuanhuang Qi.

“This is the elemental mountains. The mountain range is a natural barrier in Xuanhuang Microcosms. The entire mountain range forms a circle around the center. As long as you cross the mountains, you’ll be able to reach the central region of the Xuanhuang Microcosm,” Zi Ying appeared above Jian Chen and gave an explanation to Jian Chen as he stared at the huge mountain range.

As soon as Zi Ying finished speaking, Qing Suo appeared as well. She stared at the elemental mountains ahead and said, “There are many heavenly resources of the five attributes within the elemental mountains, and the Xuanhuang beasts that guard them are quite strong as well. There are no Xuanhuang beasts below Saint Emperor, and there might even be one or two Heavenly Immortal Xuanhuang beasts, so master needs to be extra-careful in the mountain range. The difference between Earthen Immortals and Heavenly Immortals is qualitative. With master’s current strength, there should be no problems dealing with peak Earthen Immortal Xuanhuang beasts, but things will become troublesome if you come across a Heavenly Immortal Xuanhuang beast.”

Jian Chen became rather stern. Heavenly Immortal Xuanhuang beasts would be existences that had surpassed Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent. Jian Chen no longer feared Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts now that he had reached Sword Origin, but he was not confident he could deal with Xuanhuang beasts that had surpassed Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen entered the elemental mountains. He entered the region of the fire-attribute, so all of the vegetation around him possessed a demonic red. The vegetation gently swayed like tiny sparks dancing about happily while the temperature soared as he traveled deeper.

The vegetation in the elemental mountains was not made up of ordinary plants, but they were not heavenly resources either, so they were not as useful. However, there were many heavenly

resources hidden among them.

“Master, there is a stalk of Scorching Fire Grass three kilometers to your left. If cultivators of fire-attributed cultivation methods ingest the grass, not only will it increase their cultivation speed, it will refine their energy.” Five minutes later, the sword spirits discovered a heavenly resource hidden among the plants and immediately informed Jian Chen.

Jian Chen arrived where it was, and he carefully removed a weed-like plant from the ground. The Scorching Fire Grass was only the size of a palm and seemed very ordinary. It was so red that it almost seemed like blood, hiding extremely dense fire-attributed energy within.

“First grade of the Immortal Tier!” Jian Chen recognized the quality of the Scorching Fire Grass with a single glance. He knew quite a few Immortal Tier heavenly resources in the Xuanhuang Microcosm now, so he obviously developed some ability to discern certain types of heavenly resources.

The Scorching Fire Grass was not some particularly valuable heavenly resource, so there was no Xuanhuang beast guarding it. Jian Chen left as soon as he had collected it, continuing his search.

“Master, there’s another Flamecloud Fruit Tree up ahead. It’s reached the fourth grade,” Qing Suo said again without long.

Following Qing Suo’s directions, Jian Chen indeed came across another Flamecloud Fruit Tree. The tree was much larger than the one from before. The thumb-sized fruits on it glowed with a hazy, red light, as if there were flames dancing inside them.

However, two Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts loafed around the tree. They seemed like foxes. They were completely fire-red and relatively small, only the size of an adult human. However, their heads were tiger-like, abnormally fierce in appearance as they glared around.

The moment Jian Chen discovered them they discovered Jian Chen as well. They immediately stood up and produced throaty growls, slowly advancing toward Jian Chen. Their four limbs were powerful while their claws were both sharp and long. They gave off an icy-cold glint.

Jian Chen habitually pulled his Emperor Armament from his Space Ring. His mind emptied as he reached Sword Origin. He swung the sword at one of the Xuanhuang beasts from fifty meters away.

Jian Chen's attack seemed to stimulate a certain presence in the surroundings. It seemed simple, but it seemed to also possess a certain supreme power. As he struck out, a glow appeared, causing the surroundings to dull. An extremely bright, snow-white streak of light shot out, flying toward the Class 9 Xuanhuang beast.

The Xuanhuang beast narrowed its eyes as fear filled its face. It could feel just how terrifying the streak of light was. It wanted to dodge, but it discovered that it could not no matter what it did. As a result, it swung its paws in attempt to tear the streak of light to pieces.

Spurt! The streak of light collided with the sharp claws, and they were completely severed. However, the silver-white light weakened slightly after encountering the obstruction, finally landing on the Xuanhuang beast's head.

A deep wound immediately appeared on the head of the Xuanhuang beast as blood wildly spurted out. It quickly dyed its entire head red.

The other Class 9 Xuanhuang beast could not help but halt after seeing its companion injured from just the first clash. It looked at Jian Chen in fear and already began to consider retreat. Although these beasts lacked intelligence, their bestial instincts still made them feel dread when they were attacking an existence that was stronger than them.

Chapter 1288: Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast (One)

Jian Chen was stunned as well when he managed to easily injure a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast. After reaching Sword Origin, the increase in his strength had completely exceeded anything he had been expecting, but he was soon overwhelmed by joy. He understood that Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts no longer posed a threat to him. Their tough bodies were as fragile as tofu now.

At this moment, a bright, dazzling white light flickered again. Jian Chen swung the Emperor Armament and an extremely pure and powerful sword Qi shot toward the injured Xuanhuang beast. It seemed like a simple strike, but it possessed the endless mysteries of the Way of the Sword. It did not seem like a sword Qi but the laws of the world. It was a way.

The second sword Qi disappeared into the wound caused by the first and cleaved the Xuanhuang beast's head in half. It continued on without weakening into the beast's neck and then body.

In the end, the Xuanhuang beast's entire body was cleaved in half by Jian Chen's second sword Qi, except the two halves remained stuck together. Afterward, the beast collapsed on the ground and stopped moving. Its central nervous system had been utterly destroyed by the violent sword Qi while its vast vitality rapidly leaked away.

The other Class 9 Xuanhuang beast was stunned by what had just happened. It had also sensed that that intruder was far stronger than what it could deal with after witnessing its companion die so quickly. It immediately produced a terrified growl before turning around to flee.

A Class 9 Xuanhuang beast was equivalent to a Class 9 Monster Core, and Class 9 Monster Cores were extremely valuable on the Tian Yuan Continent. Jian Chen could not allow the beast to flee

right before him, so he immediately used the Illusory Flash and pursued the beast as a blur. Chaotic Force surged out, causing the Emperor Armament to shine with a dark light and radiate with the violent presence of destruction. A snow-white layer of light silently appeared on the surface of the sword as well, radiating with extremely sharp sword Qi.

The snow-white light mixed with the Chaotic Force and seemed to fuse. However, this force was clearly much greater than when Jian Chen had struck out before.

The Class 9 Xuanhuang beast became even more horrified when it sensed the terrifying presence behind it. It began to flee even faster, but just when it had increased its speed, it felt that it had been locked onto by a powerful presence. The red world that it was familiar with disappeared as well, having been replaced by a snow-like whiteness.

Spurt! Jian Chen shot a meter-long black-and-white light from his Emperor Armament. It struck the back of the Xuanhuang beast. He almost managed to cleave the Xuanhuang beast in half, with only a fifth of the beast's flesh keeping its two halves together.

The Xuanhuang beast could no longer flee after it became so heavily injured. It collapsed on the ground, but due to inertia, it slid several kilometers through the forest before coming to a stop. It produced a painful wail.

Jian Chen slowly made his way over to the Xuanhuang beast with his Emperor Armament. Although it was still alive, it was completely incapacitated. Its injuries were so heavy that it could not even stand.

Jian Chen stabbed the Xuanhuang beast's head and destroyed its nerves, completely ending its life. He skillfully removed the energy crystal from its body before tossing the corpse into the artifact space.

Afterward, Jian Chen returned to where he was before and

collected the corpse of the other Xuanhuang beast. Afterward, he began to collect the Flamecloud Fruit.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had already stayed in the elemental mountains for five days. The mountain range was extremely vast. Even after five whole days, he had not managed to make it out of the fire-attributed region with his speed.

But in the five days, Jian Chen had collected quite a few heavenly resources. Without any exception, all of them were fire-attributed heavenly resources. He had also come across around a dozen Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts during that time, which he all killed. He obtained the same amount of energy crystals, which were equivalent to Class 9 Monster Cores.

There were no Xuanhuang beasts below Class 9 in the elemental mountains. All of them were at least Class 9, but there were far fewer than he had expected. Every single Class 9 Xuanhuang beast was very far away from each other. They all had their own territory and guarded some valuable heavenly resources.

After five days of traveling, Jian Chen had scaled up a mountain over nine thousand meters in height. Less than three hundred meters above him was the layer of hazy-yellow clouds.

The clouds were not ordinary. Even with Jian Chen's eyesight, he could not see through them, and he could sense that the Xuanhuang Qi that permeated the world was even denser in them. However, he could not absorb it no matter how hard he tried. He did not even have a method to take away even just a tiny portion of it.

Many of the mountains in the elemental mountain ranges reached into the clouds, so it was impossible to see just how tall they were.

Jian Chen continued to climb since he had been locked into this mountain range. As he rapidly climbed higher, the surrounding energy of the world became even more abundant. He knew he

would come across even higher grade heavenly resources as he approached the peak.

He had already spent over a month in the Xuanhuang Microcosm and only had around one and a half months left to continue exploring.

Chapter 1289: Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast (Two)

The temperature surged as faint strands of yellow mist appeared around Jian Chen. He had entered the thick layer of clouds and his vision became obscured. Visibility was extremely low, and even the usage of his soul became more and more restricted.

At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly froze. He suddenly swayed and reappeared over ten meters away like he had teleported.

Bang! As soon as Jian Chen reappeared, a red blur landed where he was standing before, and with a violent sound, rocks were shattered and thrown into the air along with dust.

Jian Chen became extremely stern. He had failed to see what that red blur was, nor did he learn what had suddenly attacked him. If he had not maintained his vigilance and dodged instinctually, he probably would have suffered a lot just then.

However, before Jian Chen could think about it some more, his expression suddenly changed. All his muscles tightened as his eyes stared right before him. He felt a terrifyingly powerful presence lock onto him. Not only did Jian Chen find it suffocating, he felt his body become as heavy as a mountain. Even his movements became limited.

The presence was so tremendous that it basically froze every inch of space around him, almost trapping him through the control of space.

“Beyond Saint Emperor!” Jian Chen was shocked. Even though he had yet to see the appearance of the Xuanhuang beast, he had determined that it had reached the Origin realm just from its presence alone.

This was because he had slain many Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts already and understood their strength. It was impossible for a

beast at that level to give off so much pressure.

“This Xuanhuang beast has already reached the level of Heavenly Immortals. Master, you’re not its opponent. Run!” The sword spirits’ voice rang out in Jian Chen’s head as well.

Jian Chen rapidly began to retreat without a second thought. He leaped down the mountain. The Origin realm and Sainthood were two major realms of cultivation, so the difference of strength was extremely great. Jian Chen was confident he could kill any Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts, but that confidence was not the same against Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts.

Jian Chen descended along a steep, curvy cliff face, dropping several thousand meters in just a few seconds. He had left the thick layer of clouds in the sky and his visibility finally returned to him. However, he dared not to relax at all. Not only did the vast presence remain locked on him, but it was also growing stronger.

“Oh no, that Class 10 Xuanhuang beast’s chasing me right now, and it’s getting closer and closer,” Jian Chen could feel how bad the situation was inside. He suddenly kicked off a great tree beside him, immediately shooting off into the distance like a loose arrow.

Due to the restrictions of the mysterious force, flying was basically impossible in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, so Jian Chen could only glide like a bird while using the Illusory Flash.

Hiss! At this moment, an ear-piercing sound rang out from behind. A thousand-meter-long python emerged from the thick layer of clouds and appeared in front of Jian Chen. Its body radiated a red light, which seemed to fuse with the surroundings. It slithered forward as its tongue flickered in pursuit of Jian Chen. It was quite faster than him.

When the red python first came out, it was nine thousand meters away from Jian Chen, but that distance was reduced to six thousand in less than a minute before shrinking to three thousand. In the end, it was only a few hundred meters away from Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's heart slightly sank. The terrain was complicated, which limited his strength. Meanwhile, the python behind him had lived here for many years already. It moved through the mountains and forests like a fish through water. It was impossible for Jian Chen to escape since the distance between them was decreasing.

Jian Chen ended up stopping. Chaotic Force surged from his right hand before condensing into a dark sword of energy. Resplendent and pure sword Qi was present in the Chaotic Force, mixing with it and, hence, increasing his strength. He had given up on the Emperor Armament long ago. After reaching Sword Origin, the Emperor Armament only became more damaged, and even if he used it, it would not increase his strength at all.

“Since I can't shake off this Class 10 Xuanhuang beast, I'll fight it. I may not be able to defeat it, but I can see just how terrifying existences that have surpassed Saint Emperors are and use this opportunity to gain a rough understanding of them,” Jian Chen thought. He was confident that killing this Class 10 Xuanhuang beast would not be easy.

At this moment, the giant python opened its mouth and a wave of flames surged out. They shot toward Jian Chen with extreme heat, burning all the vegetation that they came across to a crisp.

Jian Chen was shocked inside. He could feel that the fire from the python was even more powerful than Hong Lian's flames. Although Hong Lian was a Scorching Divine Phoenix and held supreme power over fire, the python's flames were much more terrifying than her flames due to such a great disparity in strength.

Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to safely avoid the flames despite his surprise. He felt that he was rather fortunate that he was only facing a Class 10 Xuanhuang beast who lacked any abilities. If it was a true Origin realm expert, he would not be able to counterattack at all.

Jian Chen quickly approached the python after dodging its flames. Leaping over ten meters into the air, he arrived above the python's head and stabbed down as hard as he could with the sword he had condensed.

The next moment, Jian Chen's eyes silently narrowed, because his full-powered attack only managed to leave an insignificant scratch a finger deep. It could not even be counted as a wound.

“What a terrifying body. It's probably more than ten times tougher than the bodies of Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts. Probably only Origin realm experts can heavily injure it,” Jian Chen was astounded. The toughness of the Class 10 Xuanhuang beast had greatly exceeded anything he had expected. Even with his mental preparations, he was still shocked.

At this moment, a terrifying force appeared. The python viciously shook its head, flinging Jian Chen far off into the distance. He crashed into a dozen thick trees.

Jian Chen immediately felt like all his bones had become dislocated with just that. Every inch of his body throbbed painfully. If it were not for his Chaotic Body, he would have been reduced to a smear of flesh.

Jian Chen only managed to stabilize himself after flying for many kilometers. He then began to flee without even looking back. From just that momentary contact, he had already gained a rough understanding of the strength of Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts. They were undefeatable.

However, Jian Chen was still unable to move faster than the python due to the terrain. He was caught again without long.

“Master, you can't move in a straight line, or there's no way you'll move faster than it. At the same time, all the Xuanhuang beats in the elemental mountains have their own territories. This Heavenly Immortal Xuanhuang beast is probably the supreme ruler in the fire-attribute region, so master won't be able to break

away successfully if you stay here. We just happen to be quite close to the earth-attribute region. Let's go over there. That's the only way we can escape this Xuanhuang beast," Zi Ying's voice materialized in Jian Chen's head. Raising his head to look, there just happened to be the yellow, earth-attribute region several dozen kilometers away, so he immediately changed direction and ran toward it in a zig-zagging fashion.

The distance took Jian Chen less than a minute to traverse. He arrived at the boundary of the fire-attribute region very quickly and was about to cross over.

The python in pursuit immediately became flustered when it saw that Jian Chen was about to flee from its territory. It spat out streams of fire, clearly not planning to let Jian Chen off easily. This was because the presence of Chaotic Force on Jian Chen made it drool. It was on the same level as the Xuanhuang beast, so it had a vague feeling that its strength would increase a lot if it managed to consume the insignificant existence.

Several dozen streams of fire formed a great net in front of Jian Chen. Although Jian Chen had managed to avoid most of the streams, he was still struck by one. The unimaginable heat immediately turned his clothes to ash. Even with his fourth layer Chaotic Body, he found it difficult to endure, having become bright-red from the heat. He shed an entire layer of his skin, which was excruciating.

Jian Chen gritted his teeth as he bitterly endured. He used the Illusory Flash to avoid the net of fire and finally made it out of the fire-attribute region and into the earth-attribute region.

The python did not follow him over. It stopped at the boundary and stared at Jian Chen, unwilling to give up on its prey. Its tongue flickered constantly as it produced ear-piercing hisses.

Although the python did not follow him over, Jian Chen did not stop. He endured the burning pain all over him as he quickly fled

into a forest.

The python remained at the boundary for quite some time, but it did not cross it in the end. It returned in gloom and full of regret.

At this moment, Jian Chen currently sat beneath a large tree. His burnt skin was being shed part by part before being replaced by new skin. Although he was severely burned, it was nothing that the terrifying recovery of the Chaotic Force couldn't handle.

Ten minutes later, Jian Chen stood up full of vitality. He pulled a new set of clothes from his Space Ring and changed into them. He had already made a full recovery from his wounds, but he was as bald as an egg. His flowing, long hair had all been burnt to a crisp.

Chapter 1290: The Final Material

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had stayed in the earth-attribute region for several days. He had come across over twenty Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts during that time. He killed them all and collected their corpses and energy crystals.

However, Jian Chen had gained a clear understanding of the strength of Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts after being chased by one before, so he did not provoke any of them over these past few days. As soon as he came across a region that might have been the territory of one, he would take a long detour around it.

Other than that, Jian Chen had come across many Immortal Tier heavenly resources as well. The various heavenly resources he had collected over the past few days had already formed a small mountain. There was so many that even Jian Chen was shocked.

A few days later, Jian Chen passed through the earth-attribute region. He had only a month and a few days left until his three months in Xuanhuang Microcosm came to an end, so he knew just from the size that even if he spent the rest of his time here, he would not be able to make it through the entire mountain range.

The mountain range was just far too vast. It was the largest Jian Chen had ever been in. To cross through a region with his speed took several days even if he traveled in a straight line. He would have to spend even more time if he wanted to search through every region. With his remaining time, just searching through a single region would be extremely difficult, let alone the entire place.

“I can’t waste valuable time here. I should cross the mountains and enter the depths to have a look there. There must be even more treasures there,” Jian Chen made up his mind. Although he knew that there were still a lot of Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts left in the elemental mountains, he no longer planned to stay any longer. He immediately changed directions and crossed the mountains as

he made his way into the depths.

Jian Chen traveled for two whole days before making it through the mountains, arriving in the region they encircled. The huge basin seemed like an ancient forest as trees towered over him. They were several hundred or even thousands of meters tall. The vegetation there grew vigorously, having reached over ten meters in height. It was teeming with life.

Although it was only separated by a single mountain range, the outside and inside seemed like two completely different worlds.

Jian Chen entered the forest. The heavenly resources in the forest were even more plentiful than the elemental mountains. When he had traveled less than twenty kilometers, he came across another Violet Cloud Peach Tree. It had already reached the fifth grade. A single peach could provide the energy equivalent to two thousand five hundred years of cultivation.

An extremely powerful Class 9 Xuanhuang beast guarded the tree. Jian Chen believed that even if the Xuanhuang beast had not reached the peak of Class 9, it was close already. He spent a lot of effort to slay it before taking all the immortal peaches with him.

“That’s Mortal Energy Fruit. Master, Mortal Energy Fruits are an immortal fruit that can recover consumed energy extremely quickly. If you’ve consumed too much energy in a fight, you can consume one and return the energy within you to its peak amount in an extremely short amount of time.” Zi Ying discovered another extremely rare heavenly resource and cried out in excitement.

“Master, go pick the Mortal Energy Fruit. They’re extremely rare even in the Immortals’ World. They’re one of the best immortal fruits for recovering energy. Every single one of them is extremely expensive, and they’ve even reached the fifth grade.” Qing Suo happily encouraged Jian Chen.

Jian Chen gazed over and discovered a tree over ten meters tall up ahead. A few fist-sized, milky-white fruits hung on its branches.

The fruits possessed a special pattern on their surface, and up close, the pattern seemed like the faces of people.

“And there’s Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo over there. The sap of the bamboo is something that can heal the injuries of the soul, and it can also refine the soul and strengthen it. They’re even more valuable than the Mortal Energy Fruit, an item of demand but no supply,” Zi Ying then said as he pointed at a region of amethyst bamboo nearby. He became even more delighted.

However, he suddenly became stunned after saying that. He stared at an amethyst, fist-sized rock within the bamboo forest, and a while later, he suddenly cried out, “Yin Hellstone, that’s Yin Hellstone. Master, there’s even a piece of Yin Hellstone within the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo. That’s the last material for forging the Azulet swords!”

Qing Suo was surprised by that and immediately looked over as well. Joy filled her face and she said, “It really is Yin Hellstone. I never thought that we’d find the final material for the Azulet swords here. Master, you have to obtain that stone no matter what. Once we forge the Azulet swords, master will truly embark on the Way of the Sword. Master will also be able to practice the techniques of the Way of the Sword.”

Jian Chen became excited as well. Forging the Azulet swords was extremely important to him. Not only would he be able to obtain a weapon that truly suited himself, allowing his strength to skyrocket, he would also be able to formally practice the techniques of the sword and continue further into the realm of the Way of the Sword. He could become a true practitioner of the sword with the techniques he acquired.

Although he had already reached Sword Origin, he was not in possession of his fated swords, so every time he used the wonders of the Way of the Sword, he felt like he was lacking something. He was unable to use his power naturally.

Jian Chen was tempted to run up and hug the stone, but he needed to suppress the urge. He cautiously looked around as he expanded his soul.

Jian Chen could tell from the sword spirits that both the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo were no worse than fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches, yet they had actually appeared together, with a piece of Yin Hellstone sandwiched in between. The beast that guarded them would obviously be powerful.

The senses of Jian Chen's soul were severely restricted within the basin. Even as he poured all his efforts into his soul, he could only engulf a radius of five kilometers. The two heavenly resources and the Yin Hellstone were ten kilometers away from him, so it was impossible for him to discover any Xuanhuang beasts if they were hiding there.

Jian Chen became rather troubled in that moment. He needed to obtain the Yin Hellstone no matter what, but it was quite possible that a Class 10 Xuanhuang beast, or a beast even stronger than that, guarded the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo. It was definitely not something he could fight. He did not know if he would have the time to collect the Yin Hellstone if he faced the pursuit of such a powerful Xuanhuang beast.

“Master, there are no Xuanhuang beasts in a radius of five kilometers around the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo. It's probably left, but from the residual presence, this Xuanhuang beast should be a Heavenly Immortal already, and even a late or peak Heavenly Immortal,” Zi Ying said sternly.

“What! The Xuanhuang beast's already reached late or even peak Heavenly Immortal? Doesn't that mean it's even more powerful than the python I can across a few days ago?” Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat. This was horrible news to him.

“That's exactly the case. The python master came across a few days ago was only an early Heavenly Immortal, quite a lot weaker

than this one.” Qing Suo became rather stern as well. They were uncertain if Jian Chen could flee if he ended up being pursued by this beast.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, can you see just how far the Xuanhuang beast has gone? If it’s gone far enough away, I can try to snatch it. I might have enough time to take away the Yin Hellstone,” Jian Chen asked. His attention was entirely set on the Yin Hellstone. The Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo were valuable, but he set them aside for now.

Although the Xuanhuang beast was not close to the Yin Hellstone, it was still a beast in the tenth class after all. It could travel several dozen kilometers in the blink of an eye. Jian Chen feared that the Xuanhuang beast was close to the Yin Hellstone, hidden in a place the sword spirits could not detect.

“Our powers have been greatly suppressed in the Xuanhuang Microcosm as well, so we can only see up to a region of a little less than twenty kilometers. We are helpless any further than that,” Zi Ying regretfully replied

Chapter 1291: Battling a Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast

Jian Chen hesitated over whether he should just charge up regardless of the consequences and take the Yin Hellstone or not. The stone was just far too important to him. It was one of the crucial materials he needed to forge the Azulet swords, so its value had already exceeded the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo and Mortal Energy Fruit.

As he was hesitating, the ground began to shake rhythmically. Soon followed the appearance of a powerful presence. Just the presence was enough to make Jian Chen almost suffocate.

Shocked inside, Jian Chen carefully erased his presence and silently retreated, only stopping after he had reached a distance he believed to be safe. He was covered by foliage, so he could not see the Xuanhuang beast's appearance, but he knew that it was definitely the beast that guarded the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo.

Jian Chen did not retreat too far away. He was only around twenty kilometers from the Yin Hellstone. At such a distance, it would have been impossible to hide from an Origin realm expert, but it was a Xuanhuang beast who lacked any special abilities or intelligence. This was why Jian Chen was bold enough to hide at such a close distance.

Jian Chen silently climbed up a large tree like a snake and cast his gaze out. He saw an elephant-like Xuanhuang beast walking over from afar, traveling toward the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo. It was extremely large, over thirty meters tall. It possessed two horns but no tusks or a trunk. Its mouth was triangular, revealing three sets of sharp teeth while its eyes glinted with a cold light.

“This should be the Class 10 Xuanhuang beast that guards this

place. Its strength has already reached late or even peak Heavenly Immortal, which is far more powerful than the python I came across a few days ago,” Jian Chen silently observed the Xuanhuang beast from the tree. Although it was very far away, he stood at a higher altitude, so he could see past many obstructions and observe everything going on around the Xuanhuang beast.

Jian Chen discovered that Xuanhuang beast was crouching beside the Mortal Energy Fruit and was sucking in. A visible strand of surging energy was siphoned away from the tree and into its mouth. Meanwhile, the beast was covered with countless wounds of different sizes. Every single one of them was terrifying and extremely deep. There were even quite a few large wounds on its head.

“This Xuanhuang beast has just recently experienced a battle and is heavily injured!” Jian Chen’s eyes immediately lit up when he saw this. If the Xuanhuang beast was heavily injured, it was impossible for its strength to be at its peak condition. The Xuanhuang beast was a late or even peak Heavenly Immortal, but it was not in tip-top shape. Coupled with the many vicious wounds on its body, he could use them as entry point to damage its insides.

Other than the fact that its strength was on par with Origin realm experts, Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts also possessed the advantage of a tough body. Under ordinary circumstances, only experts at the same level as them could get through their defenses and, hence, inflict damage. However, once this advantage was gone, even existences weaker than it could deal damage.

The flames of hope were ignited within Jian Chen after seeing how injured the Xuanhuang beast was. At that moment, an extremely bold idea filled his head: he would slay the Xuanhuang beast.

“With my current strength, killing this Xuanhuang beast will possess a certain amount of difficulty,” Jian Chen estimated his strength against the Xuanhuang beast. He frowned again. He had

already reached a conclusion that even if it was heavily injured, killing the Xuanhuang beast with his current strength would be extremely difficult or even impossible.

At this moment, Jian Chen's face jerked before his expression was replaced by serendipity. He immediately got off the tree and retreated another several dozen kilometers, only stopping after he had arrived at the foot of the elemental mountains. With a thought, the saint artifact flew out from the center of his eyebrows and radiated a dazzling light. With a flash, Tie Ta appeared beside him as a three-meter-tall giant.

Not only was Tie Ta's presence even more powerful than before, even his skin had become resplendent. He shone with endless amounts of golden light and seemed extremely similar to a golden giant.

"Jian Chen, I should be able to deal with Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts now, which is why I've come out. I'll kill Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts with you, so we can obtain even more Class 9 Monster Cores," Tie Ta said with his deep voice, directly referring the energy crystals within Xuanhuang beasts as monster cores.

Jian Chen celebrated inside as well when he sensed how confident Tie Ta was. He was about to lay his hands on an injured Class 10 Xuanhuang beast and was worried that he was not strong enough. He did not think that Tie Ta would emerge from seclusion right now and make up for his lack of power.

Although Tie Ta still had not become a Saint Emperor, he had increased his strength to the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King after this period of cultivation. Coupled with his Mysteries of War, he could easily kill Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts, and he would even be able to battle a heavily-injured Class 10 Xuanhuang beast.

"Tie Ta, there's an extremely heavily-injured Class 10 Xuanhuang beast up ahead, and it's guarding two extremely valuable heavenly resources as well as a material extremely important to me. I need

to obtain it no matter what. Do you think you can slay it with me?" Jian Chen said to Tie Ta as battle intent burned within his eyes.

Tie Ta's eyes lit up as he stared at Jian Chen in interest. He said with a burning desire, "A Class 10 Xuanhuang beast? Isn't that an existence that has surpassed Saint Emperor? If we kill it, doesn't that mean a Class 10 Monster Core?" Although Tie Ta's strength was rather extraordinary now, his knowledge was still very limited. Let alone a Class 10 Monster Core, even Class 9 Monster Cores were something that only appeared in legends to him. Only when he came to the Xuanhuang Microcosm did he actually see a Class 9 Monster Core, and it was not even a true monster core but the energy crystal formed within a Class 9 Xuanhuang beast.

"Correct," Jian Chen firmly nodded.

"Jian Chen, I'll listen to you. If you think we can defeat it together, then let's fight this Class 10 Xuanhuang beast. If we can kill it, then let's kill it," Tie Ta replied immediately. He knew that he was not as good at coming up with plans as Jian Chen, so he gave all the authority to Jian Chen. Afterward, he excitedly rubbed his hands together and murmured, "A Class 10 Monster Core. I've never heard of one on the Tian Yuan Continent. I wonder how much it's worth."

Jian Chen shook his head inside and bitterly smiled when he heard what Tie Ta had mumbled. Only an extremely limited number of Class 7 Monster Cores would appear in some large auctions. Class 8 and 9 Monster Cores would never surface on the market, let alone a Class 10 one.

"Tie Ta, this Xuanhuang beast is already heavily injured. Its strength has been greatly reduced, so we need to move as soon as possible. Otherwise, it'll recover a little if we give it some time, and it'll become even more difficult to deal with. Let's discuss the plan to deal with it," Jian Chen quickly explained a method to kill the Xuanhuang beast to Tie Ta. Facing a Class 10 Xuanhuang beast head-on would not work.

The elephant-like Xuanhuang beast weakly lay on the ground beside the Mortal Energy Fruit Tree and constantly absorbed the energy from the tree. It was dispirited and seemed sick, clearly its injuries were very bad.

Suddenly, it snapped its eyes open. Even though its gaze was filled with exhaustion, it was still extremely sharp. It glared around before producing a deafening roar. It struggled to stand, finding enough strength was difficult.

With a flash of dazzling, golden light, Tie Ta used his Celestial Movement to appear before the Class 10 Xuanhuang beast as if he had teleported. He shone brightly as supreme battle intent radiated from him. Most of it had condensed within the giant axe above his head.

“Mysteries of War, Destruction!” Tie Ta bellowed as the axe above him began to shine with a dazzling glow. He swung it at the deepest wound on the Xuanhuang beast’s head with lightning-like speed.

Spurt! Blood was thrown into the air. Tie Ta’s blow had caused the vicious wound on the Xuanhuang beast’s head to become even larger. It was so painful that the Xuanhuang beast wailed out loud.

At this moment, the Xuanhuang beast had finally managed to stand up. It immediately raised one of its thick legs to stomp Tie Ta. The bottom of its foot flickered with an earthen-yellow light. It encased a region that was three meters wide, which Tie Ta just happened to be in.

Tie Ta immediately felt his body grow heavy as his feet sank into the ground. He felt like the weight of his body had suddenly increased countless times. Just lifting an arm would require over a dozen times more energy than usual, making his movements extraordinarily slow.

“Mysteries of War, Celestial Movement!” Tie Ta yelled as he used his technique to break free from the encased region. His body

immediately lightened up once he made it away because the pressure that the Xuanhuang beast had created vanished.

Boom! At the same time, the Xuanhuang beast's leg landed heavily on the ground. The leg that seemed to weigh several tons failed to create a deep pit and even failed to leave a single mark on the ground. However, the entire mountain violently shook violently with a loud noise.

Tie Ta became extremely stern. He knew that the stomp from the Xuanhuang beast was not as simple as it had seemed. It possessed its own secrets. If he had been hit by the foot, he would have been smashed to a pulp even his war god body.

Hiss! Hiss! Suddenly, the Xuanhuang beast's horns produced a streak of electric-blue light. The two streams of light criss-crossed and suddenly shot toward Tie Ta, moving extremely quick.

Chapter 1292: A Difficult Victory

The streams of light moved just far too fast, no one could react in time. All Tie Ta saw was a flash of lightning. Then he was struck by the streams of light.

Tie Ta immediately froze as a ball of indigo lightning crackled and wrapped around him. Tie Ta's skin quickly blackened, no longer a golden luster, while the air filled with a burnt smell.

Boom! Tie Ta collapsed on the ground straight-backed. Sparks flickered around his body. The lightning from the horns of the Xuanhuang beast possessed unbelievable might. The electricity had completely numbed Tie Ta. Even the vast energy within him was slowed.

The Xuanhuang beast produced a shaking roar as it quickly arrived beside Tie Ta. It raised a foot to stomp on Tie Ta. Again, a ball of earthen-yellow light flickered on the bottom of its foot and the weight of anything within the region enclosed by the light rapidly increased.

At this moment, two resplendent, white sword Qis shot out of the bushes. They moved as streaks of light, landing accurately in the eyes of the Xuanhuang beast.

Spurt! Spurt!

Blood was immediately thrown into the air when the Xuanhuang beast's eyes exploded because of the two sword Qis that had appeared out of nowhere. Its eyes were reduced to two bloody and empty sockets.

The Xuanhuang beast painfully roared while the foot above Tie Ta slowed down. Taking advantage of the moment, Jian Chen leaped from the bush and arrived beside Tie Ta as quickly as he could with the Illusory Flash. He grabbed Tie Ta by the shoulder before throwing him far away.

During the short moment of contact between his hand and Tie Ta's shoulder, Jian Chen gained an idea of Tie Ta's condition. He immediately became relieved. Tie Ta was heavily injured, but his life was not threatened. His body had only been stunned by the powerful electricity, causing him to temporarily lose his mobility.

The Xuanhuang beast, which had been blinded and was in excruciating pain from losing its eyes, immediately stabbed a cluster of nerves, decreasing its senses to the lowest point possible. It was a perfect opportunity to deal a heavy blow to it, so after throwing Tie Ta aside, Jian Chen leaped onto the Xuanhuang beast's head. He used Chaotic Force and his attainments in the sword to condense an extremely powerful sword Qi in his hand. He stabbed it toward the deepest wound on the Xuanhuang beast's head.

Although Jian Chen managed to stab the sword Qi into the beast's head, he soon felt a powerful obstruction and only managed to stab it two inches deep before not being able to continue any further.

Jian Chen was secretly shocked. The toughness of this Xuanhuang beast was even greater than the giant red python he had come across before. His attack had clearly already entered its body, yet it still encountered such a powerful obstruction. If the Xuanhuang beast had not been heavily injured and was not covered in countless deep wounds, the two of them would probably not have even been able to get through its hide.

Blue light began to flicker from its horns again, causing Jian Chen to narrow his eyes. He had witnessed the terror of the blue lightning when it hit Tie Ta, so without any hesitation, he leaped off the Xuanhuang beast's head with a flip in an attempt to dodge the attack.

A spark of electricity shot from between the Xuanhuang beast's horns, striking the ground ahead. However, the electricity exploded two meters above the ground and expanded into a web-

like net that encased a radius of a hundred meters.

Jian Chen had never thought that the Xuanhuang beast would know such a clever trick, so he was immediately struck by a few sparks. His clothes were immediately reduced to ashes while his body blackened where the powerful streams of electricity hit. His body flickered with sparks.

Just like Tie Ta, Jian Chen collapsed on his face. The electricity had numbed his entire body to the point that his limbs froze. Even moving a finger was extremely difficult. The circulation of Chaotic Force within him became extremely slow as well.

Although the Xuanhuang beast had been blinded, it could still sense where Jian Chen was. It raised of its huge feet to stomp on him. The earthen-yellow light from before had already surrounded him, making him feel like a mountain had descended upon him. He felt extremely heavy.

At this moment, Jian Chen was completely incapacitated. All he could do was watch as the foot descended upon him.

Bang! With a heavy sound, the foot landed on him with unimaginably terrifying force. Jian Chen had not been stomped into the ground, but his body still sank.

Spurt! Jian Chen vomited a mouthful of blood as his face became sheet-white. He had almost been flattened by the stomp. All of his organs had been reduced to paste and most of his bones had been shattered. His chest had been reduced to a bloody mess, and he became red all over from the blood.

Even with Jian Chen's fourth layer Chaotic Body, he could not endure the stomp from this Xuanhuang beast. If it was any other expert, even if they were a Saint Emperor, they probably would have been reduced to meat paste by the stomp.

Jian Chen lay on the ground immobilized. He was so heavily injured that even with his Chaotic Body, he was unable to recover

in a short amount of time. However, the numbness he felt rapidly receded, allowing him to slowly recover control of his body and Chaotic Force.

However, the Xuanhuang beast did not give Jian Chen the chance to even catch a breath. It opened its gaping mouth, revealing three rows of extremely sharp teeth. With a single motion, it picked Jian Chen up with its mouth and viciously bit his chest, almost severing him into two. Only two-fifths of his chest held him together.

“Jian Chen, I’ve come!” A furious bellow rang out when Tie Ta had recovered. He quickly ran over at the speed of lightning and radiated a golden light. Battle intent surged into the sky from him.

“Mysteries of War, Form-shatterer!” Tie Ta wielded his axe with his two hands and lifted it high above his head. Immediately, a dazzling golden light shone from it, striking the Xuanhuang beast’s head as a golden afterimage.

The force of the axe was completely hidden within, making it impossible to sense any of the pressure it gave off. However, it seemed to be very heavy when he swung it. The energy within seemed to be unending, pulsing out like waves striking a shoreline. At the same time, it felt extremely unstable, as if it was gunpowder and could explode at any moment.

The golden axe landed on the deepest wound on the Xuanhuang beast’s head and, suddenly, the terrifying energy erupted like a bomb. The golden axe transformed into golden streams of energy that wildly wreaked havoc within the Xuanhuang beast’s head.

The energy within the axe seemed to be unlimited. The golden energy poured out without any signs of stopping as it constantly smashed the Xuanhuang beast’s wound with powerful attacks, causing it to deepen more and more and become more severe. In the end, it broke through the final layer of defenses within the Xuanhuang beast’s head, allowing streams of energy to invade the depths of the beast’s head, completely obliterating its central

nervous system.

With that destroyed, the Xuanhuang beast powerlessly collapsed on the ground with a boom. Its heavy body caused the earth to tremble.

Tie Ta exhaled in relief when he saw that the Xuanhuang beast had finally collapsed. Exhaustion appeared on his face as he murmured, "I never thought that using the Form-shatterer would be so terrifying. I can use Mortality-breaker, Void-smasher, and Destruction several times on end without losing my breath, but just a single Form-shatterer drained half of my energy. Looks like this technique created by uncle Aergyns is powerful, but it can't be used so easily." Tie Ta put away his axe and arrived before the huge mouth of the beast. He saw that a large portion of Jian Chen's body was stuck in the sharp teeth, or in other words, the teeth were deeply embedded in his body. Only lower half of his body, from his chest below, was visible. The other part was within the mouth.

Tie Ta crouched down and opened the Xuanhuang beast's mouth and carefully pulled Jian Chen out. He asked in concern, "Jian Chen, are you alright?"

Jian Chen bitterly smiled. He said with a rather pale face, "I've been heavily injured this time, so I've temporarily become incapacitated. I need to enter the artifact space to heal." He then pointed at the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo in the distance and said, "Tie Ta, there's an amethyst rock within that region of bamboo. That rock's extremely important to me, so please collect it for me."

Tie Ta doubtfully glanced at the Yin Hellstone. He could not understand what was valuable about that rock. It could not be eaten, nor could it be used for cultivation. He did not believe that Jian Chen needed money either. However, he did not hesitate even though he was utterly confused. He immediately walked to the rock after hearing what Jian Chen said.

When Tie Ta returned to Jian Chen's side with the rock, the Yin Hellstone was no longer the size of a fist like when he had first seen it. Instead, it was even larger than he had imagined and was actually around half a person tall. Most of it had been hidden beneath the ground and only a fist-sized portion had been visible on the surface.

Jian Chen only smiled in victory after obtaining the Yin Hellstone. At the same time, he struggled to suppress the excitement he felt within. He had finally collected all the materials to forge the Azulet swords.

Chapter 1293: Domain

Jian Chen had the artifact spirit find a place to hide before entering the artifact space with Tie Ta to heal. If he only relied on the recovery of the Chaotic Body, he would take a long time to return to his peak condition, so he needed the artifact spirit's help to recover as soon as possible.

Tie Ta was injured as well, and after using Form-shatterer, he had basically drained away half of his energy. He needed some time to recover as well.

In less than four hours, Jian Chen made a full recovery with the artifact spirit's abilities as a Class 8 Radiant Saint Master. He returned to his peak condition while Tie Ta recovered as well. However, as he had over-extended himself, he held a Class 8 Xuanhuang beast crystal to recover his lost energy.

Jian Chen did not disturb Tie Ta and silently left the artifact space by himself. The Class 10 Xuanhuang beast that the two of them had slain was still there with its blood across the ground.

Jian Chen removed the Class 10 energy crystal from the Xuanhuang beast after a tremendous amount of effort. He found the crystal to be the size of a chicken egg, and the energy hidden within was so vast that it cause even him to make a different expression. It was incomparable to Class 9 Monster Cores.

What Jian Chen did not know was that the energy within the energy crystal had far exceeded what a Class 10 Monster Core possessed. However, since this was the first time he had ever seen a Class 10 Monster Core, he didn't notice the difference due to the lack of something to compare to.

Jian Chen put the energy crystal away. He obviously did not miss the corpse either. He put it in the artifact space and ordered the artifact spirit to store it away. He had already made up his mind. He would give the energy crystal to Tie Ta and take the corpse of

the Xuanhuang beast for himself.

Jian Chen then arrived beside the Mortal Energy Fruit Tree and removed three hundred sixty crude, wooden boxes. He collected all three hundred sixty fruits before taking away all the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo as well.

The sap of the bamboo was a wondrous resource for healing the soul. At the same time, it could refine and strengthen the soul as well, so it was worth far more than the Mortal Energy Fruit. The only pity was that there was not a lot of bamboo, only around a hundred stalks. A single drop of sap could only be extracted from each stalk while healing wounds of the soul would require at least a couple drops if not more. Although Jian Chen had obtained around a hundred drops of sap, that amount would not be enough to sustain many usages.

Jian Chen discovered some other heavenly resources nearby that were of lower grades, but they were all of the Immortal Tier.

Jian Chen continued on. He followed the tracks of the Class 10 Xuanhuang beast that they had just killed and discovered another Xuanhuang beast corpse several dozen kilometers away. It was littered with vicious wounds and covered in dried blood. Its skin had been burned to a visible blackness by lightning and the air was filled with a burnt smell.

Jian Chen immediately rejoiced, because the Xuanhuang beast was also Class 10, and its energy crystal still seemed to be present.

Jian Chen observed the surroundings before quickly striding over to the corpse after confirming that there were no dangers. Again, he used a tremendous amount of effort to remove the energy crystal that was slightly smaller than a chicken egg.

Jian Chen smiled happily as he stared at the bloodied energy crystal in his hands. Although the energy within was not as plentiful as the previous crystal, it was still a Class 10 energy crystal after all. The energy inside was vast enough to shock Jian

Chen.

More importantly, he had basically come across this Class 10 energy crystal out of pure luck.

Jian Chen happily put the energy crystal and corpse away. He glanced around his surroundings but found no heavenly resources.

“This must not be the territory of this Class 10 Xuanhuang beast. I wonder where it came from since it attempted to take over the territory with the Mortal Energy Fruit and Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo. Too bad it was weaker and was slain by an even more powerful Xuanhuang beast in the end,” Jian Chen thought. He looked around and quickly found another set of tracks.

“This should be the tracks of this dead Xuanhuang beast. I should be able to return to its territory if I follow these tracks. I wonder if there’s any treasures there,” Jian Chen thought. After hesitating for a moment, he immediately hurried along the tracks.

Jian Chen moved through the forest carefully with his presence hidden. He had traveled over a thousand kilometers, and after dealing with several Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts along the way, he finally arrived in the original territory of the Xuanhuang beast.

Jian Chen, however, stopped very far away and did not get any closer before retreating carefully. He could already sense a very powerful presence in the distance. The territory had already been taken over by another Class 10 Xuanhuang beast.

Although he didn’t know the Xuanhuang beast’s exact strength, Jian Chen had no interest in provoking it even if it was the weakest among the tenth class. He had almost lost his life to a heavily-injured Class 10 Xuanhuang beast earlier, so even if it was not as powerful as the elephant from before, he and Tie Ta were not strong enough to deal with it if it was in peak condition.

At the same time, it was very possible that the current Xuanhuang beast had come first and had driven away the original

owner, which lead to the battle between the original owner and the elephant.

Over the next few days, Jian Chen and Tie Ta wandered through the forest and found many heavenly resources. Not only were there various fruits of all five attributes, they even came across a few Comprehension Tea Trees and Violet Cloud Peach Trees, allowing them to benefit even more. Jian Chen had even come across quite a few materials for forging weapons. He did not recognize any of them, so they were all found by the sword spirits. Although they were not needed for forging the Azulet swords, they were important materials for other immortal artifacts.

However, the highest grade he found for the peaches and trees was the fifth grade. It was not that he did not come across any higher grades. The higher grades just happened to be guarded by powerful Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts, which limited Jian Chen to only looking from afar.

Jian Chen had already stayed for two whole months within the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He only had a month left before he needed to leave. He would calculate the time every day just to ensure that he would not miss the deadline.

“I can only stay here for another half a month. I’ll need to begin my journey back after that. Half a month should be enough for me to head back,” Jian Chen calculated before carefully continuing on.

Not only were there Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts in the forest of unknown size, there were quite a few Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts as well, so Jian Chen always had to remain vigilant. He would slay Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts when he came across them and avoid Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts from far away if he saw them.

Although he was unable to detect any Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts who hid their presences with his strength, he had the assistance of the sword spirits, so he was not worried about Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts suddenly appearing before him.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta continued on for over ten thousand kilometers before being stopped by a barrier completely condensed from Xuanhuang Qi. The barrier reached into the sky and deep underground, as if it was a natural wall which separated the place into two different lands.

Xuanhuang Qi revolved within the barrier, which seemed like mist. It was dense at times and thin at others. It was still possible to see things inside, but they were all blurry and hazy, as if they were obscured by mist.

Jian Chen's eyes immediately lit up with a single glance. He could not help but have his heart thump heavily. A hazy Violet Cloud Peach had appeared before him, and with his understanding of the fruit, he could tell that it was of a much higher grade than anything he had obtained before.

"Zi Ying, Qing Suo, that's a high grade Violet Cloud Peach," Jian Chen's breathing became rather ragged. He could recognize heavenly resources of the sixth grade now but nothing beyond that. Since he was unable to distinguish the grade of the immortal peach within the barrier, it could only mean that it had exceeded the sixth grade.

The sword spirits appeared above Jian Chen. They also saw the barrier that was blocking their path, and they became both surprised and joyful. They then looked at the Violet Cloud Peach Tree within the barrier. Their eyes lit up but dulled soon after. They said, "Master, that's a ninth grade Violet Cloud Peach. A single one of them can increase your cultivation by four thousand five hundred years. Just one of them is enough for a mortal to become an immortal, but we can't obtain it," said Zi Ying regretfully.

Jian Chen immediately ravished with joy when he heard that it was of the ninth grade, but he became stunned by what Zi Ying had said at the end, "We can't get it? Why not?"

“Master, you can see the barrier before you condensed from Xuanhuang Qi. This barrier is known as the domain. Most Xuanhuang Microcosms that have appeared in the past do not possess a domain, and there are extremely few that do, but without any exceptions, all Xuanhuang Microcosms with domains are of the highest grade. In our Immortals’ World, there’s another description of the Xuanhuang Microcosms. The region outside the domain is the realm of mortals while inside is the realm of immortals, because the interior is a high-level space on the same level as the Immortals’ World. The Xuanhuang beasts inside are so powerful that almost all of them are immortals, incomparable to the ones outside. Some Xuanhuang beast kings have even reached Immortal Monarch or Immortal Emperor,” Zi Ying sternly explained.

Jian Chen gasped with that and felt shocked inside. He could not even deal with Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts, let alone Immortal Monarch or Emperor Xuanhuang beast kings. Probably just a breath from these beast kings would be enough to reduce him to nothingness.

Chapter 1294: Transformation of the Primordial Godsilk

“And in the history of our Immortals’ World, there’s even been a few times where Xuanhuang Microcosms have given birth to Immortal Exalt Xuanhuang beast emperors. They are extremely powerful, and even a few Immortal Emperors of our world fell to them. Since this is a Xuanhuang Microcosm of the highest grade, it will definitely have a few Immortal Monarch and Emperor Xuanhuang beast kings even if there are no Immortal Exalt beast emperors. With your current strength, you cannot set foot in there, master. Only death awaits you there. This is because the domain can only be entered and not exited. The only way to leave would be to smash through the barrier, and you would need the strength of an Immortal Monarch to do that,” Zi Ying followed up.

Jian Chen completely dropped the thought of obtaining the ninth grade Violet Cloud Peach with that. All he could do was stare helplessly at the barrier. Although he knew that once he become powerful enough in the future, he might be able to enter and collect the heavenly resource, but at that time, the resources would no longer be as valuable as right now to him.

“But the domain doesn’t seem to be as vast as the elemental mountains. How can such powerful Xuanhuang beasts thrive in such a small region?” Jian Chen thought of something that confused him, so he asked the sword spirits a question.

Qing Suo could not help but chuckle at what he asked, “Master, you don’t understand. This is being bigger on the inside. From the outside, the region really is nowhere near as vast as the elemental mountains, but there is an even vaster world inside.”

“Is that so?” Jian Chen was enlightened. It was the same logic with Space Gates. They seemed exquisite on the surface, but an extremely large space was hidden within.

At this moment, the Space Ring on Jian Chen's finger began to radiate a golden light. A golden mail completely woven from golden threads suddenly flew out, hovering in the air with dazzling golden light.

"It's the Primordial Godsilk. Why has it come out of the Space Ring by itself? What's happening?" Jian Chen stared at the golden silkmail blankly as it floated in the air. He called out in surprise since he was rather confused.

It had already been quite some time since he had obtained the Primordial Godsilk, but it had always been an inanimate object. It just lay in his Space Ring silently, without exhibiting any movements outside the norm. Yet, it had flown out of his Space Ring by itself, clearly behaving different from normal.

At this moment, even the sword spirits' attention was drawn to the abnormal movements of the Primordial Godsilk. Their gazes became fixed on it. None of them could figure out why it was moving on its own.

With the appearance of the Primordial Godsilk, the Xuanhuang Qi in the barrier of the domain began to pulse in an unstable fashion. Shortly after that, a strand of pure Xuanhuang Qi broke away and floated through the barrier. As soon as it approached the silk, it was absorbed.

The Primordial Godsilk immediately began to give off an extraordinary presence after absorbing the strand of Xuanhuang Qi. It shone with a golden radiance as it illuminated the surroundings, turning the entire area a golden color.

"The Primordial Godsilk is actually absorbing Xuanhuang Qi. This has never happened in the Immortals' World. Is this connected to the disaster of the world?" Zi Ying and Qing Suo stared at the process in shock. Everything happening before them had surpassed their understanding.

Jian Chen watched everything unfold in utter shock, but his

heart was soon filled with much joy. The Primordial Godsilk was extraordinarily tough. Even with his current battle prowess as a Saint Emperor, he was unable to damage it at all. However, the defences of the silk were extremely limited as well. It could only block the attacks from Saint Rulers. Attacks from Saint Kings would be able to penetrate the silkmail and injure the wearer or even shake the wearer to death from the great force. As a result, Jian Chen hadn't used the Primordial Godsilk after reaching the third layer of the Chaotic Body.

Now that the Primordial Godsilk had absorbed a strand of Xuanhuang Qi, he could clearly feel it rapidly strengthen and could tell that its presence was growing as well.

Soon, a second and third strand of Xuanhuang Qi was siphoned away from the domain before being absorbed by the Primordial Godsilk, making it glow even brighter.

The Primordial Godsilk absorbed a total of nine strands before stopping. Its golden radiance gradually dulled as well, and completely disappearing a few seconds later. It returned to how it had looked before and dropped out of the air.

Jian Chen did not let the Primordial Godsilk hit the ground. He stuck his hand out. to catch it with lightning-like speed. Immediately, an odd feeling appeared. It was unclear and indescribable.

Jian Chen focused all his attention on the Primordial Godsilk in his hand. He knew that the Primordial Godsilk was different from before after absorbing the Xuanhuang Qi, but he could not tell exactly what was different. However, without a doubt, the Primordial Godsilk's defense was just far, far more powerful than before.

The sword spirits also stared at the Primordial Godsilk fixedly. After a moment of silence, Qing Suo said, "I never thought that the Primordial Godsilk would absorb Xuanhuang Qi. The world gives

birth to the silk, and since it's absorbed Xuanhuang Qi by itself, does that mean that Xuanhuang Qi is connected to the calamity of the world? Is this calamity so bad that it requires Xuanhuang Qi to counter it along with the Primordial Godsilk?"

Zi Ying pondered a little and said, "That might not be the case. Xuanhuang Qi is an energy of the highest level, just like Chaotic Force, but it's vastly different at the same time. It might be that the Xuanhuang Qi benefits the Primordial Godsilk, which was why it had absorbed it. After all, the Primordial Godsilk in master's hands is still in the form before the calamity, so it possesses a certain level of self-awareness. If it is the Primordial Godsilk after the calamity, its self-awareness will disappear, and it would truly become inanimate, obviously unable to absorb Xuanhuang Qi. If I have guessed correctly, we can explain why the god artifacts forged from the Primordial Godsilk that have been brought into the Xuanhuang Microcosms and have appeared in the Immortals' World have never absorbed any Xuanhuang Qi.

Jian Chen immediately gave up on the thought of asking the sword spirits after hearing their conversation. Even they could not give definite answer. They were guessing. Clearly, even they could not draw a firm conclusion.

Jian Chen did not want to waste any time at all. He put the Primordial Godsilk away and reluctantly glanced at the ninth grade Violet Cloud Peach one more time before turning around and leaving, full of regret.

He definitely could not enter the domain. Without the strength of an Immortal Monarch, he would not even be able to leave if he did. All he could do was stare at the ninth grade Violet Cloud Peach if he remained.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Tie Ta continued to wander through the forest. They searched for Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts and heavenly resources. Although Jian Chen was now in possession of the much stronger Primordial Godsilk, he was still not bold enough

to provoke the Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts. The Primordial Godsilk could only block attacks from Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts after absorbing the Xuanhuang Qi. It was useless against Class 10 Xuanhuang beasts.

Several dozen Saint Kings hovered above the ruins of Mercenary City. They were unmoving, like monks in meditation. Although their eyes were closed, they paid close attention to the ground below. As soon as there was any movements, they would inform the grand elder as soon as possible.

There were several dozen Saint Kings scattered within the ruins as well. All of them were formation masters who possessed great achievements in formations. They had worked together to create a killing array. Although they knew that it would be completely useless against Origin realm experts, they were not discouraged at all. They created formations to the best of their abilities.

All the Saint Kings of the Tian Yuan Continent had already gathered within the miniature world owned by Mercenary City. Not only did Hao Wu come, even the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union and all the Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters were present. Even most of the human Saint Kings in the sea realm had gathered here. The total number neared a thousand.

All of them were building up energy and preparing for a battle against the experts of the World of Forsaken Saints as well as waiting for news from the Sea race, the magical beasts, and the Hundred Races.

“I wonder if the Sea race, magical beasts, or the Hundred Races will send reinforcements,” the grand elder said, worried. The World of Forsaken Saints was just far too powerful. Just by themselves, it would be very difficult for them to repel the invaders.

“May I ask if you’ve found senior Houston of the Bloodsword sect?” A Saint King looked at an old man in blood-red robes.

The old man was the vice sect master Jiang Wang. He shook his head and said, "We've already used a secret technique to contact the former sect master, but we've haven't received a reply. I don't know either where the former sect master has gone."

"Of the three human Saint Emperors, great elder Tian Jian is currently refining the divine hall. The path lord has expressed that he will participate when the time comes. It's just that the former sect master Houston's whereabouts are unknown. I hope he can hurry back in time when the battle erupts," a great elder of a protector clan gently sighed.

At this moment, the grand elder's expression suddenly changed. He said, "There's news from outside. There has been abnormal movements at the entrance. Let's go!"

Chapter 1295: Initial Scouting

The several dozen formation masters within the ruins of Mercenary City stopped what they were doing and took to the air. All of them stared down with extremely stern expressions.

Soon afterward, a Space Gate ripped open high that was over ten meters wide opened up in the air. It was the World Gate of the miniature world.

All the Saint Kings who had been readying themselves in the miniature world owned by Mercenary City surged out. They moved extremely quickly and silently, only flashes were visible. All of them were extremely skilled with manipulating space.

In just a few short seconds, almost a thousand people appeared in the air. Almost all of them were Saint Kings, and only a fraction of them were Saint Rulers. All of them stared down with extremely stern expressions.

Powerful pulses of energy originated from deep beneath the ruins. The pulses were extremely unstable, and even they could feel them clearly.

“Oh no, they’re already coming over,” the crisp voice of a child rang from nowhere. Xiao Ling silently appeared in the air as she nervously stared at the ground below. Her body was no longer illusionary but fleshly. She was no different from a real human.

Many people already knew the identity of the barrier spirit. Many Saint Kings calmed down with Xiao Ling’s appearance. All of them knew that the barrier spirit was not as simple as they had imagined. The barrier of Mercenary City was gone now, but the barrier spirit did not vanish because of its disappearance. At the same time, her strength belonged to the second level of the Origin realm, Returnance.

The thought that the continent was protected by a Returnance

expert undoubtedly calmed everyone. It was exactly because of Xiao Ling that Mercenary City had become the representative of the Tian Yuan Continent, having surpassed the ten protector clans now.

“Dear barrier spirit, the city lord once entered the World of Forsaken Saints and engaged in a great massacre. Now, when the people of that world come to our continent, they will definitely seek for revenge. I wish that you can assist us when they come to our continent and eliminate the intruders. We have to keep them in the tunnel and make time for great elder Tian Jian.” A Saint King elder of Mercenary City implored Xiao Ling as he bowed. Xiao Ling was someone who had come from the same age as Mo Tianyun. She was also an Origin realm expert having protected the city for around a million years. Her status in the city had been propelled to the level of an ancestor as a result.

“I will,” Xiao Ling firmly nodded her head, but she still appeared to be nervous.

“It’s a pity that the barrier spirit’s mind is not mature even though she possesses indomitable battle prowess. It’s still at the level of a young girl. She probably lacks experience in battle as well, so if she comes across an opponent of the same level, she will probably fall to a disadvantage,” the grand elder of Mercenary City secretly sighed to himself, but what was there he could do?

All the experts that had gathered there were monsters who had existed for far too long. They could tell with a single glance that the barrier spirit still possessed the mind of a little girl and that she was not mature. They could not help but look at one another with worry. They wondered just how much strength of the Returnance realm she could use.

Bang! At this moment, a terrifying ripple of energy appeared from deep underground. It formed a thick pillar of energy as it broke through the ground and soared into the sky. It caused the entire region of earth to sink, forming an extremely deep abyss.

The various formations that had been cast were destroyed before they could even be used.

The pillar of energy was extremely powerful, such that even Saint Emperors would pale when they saw it. The Saint Kings in the air dared not to take it head-on, so they all dodged, but there were still two Saint Kings who were a little slow. They were immediately smashed by the pillar and were ripped to shreds before being reduced to ashes. Not even their souls remained.

“Be careful, this is the wild streams of energy within the spatial tunnel. It’s surged because of the people from the World of Forsaken Saints,” Xiao Ling warned, but it was already a little late.

At the same time, several dozen vast presences appeared from beneath the ground. The Saint Kings at Great Perfection from the World of Forsaken Saints shot into the air like loose arrows. Their vast presences were being sent out. Every single one of them seemed to be in a rather awful connection, but they all gave off a presence that was different from the continent.

As soon as the Saint Kings flew into the air, they discovered all the people in the surroundings. They immediately became slightly stunned. They could tell with a single glance that virtually all the people who had gathered here were Saint Kings and that there were not many Saint Kings at Great Perfection. In the World of Forsaken Saints, they would be insignificant existences that would fail to raise any attention at all.

In reality, they had already prepared to face experts of the Origin realm in the other world. They had even thought that they would be surrounded by countless Saint Kings as soon as they had left the spatial tunnel, but they had never thought that they would see so many Saint Kings weaker than themselves and not even a single Saint Emperor.

Just when one of the leading Saint Kings from the World of Forsaken Saints wanted to say something, someone cried out from

the encirclement, “They’re all Saint Kings at Great Perfection! They must be the scouts to see our strength! We can’t let them escape with their lives! Kill them!”

The shout set off a chain reaction like the butterfly effect. Close to a thousand experts moved at the same time, simultaneously using various powerful attacks and Saint Tier Battle Skills, sending a barrage mercilessly at the several dozen Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

All the Saint Kings dodged, but the attacks were just far too concentrated. From the single wave, half of them became injured and a few had died.

“Leave quickly!” The Saint Kings at Great Perfection called out and pulled out the piece of jade they had obtained from the Spiritking. They wanted to use the Spatial Force within to flee.

However, at this very moment, Xiao Ling moved. She gently swung her little hand and a wall of white lights appeared, quickly sweeping toward the group of people.

Some of the faster Saint Kings had already shattered their pieces of jade and were sent away without any obstruction. However, around twenty remaining Saint Kings moved a little slower and were all struck by Xiao Ling’s attack. Their bodies were immediately ripped to pieces while their blood filled the sky. Their souls were instantly wiped out.

Chapter 1296: Reinforcements (One)

The great battle above Mercenary City began quickly and quickly came to an end. Everything calmed down in just the blink of an eye. Over thirty corpses from the Saint Kings at Great Perfection, who had come from the World of Forsaken Saints, remained while around a dozen people managed to escape. They had almost been wiped out then and there.

Just two Saint Kings on the side of the humans had accidentally been struck by the ripples of energies from the attacks and had passed away.

In the clash, all of the humans had finally witnessed how terrifying the Origin realm experts were. With just a wave of her hand, the barrier spirit of Mercenary City had displayed such a terrifying might, reducing over twenty Saint Kings at Great Perfection to a bloody mess. How terrifying was that?

Immediately, all the people's opinion of Xiao Ling changed. All of their gazes became filled with deep dread. In the age where Saint Emperors were almost non-existent, Saint Kings at Great Perfection were basically existences who stood at the very apex. There were an extremely few number of them, yet they were even more fragile than tofu before the barrier spirit. This affected everyone present.

At the same time, they all realized that this barrier spirit, who possessed the mind of a little girl, was not soft-hearted at all and was able to kill ruthlessly.

The grand elder of Mercenary City found it difficult to shift his gaze from her. He sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down. Afterward,, he looked around and said heavily, "You were right with what you had said before. Since the World of Forsaken Saints has Origin realm experts, it's impossible for this to be all their power. The group of people from the other world were

all Saint Kings at Great Perfection. They're probably just the scouts, probing the strength of our continent. Once they understand how powerful we are, they will launch a large-scale invasion, so we cannot let the dozen or so Saint Kings at Great Perfection leave the continent alive. We need to kill them no matter what."

"The grand elder is correct. If we let them return, the World of Forsaken Saints will learn of our strength. They will definitely have not fear us once they learn that we're actually so weak and, hence, will launch an invasion. This is why we cannot let the scouts from the World of Forsaken Saints survive. Only by killing them can we prevent our strength from being exposed. I believe that the World of Forsaken Saints will not act recklessly before they understand how strong we are," another Saint King added after the grand elder finished speaking. He was a great elder of a protector clan and was also a Saint King at Great Perfection.

"We cannot delay this matter. The ten protector clans should work together to cast a secret technique to scour the entire continent to find the whereabouts of those people. Elder, immediately send people to tell the Hundred Races, magical beasts, and the Sea race that there have been Saint Kings from the World of Forsaken Saints who have managed to escape and that it's extremely likely that they've entered their territory, so they should be aware. I think the three races will believe the reality of this matter once they see these foreign experts," said the grand elder heavily as he gave a command as the one in charge.

Many people of the protector clans were reluctant to do this, but none of them dared to show their reluctance. They all followed the grand elder's command and used an ancient secret technique to search the continent.

Mercenary City was now destroyed, but they had not been weakened because of this. An Origin realm expert had appeared for them, and even when ignoring the barrier spirit, just Tian Jian

was enough for them to become speechless.

Under the secret technique of the protector clans, the experts from the World of Forsaken Saints were unable to hide on the continent. They were all found and a group of Saint Kings lead by one at Great Perfection was immediately mobilized to hunt them down.

At the same time, the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans had been taken out. Other than the Tyrant's Blade School's Emperor Armament, all of them had been gathered in Mercenary City.

The Emperor Armaments were of different shapes. There were blades, swords, daggers, hammers, and a duster. The duster was the Emperor Armament of the Pure Heart Pavilion. Although it was different in shape, its power was extraordinarily great.

TL note: Yes, a duster. Just think of it as a tool to cleanse your heart, which suits the philosophy of the Pure Heart Pavilion.

A Saint King from the World of Forsaken Saints, fell out of the air in a rural mountain range. He quickly looked around, and when he discovered that there was no one around, he finally became relieved. He said, "I've finally escaped. Weird, why weren't there any Saint Emperors?" He felt extremely doubtful at what he had just seen. He knew that there were Origin realm experts in this world, but he also knew that they could not be discovered even when standing right before him if they did not want to. As a result, he mainly took note of the Saint Emperors.

Suddenly, the Saint King became stunned. He suddenly gazed at the sky and became shocked. Only a while later did he involuntarily cry out, "There's actually no origin energy here and the energy of the world is even thinner than our World of Forsaken Saints. I know now. I finally know why there weren't any Saint Emperors. Becoming a Saint Emperor is extremely difficult under these circumstances." The person immediately

became ecstatic when he thought of this. With just the strength visible here, the people of this world could not even put up a fight against the World of Forsaken Saints.

“Our Sacred Spirit Hall only needs to send a small group composed of Saint Emperors. That’ll be enough to conquer this world. Although this world lacks origin energy and the energy of the world is thin, it’s far prettier than our world,” the Saint King exclaimed in joy.

At this moment, a Space Gate quickly formed a hundred meters away. Three Saint Kings at Great Perfection emerged side by side and coldly glared at him.

The Saint King from the World of Forsaken Saints revealed a different in expression and immediately fled into the distance without saying anything more.

“Chase him down!” The three Saint Kings immediately began to pursue him.

They were all at Great Perfection, and the foreign Saint King’s strength had been greatly reduced since he had left a fragment of his soul in the souljade, so he was nowhere near as powerful as the experts of the Tian Yuan Continent who were in peak condition. He was caught very quickly, and after an intense battle, he was defeated and killed.

This occurred in many places across the Tian Yuan Continent. All the Saint Kings from the World of Forsaken Saints were hunted down and were all eliminated in the end. Only one was left alive to be brought back to Mercenary City.

However, the people of the Tian Yuan Continent could only protect the continent. They were powerless over the experts who had fled beyond the Tian Yuan Continent.

A Saint King had been sent to the arctic plains by the Spatial Force within his piece of jade. He immediately fell out of the sky

and began to shiver. It was so cold there that even as a Saint King at Great Perfection, he found it very difficult to endure.

However, just when he planned to observe his surroundings, an icy wind whistled by, and in that moment, he was turned into a life-like sculpture of ice. The light in his eyes rapidly vanished before becoming glassy. In that short moment, he had died.

Chapter 1297: Reinforcements (Two)

It was a continent of sand. The color yellow stretched as far as the eye could see, connecting with the sky. It was a wasteland without any signs of life. The sun hung high in the deep-blue sky and continued to beat down on the sand, turning the world into something akin to an oven.

At this moment, the space above a sand dune began to pulse. A middle-aged man then fell from there. He was in horrible shape and gave off a presence vastly different from the world.

“I’ve finally escaped!” The middle-aged man looked around and immediately sighed. He was one of the Saints Kings at Great Perfection from the World of Forsaken Saints.

“I need to hide carefully over the next few days and not reveal myself. I must collect all the information I can so that I can report it to the Spiritking,” thought the man. His eyes immediately became filled with respect and admiration when he thought of the Spiritking.

At this moment, the sand several kilometers away began to wildly churn. A giant rockman rose up. He seemed to have been hidden in that location long before this Saint King’s arrival but had suddenly stood up right now. He rose higher and higher, only stopping after reaching a height of a hundred meters. He shone with an earthen-yellow light as he gave off a vast presence.

The Saint King from the World of Forsaken Saints stared at the rock giant who had risen from the ground. He was utterly shocked because he had completely missed the fact that there was a Saint King at Great Perfection hiding nearby.

The rock giant seemed to be formed from boulders tightly linked together and seemed to be without flesh. However, he gave off the vigorous presence of life and possessed clear facial features. His eyes shone like torches as he stared unblinkingly at the Saint King

from the World of Forsaken Saints. He was surprised and full of doubt.

A long while later, the giant rockman began to speak. He said with a heavy voice, “Not a part of our Hundred Races nor a human or magical beast, let alone a member of the Sea race. You don’t belong to this world.” With that, the rockman’s presence erupted. He walked over and the ground shook with every step as he approached the Saint King in a hostile manner.

The Saint King from the World of Forsaken Saints was stern. He did not engage in conflict with the rockman and immediately ripped open a Space Gate in an attempt to flee. He could already feel that the rockman was an expert of the same level as him, a Saint King at Great Perfection. He would have obviously chosen to fight if he was in his peak condition, but after leaving behind a fragment of his soul and the journey through the spatial tunnel, his strength had been reduced. He was not the rockman’s opponent.

The rockman attacked the air from afar and the sand beneath the Space Gate immediately rose up. It condensed into pillars of rock in just a single moment as it shot into the sky with powerful ripples of energy.

Boom!

The terrifying ripples of energy within the pillar of rock exploded as soon as it approached the Space Gate. The foreign Saint King had no time to block the attack and the terrifying energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings, causing the space to distort. The Space Gate collapsed before it had even successfully formed.

The Saint King acted very decisively as well. Seeing how he was unable to flee through the Space Gate, he decided to fly. He fused with the surrounding space and used Spatial Force to escape into the distance. He traveled over ten kilometers in a single moment. He knew he could not stick around for long since many more

experts would arrive very soon.

The rockman did not pursue him. He crouched with great difficulty with his cumbersome body and stuck his right hand into the sand.

Several dozen kilometers away, the foreign Saint King celebrated after seeing how the rockman did not pursue him, but in the same moment, a hand that was several dozen meters long and completely composed from rock, suddenly emerged from the sand. With a flicker, it shot toward the Saint King with a heavy, powerful force.

Caught off-guard, the foreign Saint King was struck by the hand and vomited blood. He immediately shot back.

However, he stabilized himself very quickly. He did not bother with the rockman, traveling around the hand and heading off in the other direction.

“This entire world is my power. You cannot escape,” the rockman’s heavy voice resonated from several kilometers away. He then stuck his left arm into the sand as well.

The foreign Saint King had traveled a few dozen kilometers after changing direction, but he was soon stopped by the left arm of the rockman that had suddenly erupted from the sand. He was injured again and his wounds deepened.

The rockman’s arms seemed to be able to ignore the distance, able to reach as far as they needed to go.

As if he understood that he could not be obstructed by the rockman if he reached a certain altitude, the Saint King charged into the air. He refused to believe that the rock arms could stop him over ten thousand meters in the air.

But just when he wanted to take to the upper atmosphere, a green streak of light shot over from above with unbelievable speed. It was a three-meter-long green arrow, completely condensed from

energy. It locked onto the foreign experts' presence and was filled with cold killing intent. It could not be dodged.

Spurt! The green arrow passed through the chest of the Saint King, immediately causing him to wail out in agony. His face immediately became rather withered. He seemed ill.

Not only did the green arrow deal a heavy wound to him, it had siphoned away a portion of his vital essence as well.

A woman slowly descended from the sky, encased in green light. She did not seem very old, only in her twenties. She wore a dress while her green hair flowed down her shoulders. She was an alluring beauty, but her eyes were filled with an icy-coldness. She seemed holy and solemn and also possessed a certain level of prestige.

A pair of three-meter-long wings flapped slowly behind her. They shone with an azure luster through the light. The feathers of the wings seemed soft and smooth. They were extremely pretty.

She was an elven expert. She held a simple but beautiful wooden bow, covered with simple patterns. However, there was no arrow.

The foreign Saint King landed on the sand below and vomited blood several times. When he stood up, the space above him had already begun to pulse in an unstable manner as four Space Gates ripped open simultaneously. Four experts emerged from them and encircled the Saint King from different directions.

Vast presence revolved around the four of them. They were all Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

One of them was a three-meter-tall extremely burly man. He carried a mace that was even longer than him. His top half was bare, and he wore shorts. Muscles riddled his body, which was impressive to see.

He was an expert of the berserkers. They possessed extremely great battle prowess that would skyrocket when they went berserk.

They were invincible among people of the same level of cultivation, and some talented individuals could even fight those of a higher cultivation level. It was rumored that the berserkers possessed the blood line closest to the war god.

Opposite him was a short old man. His body was firm and his skin was dark. His arms were extremely thick, possessing explosive power.

The old man was an expert of the dwarves. He carried a meter-wide shield on his back, which was much larger than he himself. The shield seemed simple, but it possessed a great force.

Chapter 1298: Reinforcements (Three)

To the right of the dwarf was a two-meter-tall man in shorts. He was covered with thick, black fur, making him seem like both a wolf and a person. He possessed the characteristics of a wolf with long, powerful claws.

He was a lycanthrope of the Hundred Races, an existence that was human and wolf. He was not a human nor a magical beast but possessed very great battle prowess that was no weaker than a magical beasts. Very few people among the same level of cultivation were a lycanthrope's opponent, making them a powerful race among the Hundred Races.

Opposite him was a skinny old woman. She was hunch-backed, and all her hair was gray. She seemed extremely old, but balls of green flames flickered in her eyes. They seemed like will-o'-wisps, filled with a certain eeriness.

The woman was an expert of the flame daemons who possessed the natural ability to control fire. However, the fire they used was no regular fire, but green daemonfire. The flames lacked heat and could not burn anything physical. Instead, they burned away vitality.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The ground trembled rhythmically as the rockman strode over from afar. He could cross several kilometers with every step, so he moved extremely quickly.

A violent pressure of wind appeared from above as the elven expert shot a green streak of light from her wooden bow. She hovered ten meters in the air.

The six experts all stared and observed the foreign Saint King in interest. They then began to frown.

“This person really isn't from our world but from another. The

presence he gives off is just not present in our world. Has the envoy of the humans been telling the truth,” wondered the elf in a stern manner.

“It doesn’t matter if it’s true or not. I feel like we should bring this person back to the War God Hall immediately,” said the old woman of the flame daemons. Her voice was hoarse and extremely unpleasant.

The dwarf chuckled and said, “We received news from the humans recently that there would be people from another world coming, telling us to prepare ourselves. I had thought that the people would be impressive experts, so I even brought the Heaven’s Guard. Turns out it’s just a Saint King at Great Perfection. If we had known earlier, there would be no need for so many of us to come. Let’s go and return to the War God Hall first.” With that, the dwarf grabbed the foreign Saint King and lifted him onto his shoulders. He then passed through a Space Gate with the elf, berserker, flame daemon and lycanthrope. Only the rockman was left behind.

A giant divine hall stood on top of War God Mountain in the center of the Wasteland Continent. It silently stood there like a primordial beast, unconsciously giving off a suffocating pressure.

The divine hall was what guided the spirit of the Hundred Races. It was also the organization that held supreme authority among the Hundred Races. It was their faith War God Hall.

Several dozen experts of various shapes and sizes gathered within the majestic divine hall. All of them were Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings or higher, all possessing a lot of authority within the hall.

They stood in a circle, and at the center lay the foreign Saint King from the World of Forsaken Saints. His face was sallow. Not only had he been extremely injured, his strength had been drained away by a mysterious secret technique, reducing him to just an ordinary

person.

Close to him stood the six Saint Kings at Great Perfection who had captured him. This included the elf, the flame daemon, the berserker, the dwarf, the lycanthrope and the rockman.

However, the rockman had shrunk by a lot. Although he was still composed of the same rocks, he had shrunk to the height of three meters.

“This person’s presence is extremely odd. It truly is something that does not belong to this world. Has he really come from the World of Forsaken Saints...”

“Has the human envoy been telling the truth? Does the World of Forsaken Saints really exist...”

“Hmph, so what if they really do exist? It’s impossible for them to be too powerful. The Tian Yuan Continent has more than enough strength to deal with them, but they just don’t want to over-exhaust themselves in the process so they exaggerated the facts, describing the World of Forsaken Saints as super powerful, so that we, the Hundred Races, the magical beasts, and the Sea race will go to assist them with the problem...”

The experts in the War God Hall discussed topics the foreign Saint King. There were various discussions, but they had finally confirmed the existence of the World of Forsaken Saints after personally witnessing the foreign Saint King.

The foreign Saint King looked past everyone. He was originally a Saint King at Great Perfection, so he could obviously see through the strength of everyone present. The strongest were only at Great Perfection while most of them were below that. There was not a single Saint Emperor, so a sliver of mockery appeared in his eyes. He said, “I never thought that you’d actually be so weak without a single Saint Emperor. You probably don’t have experts of the Origin realm either, but it’s completely logical why you don’t have any Saint Emperors. This world lacks origin energy and the energy

of the world is so thin. You're so weak that the sacred hall only needs to send a squadron of Saint Emperors to wipe you all out."

"What is he saying?" A Saint King asked in doubt. He could not understand what the foreign Saint King was saying at all.

"That's the language of the World of Forsaken Saints. Communicate with him using our souls," the elven Saint King crisply replied, and all the experts present immediately let out their souls to communicate with the foreign Saint King.

Very soon, all the experts revealed dramatically different expressions. The dwarf had almost leapt in fright. He cried out, "What!? A group of Saint Emperors? You can even form a group with Saint Emperors? Just how many Saint Emperors do you have?"

The foreign Saint King's disdain deepened. He coldly responded, "We have countless Saint Emperors. We're just waiting for the spatial tunnel to stabilize and all five hundred Saint Emperors gathered in the World Mountains will come over. We only need a single day before we flatten your world."

"What! Five hundred Saint Emperors!"

"Impossible! How can you have so many Saint Emperors that there is a countless number!? You're exaggerating!"

The experts were extremely astounded and shock filled their eyes. The strength of the World of Forsaken Saints had frightened them all.

They possessed countless Saint Emperors, and they would be sending over five hundred right from the start. Probably even in ancient times, that would be an almost-unstoppable force.

Not to mention that the four races of this world no longer possessed a strength that could be compared to the strength that had appeared in ancient times.

"I've already understood the strength of this world, so I've

completed by mission. The armies of my world will descend here soon. We will be seeing each other again,” the Saint King sneered before shattering his own soul through a secret technique. He collapsed on the ground and no longer moved. He was dead.

He knew that the Hundred Races would not let him go and would possibly use various methods to torture him. As a result, he acted in a straightforward manner, committing suicide. He would be revived after this death anyway.

Chapter 1299: Reinforcements (Four)

No one could stop the foreign Saint King from committing suicide, nor did any of the Hundred Races experts think of why he committed suicide in such a straightforward manner.

The atmosphere within the divine hall became extremely heavy. Several dozen Saint Kings stood there sternly. The news that they had learned was suffocating. All of them had become deeply stunned by the foreign Saint King.

“The World of Forsaken Saints will launch a large-scale invasion soon. Looks like they want to conquer this world, and the humans probably won’t be the only people affected. The magical beasts, us Hundred Races, and the Sea race probably can’t avoid this either. What should we do right now?” An old man with peppered hair inquired after a long time. He was a hall elder of the War God Hall, a Saint King at Great Perfection.

“If the person is telling the truth, the World of Forsaken Saints is so powerful that none of the races can stop it. They possess many Saint Emperors, where even if we all work together, we’re not their opponent,” replied the old woman from the flame daemons. Her voice was hoarse and her face was sunken. She was also a hall elder.

“In my opinion, we should forget about our enmity with the humans and magical beasts for now and temporarily work with the humans to deal with the threat. Otherwise, the Hundred Races will probably cease to exist,” said a woman who seemed to be in her twenties. She was elegant and possessed alluring beauty. She gave off a natural, divine presence. She was the expert of the elves. Although she seemed to be very young, she was actually several thousand years old.

All the Saint Kings in the divine hall fell silent. Their enmity with the humans and magical beasts was deep, so temporarily

suppressing it to work with them really was rather difficult.

However, the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints was suffocating them as well. They all felt extremely uneasy because of that threat.

“Compared to the outcome of becoming extinct, we should endure this temporary alliance. Everyone’s heard what the foreigner said. Once the World of Forsaken Saints makes it to our world, it’s extremely likely that we will be wiped out. I suggest we leave behind the enmity for now and deal with the World of Forsaken Saints first,” said a hunch-backed old man. He seemed ancient and was also a Saint King at Great Perfection. He did not have much time until the end of his life and was also one of the most senior members of the War God Hall. He possessed much prestige.

The War God Hall was where the faith of the Hundred Races lay and was a divine force in the eyes of all inhabitants of the continent. The several dozen Saint Kings gathered there was not even a third of all of the Saint Kings. Quite a few of the Saint Kings present were at Great Perfection. They all came from different races.

“I agree with elder Chi Tian and queen Baisha. Let’s put down our enmity for now...” A long while later, a hall elder finally expressed his agreement.

With someone leading them, the matters following happened much smoother. All the experts gathered there came to an agreement. They all understood that the disagreements of the past were nothing if they could not survive. They were just forgetting about the disagreements temporarily.

...

At the same time, the news that the scouts from the World of Forsaken Saints had fled reached the Beast God Hall in the shortest amount of time possible, raising a large amount of concern from

all the experts there. In order to capture the foreign Saint Kings that may have fled there, a large group of Class 8 Magical Beasts were mobilized to searched the entire continent. Even the three Saint Emperors were alerted.

The presence of the foreign Saint Kings differed from the Saint Kings of this world, so even after hiding themselves in crowds of people, they were as eye-catching as a lantern in the dark. It was very easy for them to be recognized.

With the three Saint Emperors participating as well, the few Saint Kings were capture very quickly. Other than a few who had been slain on the spot, a few people were left alive to be brought back to the Beast God Hall to be interrogated.

However, the three Saint Emperors never imagined that the Saint Kings would commit suicide before they could even be interrogated after being brought back. They failed to obtain any information from them at all.

Even though that was the case, the three Saint Emperors became extremely stern. The World of Forsaken Saints really did exist and it was extremely possible for them to actually possess the strength described by the humans. They may even have Origin realm experts.

The three Saint Emperors gathered on the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall. They all stared sternly at the corpses as the Saint Emperor of the Peng clan, Cangqiong, said, "This is a significant matter. I will immediately set off for the Tian Yuan Continent." As soon as he said that, Cangqiong was reduced to a faint image. This was an afterimage he had left behind. He had already traversed several thousand kilometers in a single moment. Even without the use of a Space Gate, he could reach astonishing speeds.

Kaiser and Lankyros remained where they were. They currently possessed an unnatural paleness, still injured from being attacked

by Xiao Ling.

The empty space above Mercenary City was filled with people. After the arrival of the foreign Saint Kings, they did not return to the miniature world. They all stood guard outside, carefully observing the situation of the tunnel.

The spatial tunnel would spray out violent flows of energy from time to time, so it was extremely dangerous down there. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection might end up facing death if they were caught by the energy there, so the Saint Kings did not go beneath the ground. They could only guard above.

“The news has been sent long ago. I wonder how the Sea race, the magical beasts, and the Hundred Races will respond. Will they send reinforcements...”

“Not only does this matter affect the peace of our continent, it threatens the three other races as well. We have to persuade them no matter what. We’re just far too weak just by ourselves...”

“It’s a pity that there are too few supreme experts in this age. If we possessed the glory of the ancient times, we would have not need to fear the World of Forsaken Saints...”

“Haven’t you heard what the barrier spirit said? The strength of the World of Forsaken Saints has greatly exceeded anything we can anticipate. We might not even have been able to fend off their invasion in ancient times...”

“Back then, the city lord Mo Tianyun had actually entered the World of Forsaken Saints all by himself and slew many experts. He even killed quite a few Origin realm experts. That is just unbelievable. He truly is worth being known as the strongest human expert. He’s probably already reached the peak of the Origin realm with his strength...”

“If only the city lord was still present... He could probably wipe out the entire World of Forsaken Saints all by himself, and we

would not have to guard here while at the end of our wits...”

“I wonder when great elder Tian Yuan will finish refining the divine hall. The divine hall holds all our hopes now...”

Everyone discussed the problems they faced with one another, and between them lay a foreign Saint King with his eyes closed. The Heavenly Enchantress currently sat by his side with her zither while the Saint Kings around them glanced towards her with gazes filled with deep dread.

At this moment, the space several kilometers away began to violently distort. A Space Gate rapidly formed and rich water-attributed energy flowed out.

The interior of the Space Gate flickered with blue light as a person enveloped with water-blue light slowly emerged. Her face was obscured, only revealing a hazy but curvy figure. Behind her followed over ten people of various ages. They were all beyond the Fifth Heavenly Layer as Saint Kings, but all of them hid their presences as they politely stood behind her.

Chapter 1300: Yadriam

“It’s the experts of the Sea race...”

“Fantastic, the reinforcements of the Sea race have come...”

“Just as I had expected, the first group of reinforcements would be the experts of the Sea race. We established a very deep enmity with the Hundred Races in ancient times while the experts of the Beast God Continent trespassed our land several years ago, resulting in an intense clash. Only the Sea race has not fallen out with us...”

“The leading person is actually a Saint Emperor. Fantastic, we now have one more Saint Emperor...”

The humans fell into a hubbub with the arrival of the Sea race experts. All of them stood in the air as they stared at them in joy. They were deeply curious.

To them, the people of the Sea race were relatively mysterious beings since Saint Emperors could not pass through the protective barrier around the sea realm. As a result, many of them had only heard of their existence, but none of them had never seen them in person before.

Even more gazes were fixated on the woman enveloped in blue light who stood at the very front. They revealed respect. Although the woman did not give off any presence at all, many of them could already tell that she was a Saint Emperor.

The grand elder of Mercenary City joyfully flew over with a group of Saint King elders, which was followed by many other Saint Kings. This group included the important figures from the ten protector clans as well as various large organizations of the Tian Yuan Continent.

“I am the grand elder of Mercenary City, and I’d like to welcome the esteemed guests of the Sea race to our world, the Tian Yuan

Continent,” the grand elder loudly said from afar.

“I am the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall from the sea realm, Yadriam. You have been far too kind,” replied the hall master nonchalantly as she bathed in blue light.

“So it’s the esteemed hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall. You have gone far to travel so much and we have failed to welcome you from afar. Please forgive us,” the grand elder conventionally answered in a politeful manner before glancing past the people behind the hall master. He was secretly shocked. All the experts behind her wore the same attire, allowing him to understand that they were all experts of the Sea Goddess Hall with a single glance.

However, what truly shocked the grand elder and the other Saint Kings was that there were actually four Saint Kings at Great Perfection among the Sea race party, and almost all the other people were at the Eighth or Ninth Heavenly Layer. Only a small portion of them were of the Seventh Heavenly Layer, and no one was weaker than that.

Although many of them had never visited the sea realm, they possessed a rough understanding of the Sea race. There were many Saint Kings among the Sea race, but not all of them were a part of the Sea Goddess Hall. Even with that being the case, the Sea Goddess Hall could easily mobilize four Saint Kings at Great Perfection and around a dozen experts beyond the Seventh Heavenly Layer just by themselves. This was equivalent to several protector clans working together.

At the same time, all of them understood that the Saint Kings brought by Yadriam were probably just a tip of the iceberg for the Sea Goddess Hall.

This was because the overall strength of the Sea race far exceeded the Tian Yuan Continent. There were far more Saint Rulers and Saint Kings there than the Tian Yuan Continent.

“There is no need to be so polite, grand elder. May I ask of the

situation of the World of Forsaken Saints?” The hall master gently inquired as the blue light around her grew brighter, permeating the surroundings with dense, water-attributed energy. No one could see her true appearance while the other expert behind her stood there silently.

The grand elder quickly told her everything he knew about the World of Forsaken Saints. He stressed that they had a very powerful Origin realm expert that even the barrier spirit could not handle.

Yadriam fell silent. Only after quite a long while did she say, “I’ve already sensed the spatial tunnel deep underground. The violent streams of energy are indeed extremely terrifying, and they flow from the World of Forsaken Saints to the Tian Yuan Continent. It is extremely easy for the people from the other world to come over, but if we want to go over, we’ll have to travel against the current of the energy. Even Saint Emperors will face danger.” Yadriam was rather stern as she walked toward the captured Saint King.

Only now did the Heavenly Enchantress slowly open her eyes and stand up. She calmly observed Yadriam. She was the only person who did not welcome the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall among the humans.

Yadriam noticed the Heavenly Enchantress as well and carefully observed her. A sliver of surprise appeared in her eyes since she was unable to see through the Heavenly Enchantress’ strength. In her eyes, the Heavenly Enchantress seemed like a cloud of mist. She was hazy and unrealistic.

Yadriam was secretly surprised. This was the first time she had come across something so odd. Even the two other Saint Emperors in the sea realm were unable to make her feel like that.

Yadriam stared at the Heavenly Enchantress deeply before turning her gaze to the unconscious Saint King at Great Perfection.

“Esteemed hall master, this was the expert from the World of

Forsaken Saints that we captured. We originally planned to gain an understanding the other world through him, but who would have expected him to use a secret technique to obliterate his own soul? Fortunately Mu'er controlled the situation with her zither within that crucial moment and knocked him unconscious," the grand elder explained by the side.

A sliver of shock flashed through Yadriam's eyes. She said, "To control a Saint King at Great Perfection in such an easy manner. You have my admiration. Even Saint Emperors are unable to do something like that."

Hao Wu hid among the crowd with an ashen face. His feelings were mixed. He was indeed extremely surprised by his daughter's accomplishments, and even wondered if the cold Heavenly Enchantress was her daughter or not. Her strength had increased at an astonishing rate over the past few years.

Hao Wu had come here several days ago and had discovered his daughter long ago. However, he knew that his daughter still hated him, unwilling to forgive him as a father. Hao Wu had wanted to greet his daughter many times over the past few days, but he chose to do nothing in the end.

He knew that he had already been discovered with his daughter's current strength, but she continued to ignore him as a father. She even treated him like glass, making his heart ache.

"Shangguan Xiaoyan, I can never make it up to you for what happened in the past," Hao Wu sighed inside as sorrow and regret appeared in his eyes.

Table of Contents

[Chaotic Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1201: Distributing Monster Cores](#)

[Chapter 1202: A Path of Severance](#)

[Chapter 1203: Wolf King of Greed, Feng Yixiao](#)

[Chapter 1204: Feng Yixiao's Enemy](#)

[Chapter 1205: Changyang Hu's Arrival \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1206: Changyang Hu's Arrival \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1207: Changyang Hu's Arrival \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1208: Jian Chen's Worry](#)

[Chapter 1209: Exposed](#)

[Chapter 1210: Father and Son](#)

[Chapter 1211: Nubis Emerges](#)

[Chapter 1212: Visiting the Bloodsword Sect](#)

[Chapter 1213: Return of the Bloodsword Sect](#)

[Chapter 1214: The President Sighs](#)

[Chapter 1215: Wiping Out the Underworld Sect \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1216: Wiping Out the Underworld Sect \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1217: Ancient Teleportation Formation](#)

[Chapter 1218: Proceeding to the Ice Goddess Hall \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1219: Proceeding to the Ice Goddess Hall \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1220: Frozen Statues](#)

[Chapter 1221: Urton](#)

[Chapter 1222: Changyang Mingyue](#)

[Chapter 1223: Reuniting Mother and Daughter \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1224: Reuniting Mother and Daughter \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1225: Protector Shui Moves](#)

[Chapter 1226: Trapped at the Ice Goddess Hall](#)

[Chapter 1227: The Sea Goddess' News](#)

[Chapter 1228: Changyang Hu's Transformation](#)

[Chapter 1229: Sudden Changes of the Turtle Clan](#)

[Chapter 1230: The Arrogant Tao Family](#)

[Chapter 1231: Envoy of the Tao Family](#)

[Chapter 1232: Mobilization](#)

[Chapter 1233: Battle Between Two Clans \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1234: Battle Between Two Clans \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1236: A Stalemate of Divine Halls](#)

[Chapter 1237: Emissary of the Heaven's Spirit Hall](#)

[Chapter 1238: Houston Becomes a Saint Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1239: Congratulations From Everywhere](#)

[Chapter 1240: Blood-refining Formation](#)

[Chapter 1241: Blood Servant of the Death Nest](#)

[Chapter 1242: Ning Shuang](#)

[Chapter 1243: Mo Tianyun](#)

[Chapter 1244: Disaster of the Ice Goddess Hall](#)

[Chapter 1246: Wiping Out a Saint Emperor's Clone](#)

[Chapter 1247: Enrichment of the Soul](#)

[Chapter 1248: Arrival of the Worldly Ebb](#)

[Chapter 1249: Absorbing the Energy of the World Ebb](#)

[Chapter 1250: Peak of the Third Layer](#)

[Chapter 1251: Xuanhuang Microcosm \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1252: Xuanhuang Microcosm \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1253: Spring of Life](#)

[Chapter 1254: Comprehension Tea Tree](#)

[Chapter 1255: Class 8 Xuanhuang Beast](#)

[Chapter 1256: Killing the Beast and Obtaining the Leaves](#)

[Chapter 1257: Reconstruction Gel](#)

[Chapter 1258: Recurrence of the Nine-colored Clouds](#)

[Chapter 1259: The Third Saint Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1260: Shocking Changes of Mercenary City](#)

[Chapter 1261: The Protective Barrier Disappears](#)

[Chapter 1262: Gathering at Mercenary City](#)

[Chapter 1263: Spiritking](#)

[Chapter 1264: The Seal Breaks](#)

[Chapter 1265: Countermeasures](#)

[Chapter 1266: Violet Cloud Peaches](#)

[Chapter 1267: The Sword Spirits' World](#)

[Chapter 1268: Fifth Grade Comprehension Tea Tree](#)

[Chapter 1269: Class 9 Xuanhuang Beast](#)

[Chapter 1270: Scarlet Gold Ore \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1271: Scarlet Gold Ore \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1272: Secluded Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 1273: Hao Yue's Might \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1274: Hao Yue's Might \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1275: Hao Yue's Might \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1276: The Borrowing of Emperor Armaments](#)

[Chapter 1277: The Changyang Clan Breaks Free](#)

[Chapter 1278: Friend or Foe?](#)

[Chapter 1279: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1280: The Heavenly Enchantress' Strength \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1281: Movements of the World of Forsaken Saints](#)

[Chapter 1282: Fourth Layer of the Chaotic Body](#)

[Chapter 1283: Encountering a Class 9 Xuanhuang Beast Again](#)

[Chapter 1284: Comprehending the Way of the Sword \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1285: Comprehending the Way of the Sword \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1286: Comprehending the Way of the Sword \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1287: Easy Kills](#)

[Chapter 1288: Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1289: Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1290: The Final Material](#)

[Chapter 1291: Battling a Class 10 Xuanhuang Beast](#)

[Chapter 1292: A Difficult Victory](#)

[Chapter 1293: Domain](#)

[Chapter 1294: Transformation of the Primordial Godsilk](#)

[Chapter 1295: Initial Scouting](#)

[Chapter 1296: Reinforcements \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1297: Reinforcements \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1298: Reinforcements \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1299: Reinforcements \(Four\)](#)

[Chapter 1300: Yadriam](#)